





# BRINGING THE FARM TO LIVE IN ANOTHER WORLD

BOOK 08

*Ming Yu*

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

# Bringing The Farm To Live In Another World

(带着农场混异界)

by

**Ming Yu**

(明宇)

# Synopsis

---

A series about a man who awakens in a strange land to find himself in the body of a complete waste of human life. He has to try to help rebuild a family that has fallen to only himself and his few retainers. As the first arc of the story it grows and becomes an epic journey of adapting to new land while crippled by a drug he was forced to ingest as he was banished to a wasteland by the old nobles of the capital after his family sided with the wrong heir to the throne in line for succession.

His only aid in this unfamiliar world is a strange ability that was present when he awoke in his new body. He's got the ability to enter a world that is basically a farming simulation game, except all of the food is usable in the outside world. For someone stuck in a wasteland, only this cheat will help him survive and move forward in this unfamiliar world along with his few loyal retainers as he tries to rebuild a fallen family. Farming, selling crops, trying to find a way forward with a body that's crippled.

Follow the journey of Zhao Hai as he lives his life in a magical world filled with intrigue, farming, business, battle, more farming, and other exciting non farming things, followed by farming and cultivation.

# Acknowledgement

---

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Shif, bagelson, Trung Nguyen @ [For Kalimdor!](#)

Translation Edits by Argos Yesu @ [For Kalimdor!](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

# Chapter 701 – Who To Promote First?

---

While Zhao Hai and Berry united their marriage, Zhao Hai suddenly felt a huge suction force that was unexpectedly coming from Berry. Although Zhao Hai was not affected too much by it, he also discovered that it was already impossible for him to withdraw.

When he felt that his body's energy was almost absorbed, a sudden force suddenly rushed into him. This force was very powerful, and it was quite warm as well. Once it entered Zhao Hai's body, it slowly integrated into him. Zhao Hai discovered that this strength was even stronger than what was absorbed, and it seemed to be purer than before.

Zhao Hai couldn't help but make a surprised expression at Berry. Berry currently had her eyes closed while her hair was slowly waving around on its own. Then suddenly, Berry's eyes emitted a strong glare, making Zhao Hai close his eyes immediately. When he opened his eyes, Zhao Hai was quick to notice crystal on Berry's forehead. The crystal looks like a kind of diamond, it was radiating blue light, it was beautiful.

Without knowing, Zhao Hai suddenly kissed the crystal. This action made Berry's body tremble lightly. When Berry's eyes recovered, she looked at Zhao Hai in a much more charming gaze.

Zhao Hai kissed the crystal again, eliciting another reaction from Berry. Zhao Hai was elated to find this new toy to play around with. He teased the crystal constantly as Berry made moans again and again. It didn't take too long for another round of 'playtime' began.

At this point, Zhao Hai was currently on the bed with Berry lying on his chest, breathing heavily. She looked up at Zhao Hai and said, "Brother Hai, I've really become God-rank."

Zhao Hai chuckled and said, "I know. I really didn't think that your Succubus Race would have such an astonishing ability. It's

quite amazing.”

Berry made a charming pout as she said, “How could it be that easy? Although our race has a rule of marrying anyone who resisted our mental attack, complying with the rule and accepting it are two different matters. If we felt compelled to marry the other person because of the rule, even if we can still get stronger, the boost wouldn’t be that much. On the other hand, if we are really willing to marry the other party, then the improvement that we get would be extremely large.”

When he heard Berry, Zhao Hai couldn’t help but smile and said, “So you’re saying that you really are sincere in marrying me? Hahaha. It seems like I’m quite the attractive man.”

Berry couldn’t help but lightly hit Zhao Hai. At this point, Zhao Hai suddenly turned over and carried Berry’s body, much to the latter’s surprise. Then Zhao hai smiled faintly and said, “Let’s go take a bath.” Then he continued to carry Berry towards the bathroom.

Each room in the villa had its own bathroom, in addition to the communal one in the basement. Moreover, the individual bathrooms weren’t small. Inside them were huge bathtubs filled with water from the hot spring.

After the two had taken their bath, they returned to the bed and had a good rest. As soon as they woke up, Zhao Hai and Berry put their clothes on before going out into the living room. Upon arriving there, the two of them saw Lizzy and the others looking at Demon City’s situation in the monitor.

When the group saw Zhao Hai and Berry coming out of the room, they looked at each other with sly expressions. Megan even examined Berry’s skin as she said, “Congratulations, Sister Berry. It seems like you have been promoted to God-rank.”

Berry’s face went red as she faced Megan, she kept her head down and was too embarrassed to talk. Megan looked at Berry and

couldn't help but chuckle, "Sister Berry, there's no need to be shy. After all, all of us are Brother Hai's wives. It's fine."

Zhao Hai turned to the nearby dim-faced Ruyen, then he smiled faintly and said, "That's good. Now, how is the outside situation been? Did something happen?" Then he proceeded to the center of the living room and sat beside Ruyen.

Ruyen couldn't help but stare at Zhao Hai, then her complexion turned red as she lowered her head down. At this time, Lizzy turned to Zhao Hai and smiled, "There's no significant development. The Demons are still building their city. On the other hand, the Dwarves are truly formidable. They had already made a tunnel and had concealed its entrance. One couldn't just spot it without proper guidance."

Zhao Hai smiled faintly and replied, "They had been doing this for many years, so it's natural that they are very skilled in this aspect. The only thing that is left to do is to resist the Demons. Also, we need to take a look at how the Divine Race responds."

Lizzy frowned as she said, "There aren't any actions from the Divine Race's side. Who knows what wicked plots they are currently making. Big Brother Hai, how much people do you think the Divine Race would send down?"

Zhao Hai shook his head and said, "I can't really say. However, I'm quite sure that they'll be sending God-ranked experts. They already have experience in sending one to the Ark Continent, therefore, they should have already developed ways in order to make them stay for a longer period of time."

Upon hearing Zhao Hai, Lizzy's expression turned worse, with a troubled voice she replied, "If that really happens, then we would be facing hard times ahead."

Zhao Hai nodded, but he still smiled and said, "I don't think our troubles would be that heavy. Don't forget, the Demons had appeared too suddenly. Therefore, it shouldn't be only us who



were caught off-guard, the Divine Race should be in the same situation as well. They were only planning to deal with us, but now that the Demons have appeared, I'm quite sure that they just wouldn't ignore it. After all, the combat prowess of the Demons isn't something that can just be ignored. For us, the sooner the Divine Race appeared, the better."

Lizzy sighed and said, "I sure hope so."

At this time, footsteps can be heard before Laura, Meg, and Ni'er appeared. It was evident on their faces that they were tired and weary. Zhao Hai quickly stood up as he approached them and said, "How have you been doing? Are you tired? If so, then don't hesitate to take a rest. You shouldn't overexert yourselves."

Laura smiled and said, "We're fine. You don't need to worry about us. Right, what were you talking about?"

After having the three sit down, Zhao Hai answered, "We were just talking about the Divine Race. There aren't any movements that can be seen from their side. We suspect that they might be waiting for us and the Demons to give each other some mutual wounds. However, i reckon that if we manage to hold the Demons off long enough inside the Buddha Empire, then they might change their sights towards the Radiant Church. At that time, the Divine Race would be compelled to make a move."

Laura nodded, then she said, "In fact, there's another way. If the Demons really don't intend to go to the Radiant Church, then we can just attack the Radiant Church ourselves. I think the Divine Race would similarly be pushed to take action."

Zhao Hai stared, he had overlooked this point. His eyes couldn't help but shine at Laura's suggestion as he said, "Right, right, that's a good idea. If the Divine Race really wants to wait, then we'll take the fight to them."

Then he looked at Laura and said, "Alright, you don't need to worry about these matters anymore, you go take a nice bath and

rest. Meg, Ni'er, you do the same as well. There wouldn't be too much actions in the following days, so you can just relax yourselves."

The three nodded with a smile, then they turned around to leave. After seeing them leave, Zhao Hai turned his gaze towards the monitor. There really weren't any significant events happening right now, everybody was conserving their strengths, the undead were just like statues as they stood motionless on the field.

Zhao Hai sighed, then he turned his head to Lizzy and the others, "You take a rest as well. I'll be heading back to Demon City to catch up on the Dwarves. Also, it seems like the Elves would be coming soon, I'll be needed in greeting them into Demon City."

Lizzy nodded, then she looked at Zhao Hai and said, "Brother Hai, you must be very careful. I'm afraid the experts of the Demon Race wouldn't just let you off so easily. After being in contact with you for twice now, I reckon that they already have a vague idea of your abilities and methods. They will surely use that against you in the future."

Zhao Hai nodded and said, "Rest assured, there won't be any problems. After all, Berry is with me, and she is a God-rank expert as well. With two God-ranked experts, I think there won't be a lot of things that would place us in a dangerous position. Right, I have one last thing to discuss. At this moment, the plants in the Space can only promote a single person into God-rank. Who do you think we should promote first?"

Lizzy thought for a moment before she said, "Shue, Brother Hai, Shue should be the first one to be God-rank. Don't forget, Shue is a Divergent Ability user. If his clones can have God-ranked strength, then it would be a huge benefit for our fights in the future."

Zhao Hai stared, then he quickly remembered that Shue was indeed a divergent ability user. If he rose to God-rank, then wouldn't his clones be God-ranked as well? If his clones do indeed

become God-rank, then they wouldn't need to fear anyone in the future. Also, if his clones can't be promoted, then at the very least they would be the most outstanding 9th ranks in the field, they shouldn't be vastly weaker than general God-ranked experts."

After thinking about it, Zhao Hai couldn't help but repeatedly nod as he said, "Right, Shue is indeed a good choice. That fellow has been very busy in the Black Wasteland, it seems like its time to bring him back to the Space."

Lizzy smiled and said, "It's true that the Black Wasteland was too busy before, but now, most things have already been taken care of. It should be fine to have him exit for a short while. I'll have Cai'er inform him later and have his tasks handed over to someone else."

Zhao Hai nodded, "The Black Wasteland has indeed been very busy. After all, settling massive amounts of people isn't that easy. However, our people are already well coordinated. Moreover, the commodities have already been prepared, so settling people shouldn't take too much time. Also, Blockhead and Rockhead are there as well as our first batch of slaves, they should be able to manage things properly. It shouldn't be a huge issue if Shue were to leave. "

Lizzy nodded, then she stood up and said, "Brother Hai, let's first make that potion and then have Cai'er call Shue over. It would be good if we take care of this matter as soon as possible."

## Chapter 702 – Elves in Flower City

---

When Zhao Hai and the others arrived at the Processing Machine, Cai'er was already waiting for them. Moreover, she already got the herbs and placed them on the side of the machine.

Zhao Hai looked at the pile of material's on the ground, ginsengs, crow's heart, snow lotus, goldmetal fruit, and a lot more were present. Moreover, one could clearly see how expensive the potion must be judging from how much precious things it needed. When he saw this, Zhao Hao couldn't help but sigh. All of this just to make one potion, it really was a very hard to make product.

Although Zhao Hai lamented about this fact, he still turned to Cai'er and said, "Start it." Cai'er nodded and then pressed the buttons on the Processing Machine. The Processing Machine suddenly flashed a bright light on the pile of herbs on the ground, absorbing them one by one.

When all of the herbs had vanished, the Space immediately issued a prompt, "Strengthening Potion being processed. Estimated time, 48 hours. 1 million gold has been deducted. Please wait patiently for the product to finish."

Zhao Hai couldn't help but force a smile at this. The Space really was a drain of money. Even if it works for him, it still deducted 1 million coins to his inventory.

Cai'er looked at Zhao Hai and couldn't help but chuckle, "Young Master, you don't need to worry. When the Space gets upgraded to a certain level, the Processing Machine wouldn't need gold to operate anymore." Zhao Hai bitterly smiled and said, "Still, we need to wait for that day. Who knows, maybe I will go broke even before we reach that point."

Lizzy and the others chuckled, all of them knew that Zhao Hai was just cracking a joke. Although the Processing Machine had indeed taken a lot of money, Lizzy and the others knew that Zhao

Hai wouldn't run out of money. With the produce that the Space provides everyday, money would certainly be the last of their problems. And even if they can't sell it to the continent, Zhao Hai can still sell them off to the Space. Although the Space buys them at a lower price, it was still at an understandable rate. When Lizzy and the other first saw this happen, they were very startled. If Zhao Hai were to introduce these gold coins to the continent, then he would certainly give ruin to the running economy of the world. Fortunately, Zhao Hai wanted to be low-key, he didn't like to go too far in acquiring and introducing gold to the continent.

Forty-eight hours, it would take two days before the potion gets made. Although Zhao Hai was somewhat disappointed that he couldn't see the potion today, he didn't say anything and just led the group back to the villa.

On the other hand, even though Shue got word from Zhao Hai, it was still impossible for him to hand over his work to someone else in such a short period of time. After all, there were too many people currently living in the Black Wasteland.

The Elves and the Dwarves have already reached the Buddha Family's land. Zhao Hai had also given them a place to settle in. There was no need to mention the Dwarves, they were now temporarily living inside the camps. However, they have started to dig inside Iron Mountain to see if there were iron deposits still left. At the same time, they were also preparing the caverns inside the mountain since they were used to the living environment there.

On the other hand, the Elves were much more troublesome to settle in. They were too familiar to the life inside the Tree of Life, and it was impossible for the Black Wasteland to have a tree of that size. And compared to the temperate forest, the Black Wasteland would have freezing winters, at the same time, it was impossible for the Elves to live inside Iron Mountain.

Therefore, Zhao Hai made a special plan to give them a place to which they can plant trees in. This way, they would find their

settlement more comfortable to live in.

Although the Black Wasteland is big, it was impossible for it to have places like the Dwarf Mountain and the Elven Forest. Because of this, Zhao Hai still had problems in finding places appropriate for the Elves to plant their trees.

In the end, the plan was stopped since way too many people had started to stream into the Black Wasteland. Since Zhao Hai didn't have a means to arrange a proper place for the Elves, he decided to just place them in Flower City, making them live their isolated lives once more.

Flower City was quite big, and because it was in the Carrion Swamp it was very isolated from the others. This gave the Elves a feeling of security. However, it was still impossible for the city to accommodate all of the Elves. In the end, Zhao Hai had to ask Cai'er to expand the city so that the Elves can move in.

This was only a temporary arrangement, it was impossible for Zhao Hai to make them live for too long in this place. After all, Flower City was once interlinked with a spatial rift to the Demon Realm. Zhao Hai couldn't have people living in this place.

However, the Elves loved Flower City. Although they had a change of environment, flowers and vines were present everywhere in the place. Moreover, they also didn't need to worry about food because Zhao Hai would be bringing it to them. Because of this, it took a very short time for the Elves to get settled in.

But even so, the Elves were still quite restless. After having lived in Flower City, they discovered that they had nothing else to do. They cannot just eat and sleep everyday, that was something that pigs did. Therefore, they proposed an idea to Zhao Hai, they wanted to plant trees in the Carrion Swamp.

Zhao Hai didn't have a choice but to comply. He went to the Elf Queen and told her about this matter. The Queen immediately agreed and had prepared some seedlings to be sent over. These

seedlings were the ones most commonly used by the Elves.

Now that the Elves had started to plant trees near Flower City, Zhao Hai stopped thinking about them. He decided to let them be, this was also allow them to cultivate their strength.

Although the magic beasts of the carrion swamp didn't disturb the Black Wasteland anymore, Zhao Hai has yet to subdue them. It wasn't because he didn't have the capability, but because he just didn't want to, he wanted the beasts to live in the swamp quite freely. Now that the Elves have occupied Flower City, it was inevitable for them to get attacked. Whenever the Elves go out into the outskirts of their settlement, there was a high probability for them to meet these magic beasts. Although the magic beasts didn't dare to enter the city, they were still able to roam around due to the absence of 9th ranks.

Zhao Hai already told the Elves about this matter when they decided to plant trees. However, the Elves didn't care much about it. They were already used to being attacked by the magic beasts in the Elven Forest, being attacked by magic beasts now wouldn't be much of an issue.

Because of this and many other matters, Shue needed to lend Green and the others a hand. Extracting himself from these tasks couldn't be done in a short time.

Since the Processing Machine needed two days to make the potion, Zhao Hai decided to have Shue continue with what he was doing in this period of time. Also, it seems like the Demons would still need some time to prepare their attack. At this moment, Zhao Hai had nothing to do, he was totally free.

After taking care of the Processing Machine, Zhao Hai made Lizzy and the others rest. Then he led Berry out of the Space to visit the Dwarf camp.

Although the Dwarves were tasked to make tunnels, these tunnels don't need too much manpower to make. At most, the

operation would need a commanding Dwarf while most of the work was done by the iron beasts. Because of this, a lot of people were still present inside the camp.

Zhao Hai went to the camp and saw the Dwarves practicing their fighting techniques. Meanwhile, outside the camp were a lot of curious adventurers. They were looking at the camp in order to see the Dwarves. However, because of the order, they didn't dare to go in. At the same time, the Dwarves were too preoccupied to care about them.

When Zhao Hai arrived at the camp, the Dwarves immediately took notice of him. Two Dwarves went forward to greet Zhao Hai as they bowed and said, "Elder, you came"

Zhao Hai nodded, then he looked at the two and said, "Where's Elder Julian?"

One of the Dwarves answered, "Elder Julian is currently taking charge in making the tunnels. Do you want us to call him over?"

Zhao Hai smiled and said, "I'll have to trouble you then. Tell him I came with liquor to drink." The Dwarves nodded as one of them turned around and ran.

Zhao Hai entered the Dwarf camp with a happy mood. Although the area of the Dwarf camp has been made private, it wasn't fenced off or walled in. It was only the Humans who didn't dare come here because of Besmir's strict order.

The remaining Dwarf led Zhao Hai to the place where Julian lived before he retreated. Zhao Hao looked around the place and muttered, "This is quite a small courtyard." It was relatively independent, but it wasn't just Julian who was living here. There were a lot of Dwarves inside, all of them busy with what they were doing that none of them took the chance to approach and talk to Zhao Hai.

Zhao Hai couldn't blame them, he knew that this was just the



Dwarves being Dwarves. It doesn't matter who came, as long as the Dwarves were busy, they will not come and greet that person, even if it was the Patriarch.

Not long after Zhao Hai reached the courtyard, a laugh was suddenly heard, "Mister, how did you have the time to ask me for a drink?"

Zhao Hai smiled faintly and said, "I had nothing to do, so I came to drink a cup. But also, I was waiting for the Elves to arrive. I think it wouldn't be long before we can see them on the horizon."

Julian smiled and said, "But still, they can't be as fast as us. I must say, your Space Divergent ability is really something. For you to be able to take us from the Dwarf Mountain to Demon City in such a short time is extremely astonishing. It's quite nice to be able to travel a thousand kilometers in just a single step."

Zhao Hai smiled faintly and said, "It's quite good. In a few days, I'll be taking the Beastmen from the Prairie to here. When that time comes, Demon City would become more lively."

Julian smiled and said, "The Dwarves and the Beastmen had broken our relationship for a long time. It would be great to see our Beastman brothers once more." The Beastmen and the Dwarves have quite similar temperaments. Because of this, their relationship in the past was quite good. However, when the Humans started to suppress the other races, the Dwarves drew back to their Mountain while the Beastmen returned to the Prairie. This broke contact between the two races. Being able to meet again in Demon City made Julian quite glad.

While Zhao Hai was preparing to drink with Julian, a Dwarf suddenly came knocking at the door, "Elder Julian, Elder Zhao Hai, there's a Human outside. He said that a flying group can be seen outside the city. It's possible that the Elves have arrived. They are asking Elder Zhao Hai to go and assist in meeting them."

# Chapter 703 – Threat

---

Zhao Hai stood up and turned to Julian before saying, “It would be nice to have a drink with you. But it seems like I don’t have the opportunity to do it this time. Sigh. To be honest, I really don’t like to deal with the Elves. Although they are good fighters, they are a bit too proud. However, since they are also a member of the Ark Continent, we can’t just leave them behind.”

The reason why Zhao Hai dared to tell Julian about this was because he knew that after the previous debacle, the Elves weren’t exactly in good graces with the Dwarves.

Although Billy knew that the attitude that the Great Elder and the Prince showed him was due to them being people from the Radiant Church, Billy was also aware that the Elves were truly looking down on the Dwarves. This fact made Billy quite angry.

And after Billy returned to the Dwarf Mountain, he told everyone about this matter. With the Dwarf Race’s disposition, they just wouldn’t let this offense go lightly. Therefore, the Dwarves didn’t have a good impression with the Elves from then on. It was only because of the Demons that the Dwarves chose to refrain from acting on the Elves.

The Dwarves have the capital to do so. After all, they have a lot of opportunities to get in touch with the Humans. Their weapons were very popular for Human armies, this made it possible for them to acquire Human goods as trade. Among the other races, the Dwarves has been faring the best.

The Elves’ arrogance ran through their bones, and it was a completely incomprehensible attitude. One should know that before the Dwarves came, the Elves were living quite terrible lives. Only after they got in contact with the Dwarves and managed to sell some of their artworks off that they began to live comfortably. For the Elves to still look down on the Dwarves after all of this was

something that Billy and the others were unable to bear. But since the Elves were quite important to the alliance, the Dwarves didn't dare to make any moves. However, the gap was already there.

Because of this, Zhao Hai can feel relieved when expressing such bold words regarding the Elves in front of the Dwarves. Not only will it be fine, the statement might even make Zhao Hai look better in the eyes of the Dwarves.

When Julian heard Zhao Hai, he couldn't help but laugh and said, "Alright, but you still need to see those guys. I just can't understand why the Elves are arrogant towards the Dwarves. It's very strange."

Zhao Hai couldn't help but laugh as well, "It's quite strange indeed. Alright, Julian, I'll have a drink with you when I have some time."

Julian nodded and said, "Alright, then I'll wait for you." Zhao Hai waved to Julian one last time before turning around to leave.

Outside the Dwarf camp was a Human soldier. When that soldier saw Zhao Hai come out, he immediately went forward and gave Zhao Hai a salute, "Mister, the guards on the western walls saw some flying beings in the distance. We hope that you can come and look at it." Zhao Hai nodded and said, "Alright, let's go and take a look." Then he summoned the Bone Dragon and captured the soldier before shooting up into the sky.

The soldier became a little excited, he was shaking when he was standing on top of the Bone Dragon. After all, this was the first time that he flew into the sky. And for him to do it on the head of a Bone Dragon was a truly exhilarating experience.

Before long, Zhao Hai's Bone Dragon arrived at the western walls of the city. The Bone Dragon descended slowly before Zhao Hai had the soldier go down. After that, Zhao Hai looked into the horizon to see what was going on.

The plain white sky was currently dotted by some black spots. And presently, Zhao Hai was getting information that those black spots were red lights on the monitor. This assured Zhao Hai that the people in the distance were the Elves.

Zhao Hai immediately stood on the back of the Bone Dragon as it flew towards the sky in order to meet the approaching party. Before long, the black spots got closer and closer. Then Zhao Hai can finally make out a silhouette of Elves on top of some flying beasts. Majority of the Elves were archers, only a few of them were Mages. And it seems like it was the Mages that were taking the lead.

Zhao Hai had also spotted an acquaintance among the group, it was Gellar, the Elven Race's princess. Zhao Hai didn't expect her to be the one leading this group. Zhao Hai turned his Bone Dragon around and went side to side with Gellar's mount. Zhao Hai turned his head and said, "Captain Gellar, welcome. Please follow me." Then Zhao Hai flew towards a part of the city where the Elves were supposed to live in. Besmir personally inspected the cleanliness of the place. It was even much cleaner than the residences for the Dwarves and the Beastmen.

Gellar hadn't had a chance to say anything as she gave a command to her people to follow Zhao Hai towards Demon City. This time, most of the archers that came with Gellar were harp users, they numbered about 5 thousand. Zhao Hai and Besmir had arranged to have them stay in the richer parts of the city, where the environment was relatively better.

After Gellar and the others had disembarked, Zhao Hai led them to get familiar with their residences. Zhao Hai turned to Gellar and said, "Captain, this place shall be your area inside Demon City. Rest assured, I've already sent an order to have the Humans refrain from coming here. If one disobeyed the order and still came here, then your people would be fit to judge them. Everything that you will need has already been prepared. If there's anything else that you require, then you can send someone to approach me or send it

through the General. Speaking of which, Captain Gellar, come with me to meet the General of the Demon City's army."

Gellar nodded and said, "Alright, Elder, please lead the way." Zhao Hai gave a nod before he led Gellar as well as two harp archers towards the center of Demon City. Zhao Hai didn't mind the guards too much. After all, Gellar was the princess of the Elven race.

The arrival of the Elves elicited more of a response compared to the Dwarves' arrival. This was the Elves, titled as the most beautiful race in the entire Ark Continent. The entire city caused a stir, mercenaries, adventurers, and soldiers alike were filling the roads.

When these people saw Gellar's appearance, each of their eyes turned red. Two mercenaries even dared to whistle, which were promptly made stiff by Zhao Hai's pressuring gaze.

Gellar and the others weren't familiar with all these attention. The three of them glared at the two people when Zhao Hai took action. The two guards were completely ready to kill, afraid that people might rush towards Gellar.

Zhao Hai didn't care much about it. These mercenaries and adventurers in Demon city weren't generally good people anyway. Majority of them came to offer their lives in exchange for money. To make their own and their family's lives better, they disregarded life and death. Therefore, it made an environment of lawlessness inside the city.

At the same time, Zhao Hai also wanted to give them a warning. Elves were truly very attractive. If these fellows were to have bad thoughts, then they might even charge towards the Elven encampment to cause trouble. At this time, Zhao Hai stopped, Gellar and the other two Elves looked at him in confusion. Zhao Hai swept his gaze towards the mercenaries and adventurers as said with a threatening tone, "I don't care about any of your

backgrounds, however, I must tell you that the Elves, Dwarves, and the Beastmen are our allies. Allies that this Zhao Hai had invited. If anyone dares to be impolite to them, then I would personally make them regret their decision. Don't think that since the world is going into turmoil, you would be able to do whatever you want. If you do any crimes inside Demon City, then even if you go to the ends of the continent, I will come to you and eliminate you. This Zhao Hai has always lived by his words. You better reign in any improper thoughts. Otherwise, I won't mind adding more people into my undead army." Then after giving a cold look to those present, Zhao Hai moved forward.

What Zhao Hai said about these people were in fact true. Among these people, a lot of them held criminal records. They have done crimes on other places, so they cannot stay in the continent for too long, this made them decide to run towards Demon City.

These fellows just became so bold after seeing how beautiful the Elves were. With how weak their minds were, the only thing that was on their mind was how much they would get if they can capture an Elf. One should know that even one Elf can garner enough gold coins that can make someone live in luxury for the rest of their lives. They believed that with the chaos in the continent, they can just run to another place and nobody would take the effort to arrest them.

However, Zhao Hai's threat was actually effective. One could say that the people's worst nightmare would be Dark Mages. From what they heard, Dark Mages were people who were able to take your soul out of your body and imprison it. Dark Mages can then use methods to interrogate that soul and ask for the whereabouts of one's family, who will then die to the hands of the Dark Mage.

Moreover, when one's soul is imprisoned, it doesn't mean that one would have control of their own being. In essence, an imprisoned soul could just helplessly stare as the Dark Mage proceeds to kill all of their loved ones. This was a kind of torture

that nobody would be able to withstand.

Because of this, no matter what kind of person one was, they would always be afraid of Dark Mages. This was because Dark Mages were the quintessential ‘bad guys’ of the continent.

And with Zhao Hai being the strongest Dark Mage, his threat was the most ominous one. Although these people were lawless, they were still intelligent enough to not ignore Zhao Hai’s words.

After Zhao Hai issued his threat, the onlookers immediately behaved themselves. They didn’t dare to act unreasonable anymore. In the current Demon City, Zhao Hai undoubtedly held the most power. If they disregard Zhao Hai, then they wouldn’t even be aware how they died. Therefore, they had no other choice but to stay honest.

Zhao Hai brought Gellar’s group to the General’s residence and introduced them to Besmir. This time, the Elves were just present because they needed to experience the battlefield. Then at appropriate times, Zhao Hai would have them fight with the Demons. Zhao Hai didn’t really expect the Elves to have a large impact against the battle, after all, the number of Elves were just too small.

# Chapter 704 – The Elephant Race Arrives

---

After Gellar was briefed on their tasks, Zhao Hai immediately lead them back to their camp. However, he didn't have enough time to be idle since it was time for him to meet the Elephant Beastmen.

One must say, the Beast King's working efficiency is very high. It wasn't a long time before Zhao Hai approached him but everything has already been prepared. Upon asking the Beast King, Zhao Hai knew that the Beast King didn't have the Elephant Race head to Beast God City. Instead, he just had them gather in their main camp and wait there for Zhao Hai to pick them up. This saved a lot of time since the only thing that needed waiting was the hawk that delivered the letter.

Zhao Hai couldn't help but sigh when he heard the Beast King's method. Then his body flashed and appeared in a place not far away from the Elephant Race's main camp.

The Elephants had a very good reputation in the Prairie. But although their temperament was quite mild, they were really good fighters. They didn't fear any race in the Prairie and the other races didn't want to offend them either.

Ordinary Elephant Beastmen were much bigger than Humans. They have average heights of five meters while some of them can even reach six or seven meters high. The weapons that they are using were special and were divided into two types. They had maces for both hands, but they were much bigger than the ones usually used by the other Beastmen .They were sturdy weapons that seems to be made out of beast bone.

Their other weapon was actually a scimitar. This weapon wasn't wielded by their hands, but instead by their noses. It was quite known that the nose of an Elephant was much more dextrous compared to their hands.



Like majority of maces, the Elephant Race's maces pack a lot of thunderous power in each strike. On the other hand, their scimitars were quick and light, due to the control provided by their long trunks. With how their scimitars gracefully swing on the battlefield, the Elephant Race's blade arts became quite famous in the continent.

When Zhao Hai arrived at the main camp, he saw a gathering of about twenty thousand Elephant Beastman Warriors and twenty thousand war elephants. This army can be used both as an infantry and as a cavalry. However, the Elephants were less lethal when riding their mounts. Their mounts weren't really suited for high speed movements, which weakens the Elephant Race's ability to charge the enemy. In the end, the Elephant cavalry can only be played around by their much nimble enemies.

On the other hand, their prowess as an infantry was different. Every single step the Elephants make, even if quite slow, gave off an intimidating aura, pressuring the creatures they were up against. There wasn't a lot that an army could do to withstand an Elephant infantry advance.

The war elephants of the Elephant Race weren't suitable for being mounts. They weren't fast beasts, however, they are quite heavy, this made it possible for these beasts to be used in wars as well.

When Zhao Hai flew his Bone Dragon towards the main camp of the Elephants, the 20 thousand warriors were already prepared to be deployed. At the same time, the tribe's Patriarch was already there waiting for Zhao Hai.

The Royal Clan of the Elephant race was quite a famous group in the Prairie, they were the Silver Elephant Clan. Their skins were silver-white, some might even claim to see them radiate silver shine. Their skins were extremely defensive, and in addition to their monstrous strengths, they were quite the force among the Beastman Race.

Zhao Hai had his Bone Dragon land outside the main camp. When the Elephant Patriarch saw Zhao hai, he immediately went forward and bowed, “Elephant Race’s Patriarch Baht meets His Highness, Prince Zhao Hai.” Zhao Hai returned the courtesy and said, “Patriarch Baht is too polite. To be honest, I didn’t expect your race to get prepared this quickly.”

Baht smiled and said, “When I received His Majesty’s letter, this Baht didn’t dare to neglect it. After all, we Beastman have been longing to fight with the Demons for quite some time. I didn’t even expect that we would be the first ones to be deployed. This is really the luck of the Elephant Race. I already made the men gather around so that the Prince can take them away at any time.”

Zhao Hai nodded, then he glanced at the Elephant army and said, “I will have to trouble the Patriarch this time. Since Demon City has become quite hectic, I won’t be staying here for long. When I have time, I shall have a drink with the Patriarch later.”

Baht smiled and said, “The Prince is too polite. When you visit later, I shall personally arrive to entertain you.” Zhao Hai laughed and said, “Alright, then that’s settled.” Then he waved his hand as a spatial rift appeared. Zhao Hai turned to Baht and said, “Then I won’t be staying, Patriarch please command your men in.”

Baht nodded, then he beckoned his hand before a Silver Elephant came. Baht looked at Zhao Hai and said, “Prince, this is my son, Barres. He will be the commander for this troop. If the Prince has anything he needs, then you can freely approach him.”

Barres immediately bowed and said, “I have seen His Highness Prince Zhao Hai.” He had a very nasally voice. Zhao Hai smiled faintly and said, “Alright, then we’re good to go.” Berres trumpeted his trunk before the army slowly entered the spatial rift.

When all of the Elephants had entered the rift, Zhao Hai then turned to Baht and said, “Patriarch Baht, I shall be leaving. I won’t

be disturbing you anymore.” He bowed to Baht once more before entering the rift and vanishing.

When Zhao Hai came out of the rift, he saw Barres leading his men to make a formation outside Demon City. Seeing them prepared, Zhao Hai nodded and said, “Barres, follow me. I’ll lead you to the place where you will be staying at. Let’s have you rest in the city first.” Barres complied and commanded his army to walk towards the city along with Zhao Hai.

The people on the city had spotted the army as well. However, when they saw Zhao Hai’s Bone Dragon, they immediately knew that it was the reinforcements. This made their hearts warm up with excitement.

Although there weren’t a lot of reinforcements from the three other races, it was still a very huge morale boost to the defenders of Demon City. For the people inside the city, this meant that three powers were supporting them from behind.

Before long, Zhao Hai had taken the Elephant Beastmen to their residence. One must say that the Elephant Race’s camp needed special attention. They needed big houses otherwise they wouldn’t be able to fit.

The arrival of the Elephants didn’t make as large as a commotion compared to the Dwarves and Elves. After all, there were still ample contact between the Humans and Beastmen all these years. At the same time, Humans and Beastmen would constantly go into war with each other. This made the Beastmen look bad in the minds of the Humans.

Although the Buddha Empire didn’t border with the Beastman Prairie and big battles generally didn’t bother them, knowing that the Beastmen and Humans went to war with each other still had an effect in their mentality. However, the arrival of the three races were still able to calm the defenders’ hearts. Knowing that Demon City has been reinforced and strengthened was a very good thing

for the people inside the city.

In fact, it wasn't only Demon City which will have reinforcements. Later on, the three races will be sending more troops to aid the Buddha Empire. Together with the Humans, the entire Buddha Empire will be formed into a defensive fort.

At this time, all of the races in the continent needed to be united. The Divine Race even has yet to arrive, and this worried Zhao Hai.

After taking care of the Elephants, Zhao Hai lead Berry back to the Space. Laura and the others had now gotten up and were ready to eat their meal. Since Zhao Hai was quite hungry as well, he decided to eat along with them. At the same time, Zhao Hai also looked at the monitor and looked at the scenery outside Demon City. The Demons hasn't made a single sound, this made Zhao Hai worry.

When the Demons came, would they just be building their city in peace? Why doesn't this feel like standard Demon behaviour? Is there something wrong?

However, Zhao Hai was also wishing for this to happen. He was also waiting for the God-rank potion to be finished. When Shue gets promoted to God-rank, then Zhao Hai's side would have four God-rank experts. With this number, Zhao Hai can now lead his undead to harass the Demons.

Time slowly passed as the skies turned dark. After this day passes, the Demons have already stepped foot on the continent for three days. There weren't any fighting between both sides yet, there weren't any significant losses. The present situation looked like a peaceful coexistence.

However, Zhao Hai knew that this wasn't peace. This was merely the calm before the storm. The Demons were only waiting for their God-ranked experts to stabilize their strength. On the other hand, Zhao Hai was also waiting for his potion to be finished. As soon as the potion gets used up, then Zhao Hai would launch his own

attack against the Demon Race.

Originally, Zhao Hai wanted to wait for the response coming from the Divine Race before taking any action. However, the Divine Race has been very slow in responding. Because of this, Zhao Hai decided to take a shot at the Demons and see if he can drive them back all on his own. Even if he cannot deal with the Demon Race, Zhao Hai would still cement his image as a formidable person inside the minds of the Demons.

After a peaceful night, Zhao Hai came out of the Space and went to see the people from the base of operations outside the City. Zhao Hai didn't have the Gan family take charge for the whole night. Although Tywin and the others were 9th rank experts, they weren't like Zhao Hai who didn't need to use any spiritual force in order to control the undead. They were different, they needed to exert an effort so that they can give orders to their minions. The reason why Zhao Hai had them guard here in the daytime was so that they can train their spiritual force.

Zhao Hai knew that although the potion for 9th rank was very beneficial, those who drank it needed to be accustomed to 9th rank strength as well. Because of this Zhao Hai decided to position them outside the city, making them use their spiritual force in controlling the undead. This way, they would be able to use their 9th rank abilities much more comfortably.

# Chapter 705 – The Thing They Worried Most About

---

The Demons still didn't attack in the next two days. However, Zhao Hai didn't idle in this period of time. He called Barres, Julian, and Gellar over to go meet with Besmir. After all, everyone was together in defending Demon City.

After the group met, they immediately discussed about their arrangements in the future. In the end, the main task that was handed over to the Dwarves was the construction of the tunnels.

Naturally, since the Dwarves didn't need too much people in digging, they were also tasked to deploy some of their members to help defend the city. Like the Humans, they would be acting as sentry as well as wall patrols. This wasn't an embarrassment to them, after all, this would also help them in judging the status of the City in the future.

On the other hand, the task that was given to the Elves was quite simple. While Zhao Hai was fighting with the Demons outside the city, the Elves would be the outside aerial cavalry, taking shots at the Demons from time to time.

Although the Elves had brought a lot of dual cultivators of sword and harp, their melee capabilities were trained for ground combat. It would be impossible for them to learn aerial battles in a short time. Therefore, it would be detrimental for them to approach the Demons in melee combat.

However, the one with the biggest problems were the Elephant Beastmen.. Although they were quite slow, their defensive abilities were quite amazing. At the same time, some of them were able to use earth magic as well. They would be a huge help in the defense. The only problem was the fact that the walls were made for Humans, the Elephants would have a hard time while being stationed there.

The Elephants wouldn't be able to scale the walls. Although their fighting strength is indeed significant, it wouldn't have that much of an effect, after all they were on the defense. However, Zhao Hai was still quite reluctant about this. But since there was no other way, the temporary task handed over to the Elephants right now was to help transport weapons and commodities all throughout the city.

In order to prepare for the attack of the Demons, Zhao Hai had also made the Humans use the first excavated tunnels by the Dwarves to reinforce the walls of the city. He was afraid that the walls wouldn't be able to withstand the charge of the Demons.

Those two days went past in a blink of an eye. At this time, Zhao Hai wasn't inside Demon City but instead he was inside the Space along with Laura and the others. All of them stood in front of the processing machine. There were only two minutes left before the God-rank potion becomes available.

Shue was standing right by Zhao Hai's side. When Shue heard that Zhao Hai wanted to promote him into a God-ranked expert, he was utterly stunned. He was aware of the God-ranked potion, however, he didn't expect Zhao Hai to pick him to be the first one to consume it.

But when Zhao Hai explained the reason to him, Shue immediately understood. Shue didn't say anything, and after handing his tasks over to someone else, he immediately went to the Space.

The ticking of the Processing Machine's timer coincided with the heartbeat of those who were present. The atmosphere got more and more tense with each digit that the timer counted down.

This was the first time that Zhao Hai would use the God-rank potion in order to promote someone to God-rank, telling people that he was not anxious would be a lie. When Shue gets promoted, then their relative power would be very close to the power of the

Demon Race. Also, as long as they are given time, the number of 9th ranks that they produce would get more and more. By then, forcing the Demons to return to the Demon Realm would be an easy matter.

Ten, nine, eight, seven, six, five, four, three, two, one. “Strengthening Potion has been completed. Please collect it as soon as possible.” Then a small bottle appeared right in front of Zhao Hai.

This bottle was about the size of one’s palm. It was an extremely ordinary bottle, there were no cosmetics on it. Filling half of the bottle was a dark blue liquid. The color was very beautiful, it was akin to the dark blue ocean. One could see how clean the potion was, there was no point of impurity that can be seen.

Zhao Hai took the bottle and inspected it properly, then he couldn’t help but say, “All of those precious materials, only to make this much. It’s really quite an expensive potion.” Then he gave the bottle to Shue and said, “Shue, go and prepare yourself before drinking this potion. Adjust your mental state accordingly before taking it all down.” Shue carefully received the bottle before bowing, “Yes, Young Master.”

Zhao Hai nodded, he looked at Shue and then added, “Shue, it would be great if this potion would be able to make your clones into 9th rank. However, if it doesn’t matter. After all, the Space can just plant more materials for the potion.”

Shue nodded then he said, “Young Master, let me excuse myself.”

Zhao Hai gave his approval, then Shue went towards his room as Zhao Hai and the others returned to the living room. At this time, Lizzy looked at Zhao Hai and said, “Big Brother Hai, do you think that Shue would succeed?”

Zhao Hai nodded and said, “Success is for certain. The Space has not disappointed me before. However, I’m afraid that the potion won’t be enough to turn his clones into God-rank. If that happens,



our strength would be lesser than what I wish it to be.”

Berry frowned as she said, “We also aren’t aware as to when Shue would be done. I feel that the God-ranked Demons are already done with restoring their strength.”

Zhao Hai sighed and said, “Maybe we’ll have to wait for a few more days. I don’t think it would be easy to deal with the Demons now that the Divine Race seem to be absent. Moreover, there is also the Demon Race’s self-exploding methods. They are quite powerful, Berry, you should already know about it.”

Berry nodded, “Demons regard being captured after defeat to be a shame. Therefore, when they are defeated, they would immediately initiate their self-destructing incantations. Moreover, 9th rank Demons have the capability to injure God-rank experts with their explosions.”

Zhao Hai inodded, this was what he dreaded the most about the Demons. They were simply unafraid to die. They regard war as their lifestyle, such a race would definitely be fearless warriors.

When Laura and the others heard Berry’s statement, their expressions couldn’t help but change. They didn’t think that the Demons would get that aggressive. If both sides fought and the Demons decided to blow themselves up, then the casualties would definitely be huge.

Laura couldn’t help but look at Berry and asked, “Do only 9th rank Demons explode themselves?”

Berry shook her head and said, “I’m afraid not, every Demon above 5th rank, no matter Demon or magic beast, can self-explode. This was because of the difference between the Humans and the Demons. Humans practice Battle Qi and Magic, and while the Demons train in these methods, upon reaching 5th rank all of them would develop a Demonic Core. As long as these Demons have their core, then they would be able to explode themselves. However, low level Demons wouldn’t have powerful explosions.

5th ranks can kill or wound 6th ranks while 6th ranks can injure 7th ranks. When 7th ranks explode they would take an 8th rank's life. And similarly, 8th ranks would become threats to 9th ranks."

The worries on Laura and the others' face became more evident. For 8th ranks to become threats to 9th ranks meant that 8th rank Demons would prove a threat to Zhao Hai's undead. One must know that Zhao Hai's undead were their main source of strength when going against the Demons and the Divine Race. Now it seems like Zhao Hai needed to be more careful with regards to future battles.

And although Zhao Hai can crystallize his body to the point of being unbreakable, Zhao Hai was still unaware of how strong the God-ranked Demons were. If those God-rank experts can break Zhao Hai's crystallized body, then Zhao Hai would be placed in a perilous situation.

But even if they can't break Zhao Hai's crystallized body, they were still unsure whether they can beat the God-ranks of both the Demon and the Divine Race's side. This was where the undead would prove useful.

Zhao Hai looked at those around him and smiled, "Alright, there's no need to worry about these for now. Let's wait before the Divine Race arrives and then we'll make prior arrangements. At this point, I'm more worried about their absence than them being already here."

Laura nodded and said, "I don't know what kind of plan is being made by the Divine Race. However, I'm quite sure that when they start, then their movement wouldn't be small. Their actions should be as fast as lightning. We should be careful about this point."

Zhao Hai nodded, then he frowned and said, "Right, apart from sending in 9th ranks, what other methods can the Divine Race do? I remember from what Iron Hammer said that it's harder to

descend to the Ark Continent than to ascend to the Divine Realm. Is it possible for them to have found a much better way?”

Laura and the others frowned, “They were unable to guess what ideas the Divine Race might have. After all, they had Cai’er and Berry to get information about the Demon Realm. But when it came to the Divine Realm, they have virtually nothing. This point made them worry.”

The enemy you understand isn’t terrifying since you can make all sorts of plans against them. On the other hand, an enemy that you can’t understand is scary. No matter how many cards you have on your hand, you still couldn’t use them since you don’t know what move to make.

The preparation done by the Divine Race was certainly more than the Demon Race. But now that the Divine Race had done nothing, Zhao Hai couldn’t help but feel a headache.

Zhao Hao didn’t underestimate the Divine Race. When they sent their person down last time, they were able to turn heaven and earth upside down. Now that they had prepared for tens of thousands of years, who knows what methods they had already conjured.

However, there was one thing that Zhao Hai was sure about. No matter what methods the Divine Race does, he would make sure to give them the strongest counter-attack!

# Chapter 706 – Don't Take It Too Seriously

---

Shue quietly sat inside his room. He didn't drink the God-rank potion immediately. Instead, he decided to adjust his mind first, only consuming the potion at his peak state. He held the bottle in his hand and stared at it for quite some time,

Although he kept rotating the bottle in his hand, Shue's mind was actually somewhere else. He was thinking about the first time he and Zhao Hai met. At that time, two of them were enemies, with Shue being hired as an assassin.

But now, he was a 9th rank expert and a steward of the Buda Clan. And at the same time, he had made a name for himself that even Great nobles would give him great face whenever they meet him. And soon, he was going to be a God-ranked expert, an existence placed at the utmost apex of the entire Continent, a position only his Young Master had acquired before.

All of these things were given to him by his Young Master. Shue knew the current situation of the continent. At this time, they were truly in a dangerous position. If the Demons decide to attack at this time, then his Young Master would surely be unable to stop them.

In the past, Shue had always lamented the fact that his strength was too low, and that he cannot offer any significant help to Zhao Hai. But now, as long as he becomes a God-ranked expert, then he would become an aid to Zhao Hai's plans.

Shue never thought of going against Zhao Hai. And this was not because of the Blood Oath, in fact, the Blood Oath has already been deemed useless once he became 9th-rank. Shue didn't dare think about betraying Zhao Hai because he wouldn't have had all of these things without Zhao Hai.

Shue recovered from his thoughts, his eyes held a firm resolve. He decided deep in his heart that once he becomes a God-rank

expert and had God-ranked clones, then he would still follow Zhao Hai's side, he would always stand by and protect his Young Master.

After thinking up to here, Shue's heart became free. This was a kind of feeling that made it seem like his heart was two taels(100g) lighter.

Shue looked at the bottle, then he smiled slightly before he turned the cork and drank it. The moment the potion hit his stomach, Shue immediately felt a rush of strength tyrannically going through his body. Shue felt his body going to shreds, however, he wasn't afraid. He believed that Zhao Hai would never harm him. Because of this, he calmed his thoughts and just allowed the energy to go through his body. He understood that there was no point in controlling something that can't be controlled, so he just decided to wait it out.

Shue was currently in a unique state of mind. He felt that he had been separated from his fleshly body. It seemed like he was standing in a far off place, observing as his soul separated from his body. It was a marvelous feeling, Shue felt that he had become omniscient in his own little world.

Not knowing how long, but Shue suddenly felt that the rush of energy had completely subsided. It was currently running in his meridians in a straight and orderly manner.

Shue knew that the process has succeeded. He currently had the feeling of invincibility that couldn't compare to what he was feeling before. At the same time, Shue suddenly had a discovery, his clones hadn't been promoted to God-rank.

Shue sighed, he stood up and felt the strength of his body. Then he summoned a clone, the clone was still 9th-rank and did not reach the next level. Shue frowned before he slowly walked out of his room.

At this time, Zhao Hai was sitting inside the Space looking at the situation outside the city. It hasn't been too long before Shue

entered his room, only about two hours had passed.

Hearing Shue's door open, Zhao Hai immediately turned his head to look. Shue had arrived at the living room at this time, he bowed to Zhao Hai and said, "Young Master."

When Zhao Hai looked at Shue's gloomy expression, his face couldn't help but turn heavy as he asked, "Shue what happened? Did you fail?"

Shue worriedly replied, "Young Master, I only half-succeeded. I am now a God-ranked expert, however, my clones are still 9th rank." Zhao Hai didn't become disappointed with this result as he laughed and said, "That doesn't matter, you already did good. Hahaha, from the expression of your face, I really thought that you had failed."

Shue looked at Zhao Hai and said, "Young Master, I have this very unusual feeling. I think that as long as I drink another potion, then my clones would reach God-rank."

Zhao Hai stared, then his eyes shined as he said, "Really?"

Shue nodded and said, "Yes, Young Master. The feeling is quite strong. I can assure that you that it is not a desire, but it is a genuine feeling."

Zhao Hai nodded, "That's good enough, there's no need for you to explain yourself further. Cai'er, how long will the next batch of ingredients be prepared?" Cai'er counted with her fingers and said, "Young Master, at minimum, five days." Zhao Hai nodded, then he gave some instructions, "Look after those materials, after they get prepared, go and immediately make a potion, there would be no need to notify me." Cai'er nodded.

Then Zhao Hai turned to Shue and said, "Shue, you don't need to worry too much. When that other potion get finished, then you'll get to drink it. When that time comes, we would have more than 1000 God-ranked experts. Those Demons and Divine Race fellows

would surely get swept away.”

Shue’s looked at Zhao Hai with an elated expression, then he kneeled to the ground and said, “Shue is forever grateful to the Young Master.” Zhao Hai smiled faintly and held Shue up as he said, “Alright. Shue, there’s no need to be this formal. All of us here is family, you’re too modest. Right, follow me outside. It really makes me feel disgusted whenever I see the Demons continued to build while we couldn’t do anything. Let’s show the Demons that building their city in the Continent wouldn’t be that easy.”

Shue couldn’t help but laugh, “Alright, Young Master. I haven’t fought with a Demon before, I want to see how fierce they really are.” Zhao Hai smiled faintly and then turned his head to Berry, “Berry, let’s head out and see how the Demon Dragon King’s people plans deal with us.” Then the three people went out of the Space.

Outside, Zhao Hai summoned his Bone Dragon as the three of them stood on its head. Zhao Hai summoned 1000 undead, all of them in their humanoid form. Then Zhao Hai smiled as he relayed a message to Lizzy and Megan, “Lizzy, Megan, I’ll be handing the control of the undead army over to you while we block the God-ranked experts. Today, we must let the Demons understand that the Ark Continent isn’t just a place where they can casually come over and build cities in. They seem to be underestimating us too much”

Lizzy and Megan, who were both inside the Space, nodded. Then they commanded the undead army to slowly approach the Demons. The city that the Demons planned on building wasn’t small, therefore, the Demons were still in the process of laying in some foundations.

Upon seeing Zhao Hai’s huge army of undead, the Demon Dragon King’s expression couldn’t help but change. Just as what Berry thought, the Demon Camp had five God-ranked experts. However,

the five of them were still yet to restore their strength. Currently, none of them were able to fight to their full potential.

Because of this, the Demon Dragon King sent their most elite troops to meet Zhao Hai in the past. He wanted to make Zhao Hai understand their strength, making him afraid of ever attacking them again.

Naturally, the Demon Dragon King also discovered that Zhao Hai was a God-rank expert. In order to prevent Zhao Hai from attacking, he deliberately had the God-ranked experts in his army to show a hint of their aura. This was to make it known to Zhao Hai that the Demon side had five god-ranked experts, making him hesitate to attack them.

His plan had become very successful, Zhao Hai didn't make any other moves. He just stayed in Demon City all the time, looking at the city slowly being built. The Demon Dragon King wanted this state to continue up until the God-ranked experts were able to use their full strength. When that time comes, then they wouldn't need to worry about any attacks that Zhao Hai might do in the future.

However, they had decided to launch an attack, not giving the Demons any chance to prepare. Moreover, the Demon Dragon King didn't expect that along with Zhao Hai, there were also two other God-ranked experts.

The Demon Dragon King couldn't help but smile bitterly, he used to think that Zhao Hai was a patient person. He didn't expect Zhao Hai to make a move this abruptly.

Moreover, the Demon Dragon King felt worried about the two other God-ranked experts beside Zhao Hai. Where did these two people come from? Didn't the Ark Continent forbid the existence of God-ranked experts? The Demon Dragon King had realized that their conquest wouldn't be as easy as they thought.

Additionally, it seems like Zhao Hai's side wasn't struggling from



the suppression brought by the Ark Continent. They were God-ranked experts yet they seem to be able to use all of their strength. Completely unlike the Demons who needed to stabilize their condition in order to reach their full performance.

However, there wasn't enough time to think about these. The Demon Dragon King immediately issued a command, "Prepare to meet the enemy!!" At the same time, his Black Dragon carriage shot up into the sky, the other God-ranked experts going alongside him.

These God-ranked experts were also very special. One of them was a member of the Black Dragon race, he wore a black plate armor as he sat down on his horse. The hooves and tail of this horse was aflame. It had two eyes, a scaled body and a look of extreme savageness. The Knight had a lance on his hand while a two-handed sword hung on his waist. At the same time, he also had a knight's shield mounted on his back.

Then next God-ranked expert had a Mage's appearance, it was a Lich. Underneath this Demon Lich was a skeleton beast. From the looks of it, the beast seemed to be a huge blood sucking bat.

To the right of the Lich was a leather armor wearing archer. He had a jet black longbow on his hand and quivers on his waist. Each quiver holding 12 jet black arrows within it.

Second to the right was a person that looked like an Assassin. Cotton garments wrapped the whole person's body except his eyes. One couldn't spot a hint of skin on his body. Other than the rapier on his back, there weren't any weapons that can be seen.

# Chapter 707 – Domain

---

Five people, five different appearances, but all had the same characteristics. They gave off the feeling of being dangerous. And behind them were flying Demons and magic beasts.

The undead army didn't attack immediately. When they saw that the Demon Dragon King was coming to them, the army stopped. This gave hope to the Demon Dragon King, he was thinking that Zhao Hai really didn't have any thoughts of attacking them today, otherwise, he wouldn't have stopped.

Zhao Hai's group of three went forward while on top of the Bone Dragon. The Demon Dragon King looked at Berry and saw that she already had a crystal on her head. This made the Demon Dragon King's eyes shrink, then he shifted his gaze to Shue who was standing behind Zhao Hai.

Shue was also a God-ranked expert, but the Demon Dragon King felt a distinct aura of danger on Shue. In addition to being a God-ranked expert, the Demon Dragon King can also see a warrior, a warrior that wasn't afraid of death.

Most importantly, the Demon Dragon King can see how Shue looks at Zhao Hai. It was a look of complete devotion, a look of worship.

Such a gaze wouldn't have been strange on an ordinary person, however, it was truly bizarre if it appears on a God-ranked expert.

What were God-rank experts? It was a world's peak existence. Even if one were a slave before, once he becomes God-rank, then he would achieve the treatment of a God-ranked expert as well as the respect that come along with it. One must know that these God-ranks consider themselves as the top of the food chain, there was nobody that they would lower their head to.

Taking the Demon Dragon King's group for example, although

the Demon Dragon King held a higher status, he was still unable to give commands to the other God-rank experts. The only reason why these experts listened to him was because it was an order from the Great Demon King.

In the Demon Realm, nobody can violate the order of His Majesty the Great Demon King, even if you are a God-rank expert. Therefore, these God-ranked experts chose to cooperate with the Demon Dragon King for now.

The Demon Dragon King turned his gaze to Zhao Hai, the dread on his eyes getting thicker. He didn't think that a God-rank expert could actually make another God-rank expert worship him. Without even considering Zhao Hai's strength, just this point alone made Zhao Hai the most dangerous person present here.

The Demon Dragon King slowly stopped in front of Zhao Hai, then his deep voice sounded out, "Is mister really unable to let us go? Do we really need to fight to the death?"

Zhao Hai looked at the Demon Dragon King and smiled faintly, "There's no need for the Demon Dragon King to talk too much. I know the reason why you came to the Ark Continent, and you know the reason as well. Further talks are useless at this point. However, I still need to make a final question to the Demon Dragon King. Are the Demons really unwilling to go back to the Demon Realm?"

The Demon Dragon King looked straight to Zhao Hai's eyes, and without blinking he said, "Never!"

Zhao Hai laughed, "Hahaha, then that's the end. However, there is one thing I need to tell you. In fact, I am bringing my undead over today with the intention of having them eat a good proper meal."

Then Zhao Hai waved his hand as the undead behind him disappeared. When they appeared once more, they were now behind the Demon Dragon King. These undead had already

changed their shape into small groups of cone formations. All of them were rotating fast as they rushed towards the Demon army.

The Demon Dragon King's expression changed, he waved his hand as well as he said, "Kill them!!" Then his black dragon carriage went charging towards Zhao Hai. The God-rank experts behind him heading forward as well.

Zhao Hai didn't retreat, his figure moved as the Bone Dragon vanished. Then he, Berry, and Shue's bodies disappeared in mid air. When they reappeared, they were already surrounding the Demon archer. Zhao Hai's Blood Ghost Staff has been transformed into a glaive as it chopped towards the Archer.

Glaives weren't present in the Ark Continent. However, because of the circumstances, Zhao Hai believed that the glaive would be the most suitable weapon for him to use at this time.

The reason why Zhao Hai chose to attack the archer was because among the other people, the Archer was the one who held the biggest threat. With his long-ranged attack, it wouldn't be good if he was still present when Zhao Hai and the others were suppressing the Demon Dragon King.

The Archer wasn't expecting Zhao Hai's group to target him first. However, he wasn't scared, instead, his face actually revealed a look of excitement. Then his figure moved as he disappeared into a region of dark cloud which also wrapped Zhao Hai's group. At the same time, Zhao Hai and the others experienced their bodies' weight increase by a few folds.

Zhao Hai couldn't help but mutter, "Is this the strength of a Domain?"

Zhao Hai was a God-rank expert, therefore, he knew how strong God-ranks can be. After achieving God-rank, an expert can then comprehend his own domain. This Domain would go alongside a person's combat strength as it slowly forms. In this domain, a God-ranked expert would be able to display 120% of their strength while

their enemies would be weakened to 80% of their abilities.

However, Domains are very hard to comprehend. One shouldn't think that once you become God-ranked, then you would immediately comprehend a Domain. It takes a long time and enough experience in order to gain one.

A God-ranked expert who didn't have a Domain could only exert about 80% of their true ability. It can be said that God-ranked experts who have a Domain and those who don't were on two different stages.

Zhao Hai's group hadn't managed to comprehend their own Domain yet. Because of this, Zhao Hai used this moment to capitalize on the fact that the God-ranked Demons were yet to fully recover their strength. However, Zhao Hai could still feel the disadvantages of not having a Domain.

The God-ranked Demons seem to be aware of this point, therefore, the Demon Dragon King ominously sounded, "Domain Merge!"

Merging of Domains was a very peculiar technique. God-ranked experts were prominent people in their worlds, therefore, it was rare for them to cooperate with one another. However, once they manage to do so, they would still find it hard to fight without their Domains being a hindrance to the other. Because of this, God-ranked experts had finally thought of a method, and it was to merge the Domains together. When Domains merged, then the owners of those Domains would be able to fight together without causing trouble to their ally.

Naturally, this merging wasn't something that can just be used casually. First, it needed two people who had fairly the same levels of strength. Then, the two people needed to have absolute trust of one another, otherwise, the process would fail.

When the Demon Dragon King saw that Zhao Hai's group were stranded inside the Archer's domain and still didn't use their own,

he immediately knew that Zhao Hai's side were still yet to comprehend their domain. This made the Demon Dragon King happy. As long as Zhao Hai didn't have a Domain, then they can just merge their Domains and lock Zhao Hai inside. Therefore, the Demon Dragon King immediately ordered for the merging of Domains.

The other God-ranked experts didn't delay, they immediately merged one another's Domain. Then slowly, each of their Domains fused and became a huge but unstable Domain.

However, when they used their Domain, Zhao Hai's group had already disappeared from their original place. Zhao Hai knew about Domains before, this was because Bloody War spoke about it.

Since the Demon Realm had God-ranked experts, then they certainly knew how to use a Domain. Zhao Hai just baited them to use it in order to see what a Domain really is.

At this moment, Zhao Hai and the others were sitting inside the Space as they observed the Demon Dragon King's group. Although their Domains looked the same, there were some differences in places. The Archer's domain was a dark mist that seemed to affect gravity. However, this Domain excludes the Archer. This allowed the archer to not only slow the enemy but blind them as well while he has free movement inside it.

The Demon Dragon King's Domain was quite interesting, it was a type of Domain that gives a mental attack. One would fall into an illusion where the Demon Dragon King was your ruler, your god, and that you must submit to him.

The Lich's Domain was a sea of bones. Everything inside it was an endless facade of white skeletal parts. Inside of the Domain were several undead that gets stronger and stronger the more one fights. At the same time, the undead weren't bland fighters, they were also able to learn your techniques and use it against you.

The Knight's Domain was very simple. Inside his Domain one

would feel weak, frightened, bloodthirsty, violent, and all other negative feelings. At the same time, the knight would feel empowered, strong, and invincible. This was a Domain that would reduce someone's abilities to the minimum while the Knight improves to his peak.

The Assassin's Domain was an unusual one. In the Domain was a shattered house that was covered with a black fog. The fog was very poisonous and can hide the Assassin. While inside the Domain, not only would you worry about the attacks from the Assassin, you would also worry about the poison that the fog would constantly give you.

# Chapter 708 – Domain War

---

The reason why Zhao Hai knew all of these was because he had the Space's help. Although his group had entered the Space, the Blood Ghost staff remained outside. This essentially made the Staff akin to a sensor for the Space to use in order to analyze the characteristics of a Domain.

The merging of the Domain caused a change to how they appeared. In that huge field, large houses appeared along with an imperial palace. The whole place seemed to become a city.

In addition to the structures, undead can also be seen walking through the streets of that city, looking like the citizens of the place.

At the same time, dark poisonous mists were billowing right outside the Domain City. This fog caused an increase of both gravity and negative emotions felt by those affected. On the other hand, the undead seem to benefit in all of these things. It was a very unusual sight.

After hearing the analysis of the Space regarding this merged Domain, Zhao Hai's brows couldn't help but wrinkle. He was now thinking of ways to break this huge Domain.

For Zhao Hai, leaving this Domain is very easy, he can just use the Space and teleport out. However, if he wanted to defeat the Demons, then he would need to destroy these Domains first. Otherwise, Zhao Hai's attacks wouldn't have an influence to the Demon Dragon King's group.

What Zhao Hai didn't know was that the Demon Dragon King was also frowning. One must know that merging Domains as well as maintaining it was a huge drain of energy. After the Demon Dragon King's group merged their Domain, they immediately discovered that Zhao Hai had disappeared, this made them extremely confused.



The Domain that God-ranked experts comprehend was a magical field that was just like Zhao Hai's Space. Zhao Hai can understand the changes in his Space, God-ranked experts can do the same on their Domain. The only difference was that Domains needed energy to be activated, while the Space did not. Domains can be used in battles while the Space cannot. And lastly, Domains are small while Zhao Hai's Space was very large.

Because of this, when Demon Dragon King's group attacked Zhao Hai, they were quick to notice Zhao Hai's disappearance. It was clear that Zhao Hai didn't use his own Domain. This made the five people very puzzled.

At this time, the Space suddenly issued a prompt, "Aggressive Spatial region detected. Extracting its properties and adding it into the Space. The host can now use a Spatial region. The characteristics of the region would be the same as the Space."

Zhao Hai gawked, but then a huge amount of information suddenly flooded into his head. He carefully analyzed them and discovered that it was a method to apply his Domain. The Domain was very similar to the Space. It had the Space's environment and Zhao Hai was a god inside it, everything inside it was all up to his whims.

However, this Space wasn't actually a real Domain. It was just a method for Zhao Hai to use the Space in a certain region outside. Zhao Hai can change the terrain outside as well as the environment, it was just like the Space.

This Domain was completely different than the one used by the Demon Dragon King's group. Zhao Hai's Domain doesn't need energy to support it. This was because this Domain completely relied on the Space, it didn't need any input from Zhao Hai. Essentially, rather than being called a Domain, it was more appropriate to call it a projection of the Space.

When he saw this Domain, Zhao Hai couldn't help but laugh. In

this Domain, Zhao Hai was invincible and would have his own laws, nothing from outside can influence it. As long as a God-ranked expert gets trapped inside this Domain, then they wouldn't be able to get out.

Naturally, this Domain needed to surround the enemy first, just like the Space. If the Space wanted to attack a person, then that person needed to be inside the Space. Otherwise, the Space wouldn't be able to attack that person directly.

Other God-ranked Domains might be able to do it since they had their own offensive abilities. However, Zhao Hai's Space had no way to outwardly attack. But on the positive side, Zhao Hai's Domain cannot be destroyed. One could see Zhao Hai's Domain as a meat grinder. It had a layer of iron outside, so you cannot destroy the meat grinder while the meat grinder couldn't hurt you. However, once you enter that meat grinder, then you would no doubt be turned into mincemeat.

Although his Domain had no way to attack outward, Zhao Hai was still quite happy about it. God-ranked experts always worried about their Domains since having one made you a true God-ranked expert. Otherwise, you could only be considered to have a false God-rank.

Since Zhao Hai had his own Domain, then naturally he could use it. Zhao Hai's body came out of the Space as he immediately established his Domain.

A scaled-down version of the Space suddenly appeared around Zhao Hai. This miniature Space looked very much like the beginning stages of the real Space. There were a few fields, some grasslands, a wooden house and a small seedling on the field. However, even this smaller Space was just as big as the merged field of the Demon Dragon King's group.

Zhao Hai immediately moved his Domain to repel the merged Domain of the Demons. In retaliation, a huge pressure went

towards Zhao Hai's Domain, wanting to crush it. However, was Zhao Hai's Space that easy to deal with? At this moment, on the periphery of Zhao Hai's Domain, a seven colored light suddenly flashed. The seven colored light then started to rotate around Zhao Hai's Domain, making the pressure do nothing to Zhao Hai. When the God-ranked Demons saw this, they immediately exerted extra effort in order to squeeze Zhao Hai's Domain out from their merged Domain.

When Zhao Hai's Domain was pushed out of the merged Domain, the merged Domain suddenly formed into a giant skeletal archer. The arrow on the archer's hand had a black mist surrounding it while its bow had a gloomy gas going in and out. The skeletal archer pulled the string on its bow as an arrow quickly flew towards Zhao Hai.

When the misty arrow hit Zhao Hai's Domain, the Domain immediately turned into a whirlpool, absorbing the arrow in the process. While inside his Domain, Zhao Hai's eyes suddenly shone with a joyful expression. This was because when the Domain received the arrow, the Space had issued a prompt, "Attacking method from space type attack received. Host can now use external attacks for his spatial region. The attack method needs to be comprehended voluntarily by the Host."

Although Zhao Hai had no idea what voluntarily comprehended means, he understood that his Domain had now gained an exterior offensive ability.[1] And as for the method itself, Zhao Hai gained an inspiration from what the Demon Dragon King's group just did.

Zhao Hai waved his hand as his Domain slowly changed its shape and became a gigantic Stone Golem. The Stone Golem seem to be made out of transparent rocks. Then the Golem suddenly picked a stone from its own body and threw it towards the opposite Domain.

When met with the attack, the merged Domain suddenly divided into five smaller Domains. These five Domains changed their form

as well. The Archer's Domain turned into an arrow. The Demon Dragon King's Domain became a black dragon. The Lich's Domain turned into a giant skeleton. The Knight's Domain became a lance. And lastly, the Assassin's Domain turned into a clump of dark gas.

Zhao Hai looked carefully at the five Domains. The inside of the Demons' Domain cannot be seen, it was covered by their own forms. On the other hand, Zhao Hai's Domain was transparent, people could clearly see what was happening inside. Even when his Domain had changed its form, it was still transparent. This difference was quite bizarre.

As for the other party, the Demon Dragon King and the Lich's Domains looked very complicated. The Archer, Knight, and Assassin had simpler forms of their Domains. It seems like the Demon Dragon King and the Lich were the more powerful people in the group, making their Domain avatars more complicated. If this was the case, then it meant that a Domain can also develop over time. The stronger the Domain the more complicated its avatar would be. At this point, Zhao Hai was wondering about how these new forms would attack. Will it be just like normal attacks?

It seems like the Demons were keen to confirm Zhao Hai's suspicion, the arrow of the Archer's Domain suddenly attacked Zhao Hai by launching similar arrows towards him in a non-stop barrage.

On the other hand, the Demon Dragon King's black dragon flew in a circle before charging towards Zhao Hai's Domain. In the process of the attack, the black dragon actually spewed a black gas towards Zhao Hai.

The Lich's Domain did quite the same, the skeleton rushed towards Zhao Hai's stone golem. The skeletons arms aiming to puncture through the stone golem's body. The Knight's lance thrust itself while the Assassin's mist disappeared and appeared right beside Zhao Hai's stone golem, intent on weakening it. Just as the mist got in contact with the stone golem, white smoke

suddenly came out, it seems like the gas intends to corrode the stone golem down!

# Chapter 709 – Myriad Transformation

## Domain

---

Before, Zhao Hai thought that his Domain's avatar would only get stuck with his first choice, the Rock Golem. But now, he knew that a Domain can still change. Then Zhao Hai tried to transform his Domain into an archer, which it did. It seems like he can make many transformations to his Domain.

This discovery made Zhao Hai's heart light up. He can now understand what 'voluntarily comprehend' meant. Due to the forms of his Domain being numerous, the Space didn't bother to tell him what they were.

When Zhao Hai saw the attack of the God-ranked Demons, Zhao Hai couldn't help but recognize how strong they were. Their attacks were on a whole different level. Although the Archer, Knight, and Assassin's Domains were weaker than the Demon Dragon King and the Lich, they still couldn't be underestimated. Each one of these Domains were inseparable from the properties of their owners.

Zhao Hai gave a nod before changing his Domain into a revolving sphere, making the Assassin's dark fog unable to melt it. However, the other attacks had already arrived. The first to appear was the Archer's arrows. Although the Arrows looked weak, they were actually extremely fast, akin to a machine gun from Earth. If an average person were to meet this Domain, then there was no doubt that they would be thrown into confusion. However, Zhao Hai didn't care about it too much, he rotated his Domain much faster, throwing the Archer's arrows off to the side, not a single one managed to penetrate the spherical Domain.

On the other hand, the Demon Dragon King's black dragon already spat out its ball of black gas. When this ball hit Zhao Hai's spinning Domain, it actually managed to burn it. It seems like the

rotation alone wasn't enough to repel this burning attack.

At this moment, the Lich's skeleton Domain also arrived with the Knight's lance. Zhao Hai quickly transformed his Domain as it flashed with blue light before becoming a rotating ball of water. The Demon Dragon King's black fireball slowly got extinguished by the water ball. After that, Zhao Hai changed the form of his Domain yet again into a huge fly-swatter, swatting the Lich's skeleton Domain away. Then Zhao Hai's Domain became a hand as it caught the Knight's lance Domain intending to flick it towards the direction of the Demon Dragon King's black dragon. However, the lance had already transformed into a clump of gas, getting away from the grip of Zhao Hai's Domain.

At this time, the Demon Dragon King's black dragon Domain arrived by Zhao Hai's Domain, biting it in the fingers.

It was at this attack that Zhao Hai had truly felt pain for the first time, his chest suddenly experienced a severe sting.

Zhao Hai immediately understood that an attack on the Domain can injure the main body. Although his Domain was a tool to help him out, the one commanding it was still him. Therefore, if the Domain gets attacked, then he would still feel it.

This discovery didn't make Zhao Hai flinch, instead, his hand quickly moved as the big hand transformed into an iron shovel. Then the iron shovel whacked the black dragons' head. This made the black dragon retreat while shaking its head. Even the Demon Dragon King looked like he was made dizzy by the attack.

At this moment, the Lich's Domain was already back as it charged over. This time, it has a huge bone sword in its hand which stabbed towards Zhao Hai's iron shovel.

Zhao Hai just ate an attack from the black dragon, so how could he let himself suffer a second time? The iron shovel immediately turned into a spinning sphere. The Demon Dragon King was shocked by the transformations of Zhao Hai's Domain. In the

beginning, he thought that Zhao Hai didn't have a Domain. Therefore, he decided to use this opportunity to bully him, even kill him if the chance allowed it.

But who knew that Zhao Hai actually had his own Domain. Moreover, this Domain was very formidable, it can actually push five Domains back on its own.

Most importantly, the forms of Zhao Hai's Domain were numerous. Just like Zhao Hai guessed, Domains couldn't be easily transformed. Take the Archer's Domain for example, the Archer's strength can only turn his Domain into the form of an arrow. If he got stronger later on, then the Domain might transform into something that went along with the Archer's experiences. However, it was still impossible for their Domains to have many transformations like Zhao Hai's. This was completely impossible to do, one should know that a Domain can only have two forms, the field form and the avatar form. Zhao Hai's Domain actually had a lot of transformations. Looking at Zhao Hai's Domain, it wasn't strange for the Demon Dragon King to be extremely shaken.

Zhao Hai didn't have the mood to think about these, although he looked very relaxed while dealing with these people, he was actually quite stressed. The Archer's arrows came too quick, although they had been deflected, they were still able to deal some damage. At the same time, the Assassin's attack was also starting to take its toll. The Knight and the Lich's attacks were strong as well. Zhao Hai's chest felt quite stuffed right now, and it was obvious that he had been slightly injured.

But at the same time, the Demon Dragon King's group weren't having it better. Although Zhao Hai's attack wasn't that strong, they still managed to suffer minor wounds, especially the Lich. He flew quite far due to Zhao Hai's fly-swatter. His injury was on the heavier side.

While Zhao Hai's battle had gone very lively, the undead and the Demons weren't idling, with the Demons the ones being pushed



back. Although the Demons were quite strong, they weren't all 9th ranks. Additionally, under Lizzy and Megan's command, the undead formation constantly changed from a concrete solid block into smaller flexible formations, the damage that they had done was quite significant.

The Demons were currently confused regarding these undead. Zhao Hai was currently fighting with the Demon Dragon King's group, so he should be preoccupied with fighting with them and should be unable to take command of the undead. However, why were the undead still able to move like this? It was too strange.

Casualties slowly came from the side of the Demons. However, Lizzy and Megan were still dissatisfied. Although these Demons were being suppressed right now, the number of Demon deaths were still lower than what they expected. And once these Demons knew that they were going to die, they would immediately self-explode, taking a clump of undead along with them.

However, the undead couldn't be disregarded as well. Some low-level Demons didn't even have the chance to self destruct before they were killed immediately. After these Demons were killed, they were quickly absorbed into the Space, transforming them into a member of the undead army.

The explosions that destroyed the undead were generally those from 8th ranks. Low-ranking explosions had zero effect on the undead.

However, even if the undead casualties weren't big, Lizzy and Megan were still dissatisfied. It was because this was their first fight where they managed to lose some of their troops.

Women were usually mean-spirited, once they get angry, then the consequences would be critical. The attacks of the undead suddenly turned more violent. All of them started to suppress the Demons even more.

When the Demon Dragon King saw this situation, he

immediately turned to the Lich and said, “White Ghost, go deal with the undead. Leave this place to us.”

The Lich’s skeleton Domain immediately moved away from the group and headed towards the undead army. When the skeleton turned around, a bone lance appeared in its hand. Then the bone lance was thrown straight towards a undead formation. When the lance clashed with the undead, they didn’t even have the chance to react as all of the undead immediately shattered into pieces.

Although Zhao Hai and the Demons seemed to be playing around in the clashes, but one must know that attacks of a God-ranked expert’s Domain were very strong. And judging by the size of the giant skeleton, one could imagine how large its bone lance was. The lance being able to puncture a dozen undead wouldn’t be an overstatement. At the same time, although the lance looked like it was made out of bone, it was actually made out of pure energy, its offensive ability was very formidable.

When Zhao Hai saw the Lich’s attack, he immediately had Berry and Shue appear right beside the Domain. Although they had yet to comprehend a Domain, they were still God-ranked, they can certainly suppress the Lich.

When Berry appeared, she immediately shouted as the hair on her head wrapped around the arm of the skeleton Domain. At the same time, Shue took out a big axe. One shouldn’t underestimate this axe. Zhao Hai had this axe made from the Processing Machine. Although it cannot be a Divine Artifact, the axe was still quite a formidable weapon.

With his axe pulled out, Shue shouted as he swung his axe even while being ten meters away from the Domain. However, distance didn’t matter because as Shue swung his axe, a projection suddenly appeared that cut down towards the skeleton Domain. The Lich issued a scream, it seemed to have been hurt. Then the Lich’s skeleton Domain stretched its other arm out as a lance appeared once more, aiming to stab towards Shue.

# Chapter 710 – Captured

---

Although Shue's movement was simple, his actions were very quick. In a flash, another Shue appeared right by his side as their figure moved and went towards different directions to flee.

The Lich didn't expect Shue to have this move. While he was stunned, one Shue disappeared as another one appeared bearing an axe as it chopped once more towards the Lich's Domain.

Although Shue's two attacks weren't able to break the Lich's Domain, it still managed to damage the Lich. At the same time, Berry's hair attack wasn't that simple. Her soul attacks used her hair as a conduit, her attacks had already made a name for itself in the Demon Realm. Although Berry was yet to comprehend a Domain, her soul attacks couldn't be underestimated, it was God-ranked after all.

A God-rank that had comprehended a Domain was much stronger than one who hadn't, however, this statement had its limits. As for the Lich, he could easily deal with Berry and Shue if he was in his peak form. But now, in addition to him not being in his peak, he was also injured by Zhao Hai. At this point, it would be impossible for him to easily deal with Berry and Shue.

Moreover, Shue and Berry were different from Zhao Hai. In the past, Zhao Hai exclusively fought using his own undead, making his close combat abilities quite poor. On the other hand, before becoming a God-rank expert, Shue was a mercenary assassin. Nobody knew how much fighting Shue had in his life but one could be assured that his fighting experience was rich. While being a mercenary, he was even known to kill people who were a rank higher than him. Now, although he hasn't comprehended a Domain yet, him and the Lich were of the same level. With his experience, Shue should be able to clash with the Lich quite comfortably.

There was nothing else to say about Berry, she was born in the Demon Realm. No matter which race, all of the Demons in the Demon realm grew up fighting. This made Berry's fighting experiences quite ample. Her only downside was her lack of a Domain since she just managed to become God-ranked.

From the very beginning, the Lich had truly underestimated the attack from Berry and Shue. In his opinion, these two who didn't have a Domain wouldn't be able to launch strong attacks. However, the Lich managed to make a mistake. He forgot that they had also underestimated Zhao Hai, assuming that he wasn't able to establish his Domain, injuring the Lich in the process.

Berry's hair continued to entangle the Lich's skeleton Domain, attacking him with a constant barrage of soul attacks. Although these attacks weren't able to injure the Lich, it was still enough to cause a headache.

The Lich were generally immune to physical attacks, especially after they reach God-rank. However, the Lich's most feared attack were the ones who target their soul. These kinds of attacks do heavy damage to the Lich Race. Although the Lich had his Domain to protect him, the other party's attacks still managed to influence his mind. The skeleton Domain was now more unstable compared to when it battled with Zhao Hai.

When the Demon Dragon King saw this situation, he immediately gave a command, "Shiying, go help White Ghost. Deal with those two as soon as possible." The Assassin gave a nod before he threw himself towards the Lich.

Zhao Hai looked at the departing Shiying as his complexion turned ugly. He looked towards the Demon Dragon King as he muttered, "You had truly forced me." Then he waved his hand as a spatial rift appeared in front of the Assassin. A vine suddenly came out of that rift and entangled the Assassin's Domain. Then the vine retreated, pulling the Assassin's Domain towards the Space.

The Assassin became surprised. It was impossible for him to know about the Space, so naturally he wouldn't dare to go in. He tried to break free from the vine but found out that he couldn't. This made him even more surprised, his Domain couldn't actually free itself from this vine. The Assassin gnashed his teeth as he forcefully retrieved his Domain. When he saw that the vines didn't do anything, he quickly drew back

However, just as the Assassin was retreating, a enormous whale suddenly appeared in front of him, swallowing him up. The Assassin noticed that the whale was actually transparent, and its interior had grasses, flowers, plants, and even a hut. More importantly, Zhao Hai was present as well!

The Assassin was startled, then he discovered that he had been absorbed into Zhao Hai's Domain. The Assassin immediately established his Domain, but discovered that he couldn't. He couldn't even command his body properly. It seems like he had become helpless inside this Space.

While Zhao Hai captured the Assassin, he was also enduring full-on attacks from the Demon Dragon King, the Knight, and the Archer. Zhao Hai coughed up some blood, this time he was truly injured.

Zhao Hai became anxious when he saw the Demon Dragon King command the Assassin to help the Lich. He knew that Berry and Shue already had their hands full in suppressing the Lich, the addition of the Assassin wouldn't be great for their situation. Because of this, Zhao Hai didn't have any other choice but to have Cai'er make a move.

Cai'er was a card that Zhao Hai kept in secret, he didn't want to use her quite easily. Cai'er's strength surpassed ordinary God-ranks. This was the reason why the Assassin wasn't able to move when being entangled by her vine.

Zhao Hai had also thought that the Assassin would let go of his

Domain and escape. Therefore, he waited for the Assassin to do so. As soon as the Assassin managed to escape, Zhao Hai didn't pay any attention to the oncoming attacks and just took the Assassin into his Domain.

Outward attacks of Zhao Hai's Domain weren't very formidable, however, its internal attacks were incomparably strong. As long as a God-ranked enters his Domain, then Zhao Hai can do whatever he wants to him. There were different laws inside Zhao Hai's Domain, and the strength of these laws were very strong, God-ranked experts are simply helpless against it.

The reason Zhao Hai deemed it necessary to capture the Assassin was because he wanted to hide Cai'er's strength. Since he wanted to keep her as a secret, then it was natural that he wouldn't have to let the Assassin escape and tell the Demon Dragon King about how strong Cai'er was.

Fortunately, when Cai'er took action, she didn't show her characteristics of being a Seven colored flower. The vine that came out looked just like any ordinary vine. It would be troublesome if the Demon Dragon King were to recognize her.

Since Zhao Hai neglected the attacks, then it was no wonder that he was injured. After all, his Domain wasn't the true Space where even if he can't control it, Cai'er was still there to take charge. Zhao Hai didn't dare to drag things further as him and his Domain suddenly vanished. Berry and Shue, who were suppressing the Lich, disappeared as well. The undead who were fighting the Demons were also withdrawn.

Besides the Demon Dragon King's group and the Demons, there weren't anybody else in the battlefield. The magic that the Demon Dragon King was currently preparing was left with no target to cast on.

The Demon Dragon King's heart immediately constricted as he gave a shout, "Be careful!". Then he turned his head towards the

direction of Demon City. He knew that Zhao Hai was injured, and if Zhao Hai were to return to the city, then a commotion would surely rise up.

When he turned his head, he saw Zhao Hai appearing in a place about a kilometer away from them. He currently stood on top of his Bone Dragon with his undead army behind him. Berry and Shue were also with him on the Bone Dragon.

Zhao Hai's complexion was calm, one wouldn't be able to find out that he was injured. The Demon Dragon King became even more alert. He withdrew his Domain as he stared at Zhao Hai. The Lich and the others have also arrived by the Demon Dragon King's side.

Zhao Hai looked at the four God-ranked Demons and smiled faintly. Then he gave a small bow to the Demon Dragon King and said, "I managed to get good lessons from the Demon Dragon King. To be honest, I've lost quite a bit this time. If there's an opportunity, then I will definitely ask for more advice from the Demon Dragon King's group. However, today, I must say my farewells." Then Zhao Hai made his Bone Dragon turn and head towards Demon City. The undead army following behind him.

The nearby Archer looked at the Demon Dragon King and said, "Why haven't we made pursuit? Are you afraid?"

The Demon Dragon King turned to look at the Archer and said, "Herd, do you have the confidence to stop him? Do you think our group of four is enough to hold him down? Don't forget, although those two people on his side weren't able to establish a Domain, their fighting strengths were still very good, even enough to tie one of us down. And did you see those vines that managed to capture Shiying? If those vines weren't anything special, then Shiying wouldn't have given up on his own Domain. That thing can hold another one of us back. Do you think that two people is enough to suppress Zhao Hai?"

Herd didn't speak, he knew that the Demon Dragon King was telling the truth. Zhao Hai had already shown his exceptional strength. He managed to block four people and suppress three, it was almost impossible for their side to kill Zhao Hai. And Zhao Hai just captured Shiyang, the Demon side had truly suffered a blow. Although Zhao Hai has been injured, do they still have the confidence to tie him down? It was completely impossible to do so.

At this moment, the Knight's voice was heard, "What do we do now?" The Demon Dragon King replied, "Iron Claw, you go return to the Demon Realm and report all that happened to the Great Demon King. Ask for a few more people to be sent here. Shiyang's strength isn't that much different from all of us, yet he was still captured. Things just became dangerous for our side. We need more people to keep the security of the city so that we can establish a foothold on the Ark Continent."



# Chapter 711 – Strengthened

---

Iron Claw gave a nod before he went towards the spatial rift. The Lich and the Archer didn't speak, they were aware that the Demon Dragon King was telling the truth. Even if Zhao Hai was injured, he still had a lot of cards in hand. They weren't even sure if Zhao Hai had a method to recover quickly. If Zhao Hai did, then with his strength as well as his strange helper, the Demons' troubles would surely be big.

Also, for them and the Demon Dragon King, protecting the city was a much more important task. Therefore, before their city gets finished, they still wouldn't go and attack Zhao Hai.

In fact, the Demon Realm intended to attack Zhao Hai in turns. God-ranks were unable to stay in the Ark Continent for too long. And since the Demon Realm's experts were numerous, they were planning to have them go to the Ark Continent in turns. They believed that with such a plan, the Ark Continent wouldn't be able to hold on.

The Demon Dragon King's group were one of the most famed experts in the Demon Realm, thus the reason why they were the ones to who were sent to the Demonic Abyss first. The Demons believed that with them in the vanguard, then there wouldn't be any problems that would derail their plan.

However, they had underestimated Zhao Hai as well as his Space. They didn't think that the Ark Continent would produce three God-ranked experts in such a short time. Most importantly, they didn't expect that Zhao Hai was able to comprehend a Domain, and a formidable Domain at that.

And because they underestimated Zhao Hai, they lost big. It was then that the Demon Dragon King discovered that their current group weren't enough to keep the city safe. Therefore, he decided to ask for reinforcements from the Demon Realm. For the Demon

Race, asking for reinforcements was something that was extremely rare. However, the Demon Dragon King still did it, this city was just too important for the Demons.

Zhao Hai was healing himself up inside the Space. This was the first time that Zhao Hai had been injured after all his fights. He couldn't help but recognize how strong those Demon God-ranks were.

Although Zhao Hai has his crystal body, he was using his Domain in this fight. Because of this, the damage to Zhao Hai was more spiritual than physical. This was the reason why the crystal body was unable to block the Demon attack.

To be honest, this was also due to the fact that Zhao Hai was still unskilled in using his Domain. He can actually use his divergent abilities with his Domain. However, he has not done it yet because it wasn't an easy task to use divergent abilities with a Domain. However, as long as he succeeds in doing so, he would definitely be more powerful.

Among the many fights that Zhao Hai did, this was the first time that he had suffered such a heavy wound. However, Zhao Hai was not too worried about it. The Space had a lot of methods to cure wounds, among them were the Spatial Water and the God's Blood.

However, Zhao Hai also managed to discover that another place actually had a good healing effect, it was the Hot Spring. It could actually make him recover, and the effect was no weaker than the Spatial Water and God's Blood.

Although Zhao Hai's wound was quite heavy, it was actually just a damage on his soul. Such wound might be troublesome to others, but to Zhao Hai, he really doesn't need to worry too much about it.

Even if the Space didn't have the experience of curing damage to the soul, one shouldn't forget that Zhao Hai's side had an expert on spiritual force, Berry.

The Succubus race relied purely on spiritual attacks in order to confront the enemy. Their mental attacks were the most powerful among the Demons. Therefore, Berry was quite experienced when it came to treating these kinds of damages. Moreover, Berry had a method of curing such wounds. So when Berry discovered that Zhao Hai suffered an attack on his soul, she immediately imparted the method over to Zhao Hai.

But who would've thought that when Berry passed the method over, the Space suddenly issued a prompt, "Host obtained soul cultivation manual, Advanced level. Host's spiritual force has been strengthened. Resistance to spiritual attacks increased."

Zhao Hai blankly stared while listening to the prompt. He didn't think that he would be gaining a soul cultivation method. Moreover, the Space had actually strengthened his spiritual force as well as his resistance to attacks on the soul. This was too astonishing.

All of these happened after Zhao Hai returned to Demon City. Before this, Zhao Hai appeared in front of the people of Demon City. He rode on top of his Bone Dragon as his undead were right behind him.

Zhao Hai did this in order to give confidence to the people of Demon City. He cannot have them think that he was injured since morale was too important to Demon City.

It was great that Zhao Hai's wound cannot be seen by the naked eye. Because of this, the people of Demon City were completely unaware. The only thing they witnessed was Zhao Hai's battle with the other God-ranked Demons.

After all, the Domains were very large and they were fighting mid-air. Even if they were far away, the people in Demon City can still see them. They saw Zhao Hai manage to fend off five attackers. And although they didn't see Shiyang being captured, they were still able to witness Zhao Hai retreating safely. Now that

he had appeared in the city, it was no wonder that he was greeted with huge cheers.

After appearing in the city, Zhao Hai told the guards to stay put once more before entering his Bone Dragon to recover. He wasn't even expecting that because of his relationship with Berry, he was able to acquire a soul cultivation method.

Zhao Hai had now recovered to his normal state, which made Laura and the others relaxed. When then they saw Zhao Hai spurt out blood, all of them had been worried to death.

After seeing that Zhao Hai was doing well, Laura then pointed towards the corner of the room, where the entangled Shiying was placed. Shiying was already sober from his bewilderment, he really didn't expect that a God-ranked expert such as him would actually be captured.

When he was pulled into the Space, he intended to go all out fighting. However, he discovered that he was just a small insect in this terrifying place. The other party can just do whatever they want without him being able to resist.

He had witnessed Zhao Hai being healed, as well as the Space issuing a prompt. However, he was still completely clueless about what just happened. However, he knew one thing, the reason why Zhao Hai was able to fight them was due to this Space.

Zhao Hai stood up and walked towards Shiying, he smiled faintly to the Assassin and said, "I must congratulate you. You will be the first God-ranked undead to join my army. How does it feel? Do you feel honored?" Then Zhao Hai waved his hand, allowing Shiying to speak. The Assassin looked coldly at Zhao Hai and said, "The Great Demon King is all-powerful! All of those who offend him will suffer."

Zhao Hai couldn't help but smile towards Shiying and said, "Not necessarily. I know that the Great Demon King is formidable. Although the Demons have been silent for tens of thousands of

years, he still managed to make a plan that shocked not just me, but I believe the Divine Race as well. However, do you really think that he could do anything to me? The Demons have completely underestimated the Ark Continent. I'm afraid that the one who wouldn't get a good ending would be the Demons."

Shiying looked at Zhao Hai, he didn't know what to say. Zhao Hai smiled at him as he made a signal to Cai'er. Without any hesitation, Cai'er twisted Shiying's neck, breaking his spine in the process. Shiying's vitality might be formidable, but it was completely useless in the Space. If Zhao Hai wanted to kill him here, then there was no doubt that he would certainly die.

Shiying quickly died from Cai'er's move. Zhao Hai wasn't polite as he immediately turned the Assassin into an undead.

But Zhao Hai didn't expect that as he turned Shiying into an undead, a prompt was suddenly heard, "Mutant Robot Assassin detected. Copying his abilities and integrating it to all Assassin-class robots in the Space. Space's Assassin robots now has God-rank strength."

Zhao Hai stared, then a huge sense of happiness washed over his entire being. He never expected this outcome. Although he only had a small number of assassin undead, there were still more than 500. For Zhao Hai's side, this development was too significant.

Most importantly, this discovery informed Zhao Hai about the method to turn his undead into God-ranked. When Zhao Hai became God-ranked before, he didn't manage to hear anything about the undead. Zhao Hai even thought that the undead had already reached their peak, unable to advance any further. But there was actually a method to strengthen them. This was a very crucial discovery.

Laura and the others heard about the Space's prompt as well. They weren't expecting this to happen. Zhao Hai laughed in happiness as he turned to Laura and said, "Today is a very good

day. We should celebrate. I think it would be great if we do it in Demon City.” Naturally, the others didn’t oppose to this idea. Zhao Hai smiled faintly as he brought Berry and Shue to appear in Demon City. At this moment, the people inside the city were talking about the recent fight that just happened. When they saw Zhao Hai come out, all of them cheered in one voice.

Zhao Hai looked at all of them and smiled. Then he stood on his Bone Dragon as he made the undead Shiyang appear and told everyone, “I have good news! During the fight with the Demons, we managed to kill a crucial character to the Demon Realm. This is a God-ranked Demon, and now he is a member of my undead army!!”

# Chapter 712 – Unexpected Development, The Divine Race Has Arrived

---

The people in Demon City couldn't help but stare at Zhao Hai. This was a God-ranked expert, a thing that only existed in legend. But now, it actually appeared in front of them, moreover, it has been killed and turned into undead!

But even with how unfathomable this was, all of them still believed in Zhao Hai. In their minds, Zhao Hai's exploits have always been out of the ordinary. Therefore, upon hearing Zhao Hai's announcement, a short dullness was experienced before the entire city blew up in cheers. The celebration was too loud that even the Demon Dragon King was able to hear it.

Upon hearing the cheers, the Demon Dragon King's complexion couldn't help but turn cloudier. He had a faint understanding about what this cheer represented. It seems like Shiying had suffered an unfortunate end.

The Demon Dragon King couldn't help but sigh, he was truly speechless now. Their attack on the Ark Continent didn't turn out as simple as they had thought, in fact, it was actually very difficult.

At this time, the sky in the distance suddenly had a huge change. Blood red radiance was seen coming from the Radiant Empire's direction. Along with this red light, an incomparably huge blood red formation suddenly appeared. The formation seemed to cover the entire Radiant Empire, it slowly rose up as it clashed with the sky.

Zhao Hai's complexion changed as his figure flashed, bringing Berry and Shue back into the Space. Then without saying any words to Laura and the others, he disappeared once more and reappeared in the border between the Buddha Empire and the Radiant Empire. He looked at the misty Radiant Empire in the distance, his expression difficult to describe.

The blood red formation slowly rose as the white mist covering the Radiant Empire slowly vanished. When the mist vanished, Zhao Hai immediately used his Divine Sense to scour the Empire, what he found out made his expression turn extremely sour.

He hasn't visited the Ocean Waves Dynasty before, therefore he wasn't aware of the situation inside. Then afterwards, while the Radiant Church usurped the Empire, he was in another place, unable to divert his attention to there. When he managed to make time, the mist had already covered the entire Empire, even his God-rank Divine Sense was unable to find anything out. In the end, Zhao Hai can only wait and see what would eventually happen.

The Ocean Waves Dynasty was one of the five powerful nations in the Continent. Although their strength wasn't very good, their navies were still invincible. And in fact, the Dynasty was even the richest nation in the entire continent, this was because of their great marine trade.

As a country gets richer, their citizen's moral requirements also increase. This made it rare for men in this country to have several wives. Because of this, the Dynasty population couldn't be compared to the other great nations.

The reason as to why the Dynasty was placed on the same level as the other Empires was because they took their navy very seriously, pumping huge amounts of money in order to gain naval superiority. This allowed them to hold their heads up in front of the other nations, even if their army wasn't that great. It was their naval strength, not their population, that made them great.

When Zhao Hai's Divine Sense swept through the first city of the Empire, he immediately found what was wrong. The whole city was extremely empty. Aside from the people of the Church, the entire city's population have all died.

Everyone, it didn't matter if they were women, children, elderly,



or able bodied men. All of them seemed to be trapped in the city, like magic beasts ripe for slaughter. No living witnesses managed to survive.

The cause of death was also very unusual, all of them turned into a shriveled corpse. Their blood and flesh seemed to have been sucked out, only their skin and bones were left behind.

Under the bodies of these people were traces of a magic formation. It was quite obvious that the Radiant Church had grouped these people up in this place and then killed them, carrying a ceremony similar to sacrificial offering. However, this formation was actually used to make a connection towards the Divine Realm.

Zhao Hai's face turned pale, his eyes spewing out flames of hatred. He didn't expect the Divine Race to be as crazy as the Demons. The Demons used magic beasts in order to activate their Blood Void, however, the Radiant Church actually used living people, the entire population of the Ocean Waves Dynasty as the conduit for their formation!

Shue and the others had also seen this situation, they didn't think that the Radiant Church and the Divine Race would be this merciless. Zhao Hai's expression turned uglier and uglier as time passed by. His chest constantly heaving up and down, and when he couldn't bear it anymore, he suddenly coughed up blood.

Shue looked with great surprise as he supported Zhao Hai, "Young Master, what happened? Young Master, what's wrong?!"

Zhao Hai looked forward as he loudly shouted, "Divine Race! I, Zhao Hai, will surely slaughter all of you!!" Then he flashed into the Space. When he arrived inside, Laura and the others immediately rushed over. At this time the Space suddenly issued a prompt, "Host is undergoing major mental destabilization. Adjusting Host's mental state. The potential of the Host's body has been stimulated. Host's strength has been improved, soul has been

improved.”

However, nobody had the time to care about this. Laura and the others surrounded Zhao Hai, not knowing about what just happened to him.

Zhao Hai looked at the others and then smiled bitterly as he said, “Tell the Patriarchs and Emperors about what just happened. Make the people in Demon City retreat, we’ll proceed to the second step of the plan. Make the eastern and southern parts of the Buddha Empire enter in first level alert. Shue, take me to the Blood Point. Bubble, absorb me and the Blood Pond into your body.”

After Zhao Hai’s command, the people in the Space immediately made their move. Shue quickly took Zhao Hai to the side of the Blood Pond. Then Bubble changed his shape as he absorbed Zhao Hai and the Blood Pond. At this moment, Shiying appeared, carrying a black bead in his hand. He gave the bead to Shue as he said, “These will be useful to the Young Master.” Shue stared, he didn’t think that Shiying would speak at a time like this, he didn’t know what to say.

But Zhao Hai actually gave a nod to Shue, so he didn’t hesitate and threw the beads towards Bubble’s body. Then when the bead hit Bubble, he immediately rotated at fast speeds. Laura and the others can almost feel that the energy of the entire Space has been concentrated towards the Bubble’s body.

After watching Zhao Hai, Laura immediately said, “What are we doing here, we need to act on Brother Hai’s orders. Let the Patriarchs and the Emperors know about the current development, have all of them prepare their strengths since the Divine Race had come.” Although they were still worried about Zhao Hai, they needed to clench their teeth as they turned and went inside the villa. Only Shue and Berry were left to oversee Bubble. Bubble was still spinning, and he was getting faster and faster.

Just as Zhao Hai entered the Space, the huge formation in the

Radiant Empire suddenly rotated. And at the same time, another formation descended from the sky. This formation seemed to have been prepared for a long time. However, it was not blood red, instead, it gave off a white light, giving people a very sacred feeling.

It wasn't only Zhao Hai who managed to notice this formation. The Beastmen could even see faint traces of these two massive formations. They were just too high up and enormous that they seem to rival even the moon in the sky. It was actually difficult to miss it.

The Demon Dragon King stared blankly at the two formations. He didn't know why, but he seemed to dislike these formations, their aura elicited disgust deep inside him.

Then without much thinking, the Demon Dragon King turned to the Archer and said, "Herd, you go and return to the Demon Realm, report this to the Great Demon King. It's possible that the Divine Race had already made their move. Moreover, it seems like it wouldn't bode well for us. Make them prepare for the future. We'll continue to monitor the developments here. If there are instructions, then return here immediately."

Herd didn't dare to neglect this order, he gave a nod as he quickly dashed towards the rift. At this time, the Lich arrived by the Demon Dragon King and said, "Demon Dragon, do you really think that the Divine Race is behind this?"

Demon Dragon nodded, "Correct, you might not know, but His Highness has been sending out many scouts towards the Ark Continent. These scouts were able to discover the Radiant Church as well as their connection to the Divine Race. The reason why the Great Demon King decided to move this time is because he knew that the Divine Race wouldn't be able to arrive soon. He wanted to take control of the continent before the Divine Race even arrives. This is why he sent the five of us here, he knew that we would be fighting with the Divine Race in the future, so it would be useless

to rely on 9th ranks. The Divine Race is very strong. We never expected them to come this soon.”

The Lich looked at the two magic formations and said, “These two formations, have you seen them before?”

The Demon Dragon King shook his head and replied, “I haven’t but it looks like it has the same function as the Blood Void. It seems to have unusual origins as well.”

The Lich nodded, unlike the Humans, who weren’t aware of the Divine Race for a long time, the Demons already knew that the Divine Race existed. Moreover, they were also aware about their methods, this was the reason why the Demon Dragon King was quite worried.

The two formations in the sky slowly approached each other, their rotations going faster and faster. Both of them looked like two enormous stone mills, intent on grinding the skies, moving in opposite directions to each other.

As the two formations got closer, their rotations got faster and faster. Then when they met, a huge explosion was suddenly heard, Heaven and Earth seemed to be have all of its colors removed.

# Chapter 713 – Change of Laws, Beginning of Chaos

---

Along with this deafening sound, the entire Ark Continent was also covered with a white radiance. This light was as bright as the noon sun. Everyone in the continent felt their eyes sting, all of them called out in alarm as they quickly closed their eyes.

The Demon Dragon King's group were shocked at this white light. They were God-ranked experts, therefore, this light had no effect on them. What shocked them was what came along with the white light. A spatial crack appeared in the sky and was getting bigger and bigger. Then suddenly, land can be seen going through the rift. It seems like the land was causing the crack to expand. The tearing continued as the rift became as large as half of the entire Radiant Empire. Then the land slowly descended before it fell and caused a huge bang. This cause the entire Ark Continent to tremble.

At this moment, the Demon Dragon King's expression changed, he turned his head to the Lich and said, "White Ghost, try to feel it. The continent's suppression has vanished."

White Ghost stared, then his expression changed as well, he confirmed, "The suppression had indeed vanished. What is this all about?"

The Demon Dragon King was now quite pale as he replied, "The Divine Race, them and the Radiant Church had worked together to produce these two large magic formations, changing the Ark Continent's Law of Heaven and Earth. Later on, God-ranked experts entering the continent wouldn't be met with suppression anymore. White Ghost, you go back and report this to His Majesty. Ask him to organize all of our God-ranked experts and have them enter the continent. Otherwise, our plans would be placed into danger."

After hearing the Demon Dragon King, the Lich's expression changed, he immediately nodded and then turned around as he flew towards the spatial rift. The Demon Dragon King had a cold look on his face as he muttered, "Good, Divine Race, good job. But the ownership of this land has yet to be decided!"

Then the Demon Dragon King flew over his camp as he looked down at all Demons and said, "Fortify the camp. All 9th ranks for a group of ten each. If a God-rank comes attacking, then don't hesitate to link your souls and self-destruct. There should be no hesitation! Defend the camp to your full capability!"

This was basically a suicide order. However, there wasn't any changes to the expressions of these Demons. All of them nodded and without any pauses, all 9th ranks grouped themselves up into tens. Each group composed on combat squad. All of them were waiting outside the camp, in full anticipation for a fight.

The Demon Dragon King clearly knew that although God-ranked experts can be wounded by exploding 9th ranks, this only applied to those who had yet to comprehend a Domain. As for those God-ranks who had a Domain, 9th rank explosions were completely useless.

However, the strength of linked souls were different. The explosion of ten linked 9th ranks was almost equivalent to a God-ranked expert. The damage should be quite ample. Even if the other party had comprehended a level 2 Domain, he would still be unable to stop this kind of attack.

Zhao Hai's prior guess was correct, Domains were truly divided into levels. As for the levels, there were False Gods, people who just became God-rank and haven't managed to comprehend a Domain yet. Berry and Shue were among these people.

Then there were people like the Archer, Knight, and Assassin. Although they had comprehended a Domain, they weren't very flexible in using them, their Domains were limited when it came to

form. They belong to 1st Level Gods, this was where God-ranks officially reach Godhood.

After that was the level of the Demon Dragon King and the Lich. Their Domains were flexible, and they had many forms to transform into. Their Domains also had an avatar form that can fight by itself. They were called 2nd level Gods, or Highgods.

On the top of all God-ranked experts were Saint Gods. Only a few people can reach this rank. Their strengths were extremely powerful. With one raise of the hand, they can turn Heaven and Earth upside down. When they stamp their feet, mountains move. They were the strongest God-ranks. Even in the Demon Realm, these people were extremely rare. It was said that everyone who managed to reach this level had gone to a mysterious place. Nobody knew where it was, only those who managed to become Saint Gods were able to know.

It was precisely because of the absence of Saint Gods that the top existences in the Demon Realm had become people like the Demon Dragon King, the Highgods. Even the Great Demon King would need to discuss with them whenever he needed something to be done, he simply cannot force them.

But the reason why these people listened to the Great Demon King was due to three things. First, it was because the Great Demon King was a good leader. Second, because the Great Demon King was also a Highgod. Third, and most importantly, only the Great Demon King had the means to contact the Saint Gods. Because of this, nobody dared to challenge the rule of the Great Demon King.

However, even if one was God-ranked in the Demon Realm, he couldn't just easily wage war against any Demon Army. Although God-ranks were indeed powerful, they were still completely susceptible to the soul-linked attacks by the Demons. Once Demons concentrated their strengths, the result was very astonishing.

Moreover, majority of Demons in the Demon realm grew up fighting. This made all of them fearless towards death. Once they were pushed too far back, then they wouldn't hesitate to blow themselves up. Because of this, in addition to strength, God-ranks also need influence in order to get respect. This was the reason why the Demon Dragon King was also the northwest king of the Demon Realm.

The Demon Realm had a certain understanding with regards to the Divine Race. Because of this, after the Demon Dragon King discovered the changes in the laws, he immediately issued a command of self-sacrifice to his men. There were plenty of God-ranked experts in the Divine Realm. The only way to push them back was through the threat of Demonic core explosions.

While he issued his commands, the Demon Dragon King was completely unaware that he was heard by Cai'er. Although Zhao Hai was currently healing inside Bubble while Laura and the others were busying themselves by relaying information to the various Patriarchs and Emperors of the Ark Continent, Cai'er was also listening to the developments in the Continent. Moreover, she had become stricter in her gathering of information.

When the Demon Dragon King said that the laws had changed, Cai'er's expression changed. She knew what this meant for the Ark Continent.

The reason why Zhao Hai was confident in going against the Divine Race and the Demons was because he was relying on the Ark Continent's law. The law that forbade the existence of God-ranked experts. Because of this law, Zhao Hai and the others would be able to become equals with the God-ranked experts. But now that the laws have changed, both Demons and Divines would be able to send out swathes of God-ranks to the Ark Continent without any repercussions. This would diminish the Ark Continent's means to defend itself.

Cai'er immediately relayed this information over to Laura and



the others. When they heard this, all of them couldn't help but stop what they were doing. They weren't expecting the Divine Race to play this big move. Their hand was too great, it was akin to removing a huge advantage of the Ark Continent. At this point, what could the Ark Continent do in order to win?

While they were in shock, Laura being competent woman, managed to calm herself quickly as she said, "Don't be upset. Let's relay this news to the powers of the continent as well. Cai'er, immediately gather all assassin-class undead and see whether some of them are able to use a Domain. Then have them on standby, closely monitoring the movements of both the Demons and the Divine Race. Also, immediately tell the Buddha Emperor to hasten the evacuation, use the Space if possible but make sure that it doesn't get discovered, stick to using the spatial rights and have them sent to the Lyon Empire. Have the Dwarves, Elves, and Beastmen prepare their 9th rank experts as well as their Divine Artifacts, then move them to the Buddha Empire. Inform the Lyon Empire and the Rosen Empire to prepare their experts as well and have them sent to the Buddha Empire. These were the emergency orders that Brother Hai prepared ahead of time."

Among Zhao Hai's wives, one must say that the earliest one was Meg. However, with Meg's disposition, she wasn't fit to become a leader. On the other hand, Laura was Zhao Hai's second and also had the talent to be a leader. This gave her a high status compared to the other wives. Even Lizzy and Megan chose to listen to her. When Zhao Hai healed himself, Laura immediately became the default leader. Her orders were akin to Zhao Hai's own.

The women immediately nodded and started to do their jobs. While telling the powers of the continent, they deliberately hid the fact that Zhao Hai was injured. Instead, they told them that Zhao Hai was currently focused on finding ways to suppress the Demons and the Divines. All of these actions were done in order to keep the morale stable.

At this point, everyone in the continent were aware as to how strong Zhao Hai was. Moreover, the fact that Zhao Hai was God-rank was also relayed to the other powers. The fact that he had killed another God-rank was also relayed. This was to increase morale. But now that the Divine Race had descended, another wave of anxiety had appeared on the continent. If the fact that Zhao Hai being injured was revealed, then the continent would surely fall into chaos.

Laura knew that Zhao Hai was the Ark Continent's sole pillar of hope. Once Zhao Hai falls, the continent would surely fall alongside him. At that time, there would be no army that would have the strength to resist. Nobody would be able to stop the advance of both the Demons and the Divine Race.

# Chapter 714 – Dao Lotus

---

Zhao Hai was lying down on the Blood Pond. To be honest, ever since he came to the Ark Continent, this was the first breakthrough that he had experienced by himself, all other breakthroughs were brought to him by the Space. This time's breakthrough made Zhao Hai sense a qualitative increase to his own strength. However, he didn't feel like he had reached his peak, his strength can still be promoted.

This was the reason why in addition to lying down on the Blood Pond, Zhao Hai decided to be placed inside Bubble's body. The Blood Pond was made out of the blood of a Divine, the energy within it was tyrannical. However, Bubble was a master of water, this allowed him to control how strong the blood's actions was, nourishing Zhao Hai properly in the process.

Zhao Hai wasn't afraid of exhausting the energy in the Blood Pond. The Space had already recorded its energy patterns and could just recreate an endless supply of it in the future.

On the other hand, Zhao Hai wasn't aware that when he turned Shiying into an undead, his wisdom and intelligence was still kept intact. Shiying was a God-ranked assassin, he had a devious wisdom and formidable intellect, but he was now under Zhao Hai's side, because of this, Shiying gave Shue his Demonic Core. He wanted Shue to hand the core over to Zhao Hai to absorb.

Zhao Hdi didn't expect Shiying to do this. He still couldn't understand why Shiying, who had kept his wisdom, would do this. However, he wasn't afraid of of any harm. After all, Shiying was unable to have evil intentions towards Zhao Hai since the Space already suppressed him. Because of this, Zhao Hai agreed to absorb the Demonic Core.

What Zhao Hai thought was correct. Shiying was now an undead, and like what the Space said, he was like robot. A robot

programmed to have perfect loyalty towards Zhao Hai. It was impossible for the undead to betray the Space's host.

Since Zhao Hai wanted to increase his strength, then Shying would naturally be willing to help, making him offer his own Demonic Core.

Now that Shying had been turned into an undead, his energy source has now been shifted to the Space. Because of this, the Demonic Core had become useless.

The energy in the Blood Pond, although formidable, wasn't that abundant in energy. A Demonic Core was different, it was the source of a Demon's entire strength, the reason why they were so strong. Because of this, once the Demonic Core's energy entered Zhao Hai's body, Zhao Hai immediately felt immeasurable pain in his meridians.

Compared to Shue's pain, Zhao Hai's suffering was much more. However, Zhao Hai didn't move, he endured it as he kept lying down inside the Blood Pond, maintaining a peaceful state of mind.

This was the most painful time during Zhao Hai's promotion. However, this was something that he needed to experience. His previous promotions were too smooth, this made his soul unable to catch up. This was the reason why he had been injured during his fight with the Demon Dragon King.

The pain that he was experiencing actually helped in increasing his spiritual force. Now that his body and soul has been upgraded, Zhao Hai was now a more well-rounded powerhouse.

Zhao Hai continued lying down in the Blood Pond, not even aware that he has been wrapped up by a lotus flower that has entered the Blood Pond. This was something that Bubble decided to do. Naturally, this wasn't done in order to harm Zhao Hai. This was because Bubble felt that the lotus flower would have big use to Zhao Hai's current state. Now that Zhao Hai was focused on maintaining his peace of mind, he simply didn't have the capacity

to talk to Bubble. At the same time, Bubble didn't dare to disturb Zhao Hai. Because of this, he made his own decision to absorb the lotus flower into the Blood Pond. Then, with his own strength, refine Zhao Hai along with the lotus flower and the Blood Pond.

Zhao Hai didn't know for how long, but he had started to feel that the energy that was rampaging through his body had become calm. And strangely, it seems like the energy was now following a strange and long journey. This route included all of his meridians, even the one in his forehead.

Zhao Hai gawked, he couldn't help but take a look at what was happening to his body. At his lower navel, a colorful mass has been absorbing energy from the outside. On his chest was a strange lotus pattern with the petals wide open. And on his head was a small projection of Zhao Hai, meditating. This projection had a silver hair that extended into the void, seemingly to no end.

This scene made Zhao Hai blankly stare. Zhao Hai was a fan of novels, and he was clear about what these things were. In China, these spots were called dantian. There was the Lower Dantian(Xià Dāntián), placed below the navel. The Middle Dantian(Zhōng Dāntián), placed at the heart. And lastly the Upper Dantian(Shàng Dāntián), at the forehead between one's two eyes.

Although Zhao Hai knew about these three points from the start, he didn't mind them too much since he was practicing Battle Qi and Magic. He also thought that these three points were just something that was made up by the ancient Chinese. But now, it seems like these weren't useless at all.

Zhao Hai's strength was centered on his Lower Dantian. Moreover, he had discovered that this was where his body's physical strength came from.

Zhao Hai then used his Divine Sense towards his Middle Dantian, where the lotus flower was currently attached. Zhao Hai immediately investigated the lotus flower, this lotus was a treasure

of the Heavens, it wasn't even from the Ark Continent. A lotus seed had fallen down from an unknown space and arrived in the continent. Then the seed was buried deep down as it was nourished by the Continent's energy.

Then after numerous years passed by, in the deep dark sea, the lotus seed suddenly turned into something like a small lake. Then that small lake slowly grew up and after many years, it managed to change its surroundings. The lotus roots continued to extend as it rooted itself on the surrounding rocks. Then when the lotus bloomed, Zhao Hai saw something that was very familiar to him. It was actually the same lotus that he saw from the Soul Sucking Reef!

The roots of this lotus had a ying-yang cross section. It's roots along the rocks and soil formed an eight trigrams pattern, a pattern that was very much in line with the Heavenly Dao. This lotus, in turn, had become the world's most important treasure, the Dao Lotus.

Bubble felt that this lotus would be useful for Zhao Hai, this made him decide to absorb it into his body, accidentally refining it and making it Zhao Hai's Life Treasure. This lotus flower seemed to agree to this arrangement as it didn't make any resistance to the refinement. One could say that the capabilities of this lotus was endless. It's benefit to Zhao Hai couldn't be easily described. Compared to the Divine Artifacts of the Beastmen, Dwarves, and Elves, this Dao Lotus was completely on another level.

Zhao Hai slowly drew his Divine Sense back. When he connected his Divine Sense with the Dao Lotus, he seemed to feel changes to himself, he had felt how mysterious the Heaven and Earth was. It seemed like he was in a state of understanding but also unknowing. But one thing that Zhao Hai knew was the fact that this Dao Lotus had a lot of functions. It can attack the enemy, it can defend, it can trap them, and it can even heal wounds. It was a treasure with tons of other uses.

The reason why this Dao Lotus was this strong was because of its growth. During its germination period up until it was absorbed into the Space, the lotus didn't experience any stresses in its entire life. This caused its roots to go in line with the Heavenly Dao, forming an eight trigrams pattern as well as developing the yin-yang symbol. This made it possible for the lotus to make use of all the five elements.

Having this magical treasure made Zhao Hai extremely happy. But he still continued to use his Divine Sense to scan his Upper Dantian. However, Zhao Hai didn't think that when his Divine Sense entered his upper dantian and scanned the little man, it was immediately sucked into nothingness. Because of this shock, Zhao Hai woke up. At the same time he also understood that this little man was the source of his Divine Sense. However, it seems like the little man's hair had no traces of spiritual force.

When Zhao Hai opened his eye, he discovered that he was still inside Bubble's body, lying down inside the Blood Pond. Therefore, Zhao Hai immediately said, "Bubble, take me out" Bubble's body shook as Zhao Hai exited, the Blood Pool has been restored to its original position as well. Zhao Hai looked at Bubble and said, "Bubble, who told you to place the lotus flower into the Blood Pond?"

Bubble quickly replied, "It was in my own discretion, Young Master. Did Bubble make a mistake? I really don't have an excuse to tell you, I just felt that the lotus would be fruitful in your current state, so I decided to absorb it and place it into the Blood Pond. Did I harm the Young Master?"

Zhao Hai laughed and then hugged Bubble, "No, no, what you did was right. Hahaha. Well done, Bubble, well done. You just made your Young Master very happy!"

At this time, Berry responded, she arrived hastily right beside Zhao Hai and said, "Brother Hai, how are you? Are you doing fine?" Shue also came over, looking eagerly at Zhao Hai.

Zhao Hai laughed and said, “I’m alright, not only alright, my strength has been improved as well. Hahahaha. I’ve made you all worried. Right, Berry, how long was I out?”

Berry quickly replied, “Not that long, only more than a day. But Brother Hai, while you were gone, something happened. The Divine Race had managed to establish two large formations. When they arrived at the Ark Continent, they also changed the laws of the Ark Continent. In the future, God-ranks would no longer be suppressed in the continent.”

Zhao Hai stared for a moment, then he smiled and said, “These Divines are really good. This was surely not planned for a day or two. It seems like they had been on to this plan for a long time. It seems like they are the reason why the Ark Continent hasn’t produced a God-ranked expert in such a long time.”



# Chapter 715 – Universe Grand Dao

---

Zhao Hai already had a faint idea about this aspect. But when he connected with the Dao Lotus and had a feel of the Heavens and the Earth, he was even more convinced about it. And with the report that he had received, he was now quite assured that the reason why there were no God-ranks that had ascended from the continent after all this time was because of an interference done by the Divine Race.

Zhao Hai knew that changing the Laws was very difficult. What is a law? Actually, it was a type of projection of the Dao. And this Dao was separated into Yin and Yang. If the things that are normal to the Ark Continent were Yang, then those suppressed by it were the Yin.

A combination of Yin and Yang becomes a plane. And the reason why this plane existed was because of the Dao. Now that the Divine Race had broken the Laws of the Continent, the entire plane where the continent resides has become unstable. This time, not only did the Divine Race break the laws of the Ark Continent, it also broke the laws of many other planes.

The universe is comprised of multiple planes. And the reason that these planes exist and was able to act independently was also because of the universe. Now that the balance of the Ark Continent has been broken, then it was akin to breaking a part of the universe. As for what influence this action did, Zhao Hai had no way to know. However, he can be assured that the effects wouldn't be small.

If the universe is composed of countless planes, then each plane would be like a domino that made up the universe. As long as it stood there and wasn't moved, then there wouldn't be any influence towards the other pieces. But once one domino fell, then all others next to it would definitely be affected as well. No matter how long or what effects it had, there will be events that would

happen as a reaction.

However, Zhao Hai believed that the Universal Grand Dao has a way to repair itself. Just like how the Ark Continent had been punctured by the Demons and the Divine Race, in the end, it still managed to keep the continent's space intact.

Zhao Hai also believed that there was an avenue for the Universe to adjust. The Universe is all about balance, yin and yang. If the Ark Continent were to be destroyed, then another place somewhere would be affected in order to balance everything out.

However, Zhao Hai had no idea how long this adjustment would occur. And as to the changes that would happen in the Ark Continent, it was difficult to say.

Because of this Grand Dao, it was very difficult to change the laws of a plane. The Divine Race needed to prepare for tens of thousands of years. And if nobody from the Ark Continent were to ascend during that time, then their job would be much easier.

After all, compared to the Ark Continent, the Divine Realm's strength is leagues higher. They can definitely make a seal to inhibit the ascent of God-ranks from the Ark Continent. Setting wide-scale formations was easier done in the Ark Continent compared to the Divine Realm.

At this moment, Zhao Hai had an idea. He immediately convened all the 9th ranks in the Space. The majority of these 9th ranks were from the Carrion Swamp, there was also Origin Sword Saint who was invited by Zhao Hai. These people were among the oldest 9th ranks in existence. Zhao Hai had seen how strong they were. However, after all these years, they were still unable to reach the next step, this made Zhao Hai quite confused.

But now, he knew that this was a plot done by the Divine Realm. If this was really it, then it may be possible for these people to break into God-rank after going back to the continent.

These 9th ranks have trained inside Zhao Hai's Space for a long time. Although their strengths were increased, they were still yet to upgrade into God-rank. Zhao Hai wanted to try having them go back to the Continent and see whether they can be promoted to God-rank.

When these 9th ranks heard Zhao Hai's idea, all of them immediately agreed since. After all, aside from the Origin Sword Saint, all of these people were Zhao Hai's subordinate. At the same time, the Origin Sword Saint had been training for a long time, he knew that he wouldn't live for long if he wasn't able to break through to God-rank, therefore, he also agreed to the idea.

To these 9th ranks, their biggest wish was to reach God-rank. Only then can they have greater strength as well as longer lifespans.

Zhao Hai didn't have them exit directly to the battlefield. Instead, he had them go to the Black Wasteland first. In any case, the laws present there was the same as anywhere else in the continent.

After sending these people off, Zhao Hai immediately returned to the living room. He was inside Bubble's body for more than a day, so he was clueless about what was currently happening outside. The only thing he knew about was the change in the Ark Continent's laws. The reason why Zhao Hai was anxious to let the 9th ranks out was because he was eager to have them break through, only then would their strengths be improved.

When Zhao Hai entered the room, he saw Laura and the others being busy. Everyone looked thin and pale. When they saw Zhao Hai come, they immediately stopped what they were doing and came over. Zhao Hai looked at their faces and said, "Why do all of you look fatigued? Why are you still busy? What is going on outside?"

Laura, with dark circles under her eyes, forced a smile and said,

“We’re fine. But Brother Hai, how about you? Are you doing well?”

Zhao Hai smiled faintly and said, “Rest assured, I’m already fine. If the outside situation isn’t that bad, then you should go and take a rest. You’ve been going at it for two days.”

Laura nodded and said, “Everything is almost done, large thanks to Cai’er. Brother Hai, the defenders in Demon City have already retreated. At this moment, the Demons have gone into full defense. So we decided to move the army, there was no longer any significance in having them defend Demon City anymore. Also, we’ve already had the various armies enter the Buddha Empire. All of the refugees in the Buddha Empire are gone as well, we used spatial rifts to have them moved quickly. Now, the Buddha Empire is already going according to your plan. It has been turned into huge battlefield.”

Zhao Hai nodded, “That’s good. At this moment, we have more than 500 God-ranked experts. And I already had Little Wen and Origin Sword Saint’s group exit the Space. Now that the laws of the Ark Continent has been changed, I want to see if there are some of them that are able to break through to God-rank. All of them are locals of the Ark Continent and still haven’t broken through even while inside the Space. I think that their cultivation is still not compatible with the Space. So I might as well have them break through their cultivation outside.”

Laura nodded, then she quickly replied, “Although they had their strengths improved inside the Space, they were still yet to break through. It’s a good idea to have them go out and try breaking through. At this moment, there aren’t any further movements coming from the Divine Race. I don’t know what they are planning to do.” Zhao Hai nodded, “Tell me everything that happened.”

Laura replied, “Brother Hai, take a look.” Then Laura turned her head to Cai’er and said, “Cai’er, let Brother Hai see the recording.”

Cai’er nodded, then she played the scene of the two huge magic

formation as well as the spatial rift caused by the descending piece of land. After that, a video of the conversation between the Demon Dragon King and the Lich was shown.

Zhao Hai calmly looked at the monitor until everything was finished. Then he had Cai'er show the map of the continent. At this time, there were a dense group of red dots on the Buddha Empire. Zhao Hai nodded and said, "I didn't think that there would be this much diversity in the continent's army."

Lizzy nodded as she said, "The current army of Demon City has fallen back to Rising Sun City. Rising Sun City, Lower Bank City, South Plain City, Water Wheel City, Broad Flat City have coordinated with themselves and had become one defensive line. Aside from the army in Demon City, there were also 200 thousand soldiers from the Buddha Empire, 50 thousand Beast Knights and 100 thousand infantry from the Lyon Empire, 50 thousand heavy infantry and 150 thousand normal infantry from the Rosen Empire, 200 Mages and 5000 archers from the Elves, and 50 thousand soldiers from the Dwarves. Altogether, there are more than 1 million troops separated amongst those five cities."

Zhao Hai nodded, Rising Sun City was yet another fortress not far from Demon City. The walls of this city were quite thick. Moreover, its infrastructure was very well developed. Establishing a defense in this City would be a very good idea. It had good strategic placement. Just like in Demon City, Rising Sun City would be a good place to besiege.

Then Lizzy added, "Then Ashi river's east bank has become another line of defense. There are two hundred channels connected to this river. Another 1.5 million troops are present here. Their main purpose is to either reinforce Rising Sun City and the other cities or aid them in their retreat."

Zhao Hai nodded, Ashi river is the Buddha Empire's second major river. It's main and side branches stretched through almost the entire Buddha Empire. With the help of Zhao Hai's Space, the

river had now been turned into a defensive line.

Lizzy continued, “Then there’s Hard Fang City, White City, Upper Bank City, White Oyster City, Golden Crown City, Ox City, and other cities close to them who made up the bulk of the Buddha Empire’s defense. A total of 3 million troops are present on these places, 1 million Beastmen, 1 million Humans, 500 thousand Dwarves, 100 thousand Elves, and 400 thousand Fishmen who are in the surrounding rivers. Moreover, there are also troops present in the Imperial Capital.”

## Chapter 716 – Rising Sun City

---

When he heard Lizzy's answer, Zhao Hai gave a satisfied nod and said, "Good, good. These defensive lines wouldn't only help in dealing with the Demons, it will also help with resisting the Divine Race as well. Also, we should consider a path of retreat. If we turtle up in the Buddha Empire for too long, the Demons and Divine Race might join up to deal with us. On the other hand, if we are able to give up some areas of the Empire, then it might become a battlefield between the Demons and the Divine Race. Make sure that there aren't too much supplies on those defensive lines. It wouldn't be easy to get those excess materials during a mass retreat."

Lizzy and the others nodded, then Zhao Hai looked at their faces and said, "Now that everything has been arranged, you should go and rest. I'll use this time to show my face to the masses, otherwise, my absence might cause some panic."

Lizzy and the others nodded, then Laura looked at Zhao Hai and said, "Brother Hai, you should be careful. You're very crucial to the survival of the continent. We'll definitely lose this war if you fall."

Zhao Hai smiled faintly and said, "Rest assured, I won't die that easily. In fact, my disappearance has nothing to do with me being injured, I broke through. Since I needed a lot of energy, I decided to go inside Bubble and absorb the energy inside the Blood Pool. Moreover, Shiyang gave me his Demonic Core, supplementing my energy. At the same time, the lotus has been placed in the Blood Pond as well. Now, the lotus has become my Life Treasure. At this point, even if the Demon Dragon King's group gangs up on me, I still wouldn't be in any danger. So you don't need to worry." When Laura and the others heard this, they let out a sigh of relief. They were afraid that Zhao Hai had encountered a heavy injury. If that were to happen, then the impact on the continent would be great.

Laura and the others' worries about Zhao Hai were without no reason. If Zhao Hai was really hurt, then his Space wouldn't be used. And if there was no Space, then the transfer of both troops and supplies would be very difficult. Most importantly, without the Space, the powerful undead wouldn't be used. This will leave the defense of the Ark Continent to the various native powers. For these people to go against the Demons and the Divine Race would be a disaster for the entire continent. Zhao Hai looked at their expression and said, "It's fine, there's no need to worry about me. Just go and take a rest. I'll go have a look outside, I'll take care of the unfinished work. Cai'er is still here as well. Cai'er, I'll have to trouble you."

Cai'er smiled and said, "Young Master is too polite. I also have some control over the Space. Moreover, I really don't need to take a rest. Young Master can rest assured that I shall arrange everything."

Zhao Hai nodded, then he turned to look at Laura and the others and said, "Well, you heard it. Go and take a good rest. Shue, Berry, you two go take a rest as well. The recent days have been too hard on you."

Berry smiled and said, "I'm fine, Brother Hai. I'll be coming along with you. I'm a God-rank expert as well, I don't need to rest."

Zhao Hai looked at Berry and then nodded, "Alright, then you and Shue go with me. You also need to undergo some fights before comprehending your own Domains." Then Zhao Hai's body disappeared along with Berry and Shue. Zhao Hai appeared in Demon City first, he wanted to see the situation there before heading towards Rising Sun city.

At this time, there weren't any people in Demon City, everyone has retreated, leaving an empty city behind. Zhao Hai looked at the state of the city and couldn't help but sigh. The present Demon City looked like a ghost town, not a single sound can be heard



inside it. The ground was also filled with junk, making it look bleak. But on the bright side, there weren't any deaths here because of a fight.

Shue also looked at Demon City and felt quite awkward. Just yesterday, this place was filled with people. Now, there wasn't anyone in this place. The mercenaries and adventurers here had no choice but to give up their homes, it was a bit sad to think about.

Zhao Hai flew above Demon City and looked at the Demon camp in the distance. The Demons were still busy right now. It seems like they weren't planning to stop building their city. Zhao Hai can even feel ten God-ranked aura emanating from their camp.

Zhao Hai sighed and said, "It looks like the Demons are catching up. But this is also good. The stronger they look, the more attention they would attract from the Divine Race. Let's go and take a look at Rising Sun City. I'll leave some God-ranked undead there before heading towards the Radiant Empire to take a look why the Divine Race are still yet to take action . After all, they just made a huge move."

After saying that, Zhao Hai used the Space to immediately teleport to Rising Sun City. Rising Sun City was the closest place to Demon City. The distance between Rising Sun City and Demon City was only five small towns. Because of this, Rising Sun City was considered to be the second stronghold after Demon City.

Rising Sun City was quite a big place. It's original population was about 1 million. At this time, it has become part of the defensive line. On the five towns between Demon City and Rising Sun City, other than mounted scouts, not a single person can be seen.

Besmir and the others had already used the spatial rift in order to fall back to Rising Sun City. When they obtained Zhao Hai's order to retreat but didn't see him, they became immediately worried.

It wasn't only Besmir's group who was worried. The people in Rising Sun City shared the same sentiment as well. Although Zhao

Hai provided a spatial rift for transport, his absence made a lot of people very bothered.

Zhao Hai might have given the order for retreat, but the one who delivered it was actually an undead that was under his command. This wasn't Zhao Hai's usual actions, so it was not strange that people were quite anxious about the situation.

Everyone who retreated from Demon City were very worried. But fortunately, their hearts were still stable. In any case, Zhao Hai's spatial rift have proven that he was still around. Maybe the reason for his absence was him being tied up someplace else.

Zhao Hai didn't ride his Bone Dragon this time, instead, he just straight up appeared inside the city. When Zhao Hai came out, he was immediately spotted by some Elven Archers, who couldn't help but cheer out loud.

Although these Elves were arrogant, they weren't fools. When they saw Zhao Hai's fight with the Demons, they immediately became aware of how strong he was. They also understood that without Zhao Hai, defending against the Demons would be impossible. Zhao Hai glanced at the people inside Rising Sun City. There were nearly 500 thousand people in the city, most of them were from Demon City. This made Zhao Hai feel relief. Then he turned his gaze towards the defenders on the walls and nodded as he waved his hand and summoned his undead outside the city.

This produced another round of cheers. These people couldn't help but feel at ease upon seeing Zhao Hai. Normally, seeing undead would make them feel disgusted, but now, it seems like these undead had become much more lovable.

Zhao Hai flew down towards a nearby Dwarf and then smiled, "Brother, can you take me to the General's residence? I have some matters to discuss."

The Dwarf immediately replied, "Of course, Elder, come with me." Then the Dwarf's two small feet quickly led Zhao Hai towards

the residence. Zhao Hai couldn't help but smile at this scene as he led Shue and Berry forward.

It didn't take too long before they arrived in Rising Sun City's City Lord Mansion. The City Lord's Mansion has now become the General's residence, Besmir and the others were here. The one with the highest authority in the City was now Besmir along with the Captains of the reinforcing armies. But since their numbers weren't much, Besmir still held a higher command.

When Zhao Hai arrived at the General's residence, the guards at the gates immediately gave him a salute. Then one of them ran into the mansion without even saying anything, telling the people inside that "Mister Zhao Hai has come". Zhao Hai was amused at the man, then he turned to the Dwarf that led him and then said, "Thank you brother. Here's take this as gratitude." Then he gave the Dwarf a bottle of his distilled milk wine.

The Dwarf was ecstatic at the gift, he immediately bowed to Zhao Hai and said, "Thank you very much, Elder Zhao Hai." Then he turned around and ran. From his expression, it seems like he was eager to show off to his companions. Zhao Hai didn't care much about it as he turned and walked into the General's residence.

Just as he entered the mansion's gate, he immediately saw Besmir, Julian, Gellar, and Barres along with several Human soldiers. The soldiers were all looking at Zhao Hai with curiosity.

Besmir led the others forward to greet Zhao Hai before giving a salute and said, "Mister, welcome back. Please follow us inside."

Zhao Hai smiled faintly and said, "Alright, then I'll be impolite. By the way, how are things going on here?"

Besmir quickly replied, "Mister, everything has been completely prepared. Not only here, the others cities have settled down as well." Zhao Hai nodded. Then he followed the group into the mansion. The battle room was much larger than the one back in Demon City. Not only were there more maps present here, there

were even some soldiers doing logistics as well as a sand table in the middle of the room.

Zhao Hai inspected the room and gave a satisfied nod and said, “This is a great room. This looks more like a battle room compared to the one in Demon City. Right, tell me the arrangements.” Then he went towards the sand table.

Besmir and the others arrived by the table as well. Besmir beckoned to the sand table and said, “Because of the short time, I can only make this simple sand table. Along with Rising Sun City, the other cities already has troops stationed inside as well as some mobile cavalry and scouts. In order to make the battle and retreat more convenient, we asked our Dwarf brothers to dig tunnels between the cities. However, since the workload is too much, there aren’t much results yet. I believe that after Rising Sun City gets connected to the other cities, then we can act more united compared to now. Retreat and reinforcements would be carried out through those tunnels, making transport a lot less troublesome.”

# Chapter 717 – Divine Artifact

---

Zhao Hai nodded and said, “That’s a good method. But it’s extremely time consuming. How about this, I’ll try to discuss with the Emperors of the continent and see if they can lend some Earth Mages to help with the operation. However, since the Dwarves are still the experts in digging, Earth Mages would be placed under their command. Julian, you must link the cities as soon as possible. After that, start to link them to the other small towns as well. This will make our battles more diverse. Remember to make as much interconnected tunnels as possible. The Demons have their methods, they may cause some collapse on the tunnels.”

Julian nodded and said, “Rest assured, I’ve already made plans about that. I had the tunnels dug very deep so that general spells wouldn’t be able to destroy it. Tunnels are our expertise, so you don’t need to worry about this matter.”

Zhao Hai smiled faintly and said, “Alright, then I’ll place my trust on the ability of the Dwarves. I’ll be heading towards the Radiant Empire later to see the situation there. I’ll leave some undead here in the meantime. Don’t worry, even if they send God-ranks, they won’t be able to deal with me. Moreover, I’ve also taken a look at the Demon camp. They have focused on building their city, so they won’t be attacking anytime soon. I’m just worried about what plans the Divine Race are having, so I decided to take a look.”

Julian nodded, “Would you like to have the Patriarch bring the Divine Artifact here, increasing the security?”

Zhao Hai shook his head and said, “There’s no need for that right now. We need to have Patriarch Billy and the others to keep the defense in Accra Mountain. If things go bad, then we can just give up on the Buddha Empire, handing it over to the Divine Race and the Demons. That way, those two can just contend for the land, fighting with each other in the process.”

The people in the room froze when they heard Zhao Hai, their complexions weren't exactly beautiful. Most of the people here are from the Buddha Empire, this was where they grew up, where their family thrived. Hearing that they must give up their hometown was something very unpleasant to hear. Zhao Hai looked at them and said, "Don't think about it too much. You're just giving up your homes, your land. In the end, your families are still there. Wherever your family is, then that place is your home. You don't need to worry too much here, the Demon's wouldn't be coming for quite some time. They have a certain understanding about the Divine Race, so they should be conserving their strength, not leaving their camp."

The people relaxed, then Zhao Hai looked at them one by one before waving his hand, making Shiying appear. Then Zhao Hai looked at the people inside the room and said, "This is Shiying, the Demon God-rank expert. He is now my undead, he will be my representative here. Even if the Demons or the Divine Race attacks, you don't have anything to worry about since I shall be returning at the quickest time. Well, then I'll be leaving. Besmir, I'll leave everything here to you." Besmir nodded, then Zhao Hai vanished from the room along with Berry and Shue.

Everyone present were already aware of Zhao Hai's space divergent ability. Because of this, they weren't very surprised with Zhao Hai's performance.

Zhao Hai's group of three appeared on the Radiant Empire's border. There weren't any changes compared to their past visit. The dead people and beasts at that time were still present. However, Zhao Hai didn't feel extreme anger this time. He needed to wait in order to take revenge so he decided to bury that feeling deep inside.

Zhao Hai came this time in order to see the new land that had descended. He wanted to see what's currently happening there and know why the Divine Race had yet to make an action.

He moved and flew towards the new land. Zhao Hai was a God-rank expert so he naturally wasn't slow. When he arrived at the place, Zhao Hai couldn't help but stare. It was because he saw a group of people. All of them were wearing the standard gown of the Radiant Church, it seems like they were people from the church.

When he saw these people, Zhao Hai's killing intent couldn't help but flare up. At this time, the people from the Radiant Church had also discovered Zhao Hai. Currently, the Church didn't have a lot of members remaining, only the core people were left. Altogether, these people number around a thousand. The worst of them were 8th rank Warrior or Mage. Unexpectedly, their 9th ranks had actually reached a hundred people, this number wasn't small.

When the people from the Church discovered Zhao Hai's group, their 9th ranks immediately flew over, headed by three people. The forefront of the three was an old person, he seemed to look over a hundred years old. His beard was snowy white as he wore a golden Radiant Church robe. In his hand was a sparkling golden book. This book made him appear like deity.

There were two red-robed people on each of the old person's side. Zhao Hai didn't recognize these two people, but their strengths were 9th rank. One of them held a white staff, while the other held a sword.

Zhao Hai didn't care about who these people were. From his deduction, the old man should be the church's Pope while the other two should be red-robed archbishops. Zhao Hai didn't pay attention on these three. However, what took his attention were the items on their hands.

These three items looked very uncommon. Most importantly, Zhao Hai can feel that these three items emanated an aura similar to Iron Hammer and Bloody War. It seems like these three items were Divine Artifacts.

When the Pope saw Zhao Hai staring at the book on his hand, he couldn't help but stare as well. Then when Zhao Hai paid attention to it, the Pope immediately knew that Zhao Hai had discovered what his book was. This book wasn't a normal one, it was actually sacred scripture that was given to him by the Divine Race, a Divine Artifact. The same was true for the items held by the two red-robed Archbishops, the Radiant Staff and the Sword of Judgement.

For Zhao Hai to notice these items in such a short time explains that Zhao Hai was a really powerful man.

The Pope looked at Zhao Hai and said, "Zhao Hai, I didn't think that you would arrive today. Submit to me right now, and when the Gods descend, I shall put a good word out for you. You have created huge troubles for the Church, and since we cannot change our plans, we had no choice but to do a Blood Sacrifice. This action made the Gods very angry, the people in the Radiant Empire were their most pious servants, and all of them died because of you."

Zhao Hai coldly looked at the Pope and then laughed, "What a joke, they died because of me? Who killed them? Weren't they killed by you hypocrites? And now you have the guts to pin the deed to me? You're truly shameless."

The Pope calmly stared at Zhao Hai, "They are the Church's most faithful servants, naturally they are prepared to be sacrifices for our God. If not for your disturbance, we wouldn't have used them. Instead, we would have used heathens for the sacrifice. Because of you, all of them died, so isn't that your mistake?" Zhao Hai sneered at the Pope's statement, "Heathens? And what qualifies being a heathen? Is it just because they don't believe in your Radiant God? In this world, there isn't only one God, so why would they need to believe in yours? Hahaha, now that I'm thinking about it, all of them were killed because of their belief in the Radiant God, isn't that quite ironic?"

The Pope coldly replied, "Everyone who believes in the Radiant God aren't heathens. The Radiant God is omnipotent, the Radiant



God is indescribably formidable. For them to be sacrificed to his cause is their fortune. Their souls would be purified.”

Zhao Hai sneered and said, “Purification, the soul just flows out of the body and perishes, nothing else. Sigh. It's useless to keep talking to brainwashed people. Shue, Berry, kill them all. But be careful, these people are carrying Divine Artifacts. Their capabilities aren't small.”

The two nodded, then Shue wielded his big axe and rushed straight into the enemies. Berry, on the other hand, slowly vanished into thin air. Zhao Hai just stood there without moving, observing the actions of the two. He wanted to give them more chances to fight. As soon as they comprehend a Domain, then they would become full-fledged Gods. In this chaotic situation, only then would they be free from constant peril.

When the Pope saw Shue rushing over, he immediately retreated while having the other 9th ranks go forward. They spread out as they attacked Shue.

Shue didn't have time to waste with them. His figure suddenly shook as large quantities of Doppelgangers appeared by his side, proceeding to kill these 9th ranks.

These 9th ranks didn't expect Shue to have this ability, causing them to be caught off-guard. In an instant, their numbers immediately fell by a large margin.

Shue didn't care about the remaining 9th ranks as he continued to charge towards the Pope. The Pope wasn't expecting Shue to be this formidable as well. However, when he saw that the enemy was still approaching, he lifted his sacred scripture up and said, “God decrees that all enemies shall be punished!”

Then as he said that, a bunch of white light went out of the sacred scripture. This white light quickly coalesced to become a light sword as it went towards Shue's direction.

Shue made a low grunt as he lifted his axe and greeted the light with the axe's projection. When the axe hit the sword, it didn't manage to block it. The axe projection was destroyed while the light sword continued on towards Shue.

Shue's eyes twinkled brightly, then his figure moved as he dodged the attack while charging towards the Pope. But then, the sword of light actually went around and attacked Shue's back.

When Zhao Hai saw the sword of light's movements, he couldn't help but raise an eyebrow. He didn't think the techniques of the Radiant Church would actually be this formidable. Not only did it break Shue's attack, it could even trace its enemy's position. This Divine Artifact surely was quite unique.

# Chapter 718 – Comprehending A Domain

---

At this time, the red-robed Archbishop bearing the radiant staff began to move. He held his staff up high and muttered an incantation. A ray of light started to cover the Pope, protecting him. Then as the Archbishop bearing the sword of judgement started to attack, he suddenly felt something beside him, this made him immediately dodge to the side.

However, he wasn't able to completely dodge the attack. On his left arm were four claw marks. The wound was quite deep, the flesh was gouged out as blood continued to flow.

At this time, Berry's form appeared ten meters away from the injured Archbishop. Berry was no longer the gentle woman who was right beside Zhao Hai. Both of her hands were now equipped with foot long nails, sharp to the point of showing cold light. Four of her nails, besides the thumb, in her right hand was now dripping with blood.

Berry chuckled tenderly, sounding out as a delightful laughter. However, those who heard it felt their will collapse a little. Then Berry smiled as she held her bloodied hand out and licked it with her long tongue. Her movements completely enticing while at the same time quite dangerous.

Zhao Hai discovered that Berry's attack didn't only involve his nails. Her laughter and her movements were actually a type of mental attack. Since mental attacks of the Succubi were formidable, and their control fantastic, this made it hard for their moves to be discovered. If Zhao Hai didn't have stronger spiritual force, then it might be impossible for him to notice it.

Zhao Hai was surprised at Berry. He didn't expect her to have this wild side, this astonished him very much.

On the other hand, the people from the Radiant Church were very startled. They hadn't felt Berry approach at all. In their

opinion, this feat was completely impossible.

These people were the strongest experts of the Radiant Church. Otherwise, they wouldn't have been bestowed Divine Artifacts. Because of this, they were very confident in their own strength. They simply couldn't believe that someone was able to bypass their detection and arrive by their side.

But how could they know about the powers of the Succubus race, or the fact that Zhao Hai had reached God-rank. After all, they were just 9th rank experts.

The little lady Succubus continued to chuckle, then her figure disappeared once more. This made the people from the Radiant Church unconsciously take a step back. The Archbishop with the radiant staff couldn't help but increase his protection. At the same time, the Pope also opened his sacred scripture.

When Berry attacked the red-robed Archbishop, Shue's clones had already eliminated the other 9th ranks of the Radiant Church. Shue's clones held absolute superiority when it came to strength and numbers. The 9th ranks had no chance to retaliate at all.

Zhao Hai waved his hand, wrapping the dead 9th ranks and made them into undead. Then Zhao Hai pointed his fingers towards the 8th rank experts before the new undead proceeded to slaughter them.

Zhao Hai didn't change the appearances of these undead into skeletons. Instead, he made them into zombies, in other words, he maintained their original faces. This was to make the Radiant Church witness helplessly as their own allies were killing them. This would be a huge impact for these people. These were their allies, friends, and superiors. Having them turn around and kill them caused panic and fear to the victims.

In this situation, how could it be possible for the people from the Radiant Church to keep their morale. Additionally, Zhao Hai's 9th rank undead were very strong, it didn't take long before flesh and

blood began to splatter around the place.

However, Shue had actually met with some trouble. He was now faced against the sword of light. The sword was very strong, able to defeat a thousand axe projections from Shue's clones.

After the Pope released another the sword of light, he didn't close his sacred scripture. Instead, he closed muttered an incantation once more, "God decrees that everything is just an illusion. One needs to open his eyes to see the truth!"

Just after he muttered those words, a white light appeared on his side, then it slowly transformed into a huge white eye. The eye turned and projected a beam towards the area right behind the Archbishop with the staff.

A grunt came as Berry's hand clashed with the light, shattering it. However, this also revealed Berry's form.

Then the Archbishop with the sword of judgement immediately moved and swung his sword towards Berry's direction. Berry wanted to turn invisible once more, however, the white eye ejected a beam once more, forcing her to reveal her form.

Zhao Hai saw all of these happen but still didn't go forward to help. He knew that he had underestimated these Divine Artifacts. Its possible that these artifacts were no worse than God-rank experts, they might even be stronger than average God-ranks. No wonder the Dwarves and the other races were able to defeat a God-ranked expert using only their three artifacts, these items were truly strong.

However, Zhao Hai didn't regret sending Shue and Berry to this fight. Only through battles would these two grow, and will soon develop their own Domain.

Shue was now being assaulted by two swords of light. This made him very angry, he didn't think that he would have problems in dealing with some 9th ranks with divine artifacts. This was too

shameful, he was losing face for his Young Master.

Shue couldn't help but be enraged at this point. He roared and this time, he didn't use a projection of the axe for attack. Instead, he injected his energy into the axe in order to attack. The whole axe turned blood red, shoots of light continued to dance wildly around the axe. With Shue in the center, red light was whistling about in a ten meter surrounding. These weren't projections, all of these was just the aura that was given off by the axe.

The two swords of light stabbed into Shue's axe aura. Then an intense clash sounded out. After some time, Shue's figure backed up, his clothes were ripped into two, his skin was wounded in some areas. At the same time, the axe on his hand now had two grain sized holes. But fortunately, the overall damage to the axe was not too serious.

However, Zhao Hai noticed the damage. He knew that Shue's axe was built with quality. It shouldn't be too far from a Divine Artifact. It seems like Shue needed a better weapon than this one.

When Shue finally disperse the two swords of light, he made a furious roar as he went towards the Pope. The Pope flipped the page on his sacred scripture and said, "God decrees that all enemies shall fall into Hell. Unable to be reincarnated!!" Just as his words fell, two big white hands suddenly appeared in the sky, one above Shue and one below. Then the two hands went closer to each other, intending to flatten Shue in between.

Shue wanted to move to the side, but discovered that it was impossible for him to move, he seemed to be imprisoned. Shue panicked, he couldn't help but turn his head to Zhao Hai. He hoped to obtain help from his Young Master. However, Zhao Hai stayed put, showing Shue a face full of hope.

When Shue saw Zhao Hai's expression, he knew that Zhao Hai didn't want to help him right now. He was hoping that Shue would break through.

When he understood Zhao Hai's purpose, Shue's heart couldn't help but shake. Then he screamed violently as the axe in his hand swung around wildly. However, the two big hands seem to be unaffected. More pressure came as Shue's space inside became smaller and smaller.

Zhao Hai was now starting to worriedly look at Shue. Although he hoped that Shue would break through, he was still afraid that Shue would get heavily injured. Zhao Hai was thinking that he may have been too impatient. Berry and Shue just became Demigods, so it may be impossible for them to become a God in such a short time. It seems like he had gone too far.

After thinking up to this, Zhao Hai couldn't help but sigh and prepared to make his move. However, Shue's axe aura suddenly vanished. Shue was just stood there, calmly holding his axe. This made Zhao Hai stare, confused. And at this time, Shue started to swing.

The speed of this attack wasn't fast, it can even be described as relatively slow. Every single movement can be seen by the naked eye. However, such a move actually manage to crack the enclosure made by those two big white hands.

As the axe chopped, a blood red gas started to wrap Shue's body. Then this gas expanded, getting bigger and bigger, and even bigger as it stopped when it became as large as the Demon Herd's Domain. Then the gas formed into a red sphere, surrounding Shue who was in the center.

But this wasn't the end, the red sphere slowly started to take shape. In the end, it turned into the shape of an axe. This was a greataxe, a two bladed axe. Its body was completely blood red, but the edge of the axe was actually golden. This made the greataxe appear even more sharp.

When Zhao Hai saw this axe, he couldn't help but laugh. He knew that Shue had finally succeeded, he had finally

comprehended his own Domain. Although it was still in its first stage, it was still a very great achievement.

At the same time, seeing Shue's process of comprehending a Domain also gave benefits to Zhao Hai. Zhao Hai's Domain was directly made by the Space, there were some parts of it that he was still yet to understand. However, Shue's Domain was self-made. In fact, the only difference between a God and a Demigod was their understanding of a Domain. But this understanding was more difficult than once can imagine.

Demigods and gods, if purely based on strength, then they were similar. Their only difference was that one had a formidable Domain while the other didn't.



# Chapter 719 – Hook!

---

A Domain is basically a technique in utilizing one's own ability. At the same time, a God-rank who had a Domain would be able to absorb energy much more efficiently.

This was something that Zhao Hai had found out when he used his Domain. However, he still wasn't able to convey this information over to Shue and Berry. This was because Zhao Hai didn't comprehend his own Domain. Shue and Berry can only rely on themselves for this matter.

Every God-rank that comprehended their Domain would be able to more skillfully exercise their strength. An action that made them use all of their strength from before would only take half after getting a Domain. At the same time, their execution time would also be 40 percent quicker compared to before.

The Pope and the others couldn't help but stare blankly at Shue. They didn't know what just happened, and why such a thing occurred.

The Pope and the others weren't God-ranked experts, so their understanding about God-rank wasn't that much. Since the Divine Race controlled the Radiant Church, then it was naturally for them to restrict crucial information regarding these things. Moreover, the Radiant Church didn't expect that God-ranks would emerge from the Ark Continent. The situation was just like what Zhao Hai thought. The reason why the Ark Continent wasn't able to produce God-ranks was due to the machinations done by the Divine Race.

In order to achieve their goal of conquering the Ark Continent, the people from the Divine Realm began to make their preparations after their first failure. They first sealed the passage from the Ark Continent to the Divine Realm. This passage was as old as the laws of the Ark Continent. If one were to look at it, the Ark Continent was a plane that was much lower than the Divine

Realm. The strongest people in the Ark Continent were nobodies once placed on the Divine Realm. It was for this exact reason that the Divine Race deemed it proper for them to enslave the people in the Continent. In their view, the higher planes should rule the beings from the lower planes. After all, their strengths and abilities were much stronger in comparison.

However, the people in the Ark Continent didn't want to be slaves to the Divine Race. Because of this, the natives of the continent decided to band together and resist, making the Divine Race suffer a loss. Being unable to conquer a lower plane was a huge embarrassment to the Divine Race. To make sure that the blunder wouldn't happen again, the Divine Race started to prepare for their next move in the past tens of thousands of years.

The Divine Race first gathered a lot of strong people in the Divine Realm in order to forcibly seal the passage between the two planes. Although it seems like it was just like blocking a road, it still made an impact to the Ark Continent. After the passage was blocked, God-ranked experts can no longer emerge from the Continent.

And to maintain the position of being superior, the Divine Race refrained from telling too much information, even to those faithful to them like the Radiant Church. Because of this, the Pope and the others were ill informed of the rank a step above from them.

Now when they saw Shue's Domain, even if they couldn't understand what it was, they could still feel the immense pressure coming from it. This made the three of them more careful.

Compared to the three, Shue was much more relaxed. He felt that his energy absorption has gotten quicker. Moreover, his control over his strength has become more streamlined. At the same time, he was also made aware about how to use his Domain.

Shue felt that his Domain was like a Space of his own. In this space, he can control everything. All attacks coming from outside would be much weaker and all attacks that he made seemed to

double in power once used within the Domain.

Shue slightly closed his eyes, understanding his own Domain. This was the Domain that he comprehended himself, so it didn't take long before Shue understood it completely.

Shue opened his eyes and looked at the Pope's group. He coldly snorted as his hand moved, pointing the blood red greataxe towards them.

The Pope stared for a moment, then he felt that he had been placed in a dangerous situation, he immediately opened his sacred scripture and then chanted, "God decrees that all your attacks shall be withstood by me. All suffering shall be bent by faith!" Then a huge angelic figure appeared in front of the Pope. There was a beastskin belt around its waist and it was completely covered in wounds. At the same time, there were also bloodstains on its clothes, it looked very fierce.

This angelic figure was actually a legend in the Radiant Church. It's called 'guardian angel', it was said that this angel would bear the sufferings of a thousand believers. But in truth, this legend was just an advanced level light magic.

Then the Divine Race established the Radiant Church, they had also taught the light mages modified light magics. These light element spells were mystical, they felt very sacred when used. The sacred feeling was felt whether these spells were made to attack or defend.

This trick has been useful in the past as well as in the present. In the past, people thought of these spells as miracles. Now that the Church had a lot of followers, these magics were always thought to be actions made by the angels, they were made with divine power.

Shue's axe continued to chop towards that angelic figure. Then the angel went alive, it issued a pained moan as its head split into two. However, that was it, Shue's axe was stopped, it couldn't continue on after splitting the angel's head into two.

Shue stared, then immediately made another attack towards the Pope. At this time, the sword bearing Archbishop rushed over, swinging his sword towards Shue. When Shue's axe projection hit the sword, both attacks nullified one each other.

Then the Pope opened his mouth and chanted, "God decrees the annihilation of the enemy. All enemies shall be punished. All enemies shall be suppressed. All enemies shall be subjected to the punishment of light!" Then when his voice fell, a blinding light suddenly came from the sacred scripture. This light was brighter than the sun, one couldn't help but close their eyes upon being subjected to the glare.

Shue couldn't help but block his eyes as well. On the other hand, Berry called out in alarm. Then after judging the situation, the Pope immediately said, "Deal with the Succubus first. Then we'll deal with the axe wielding man."

The two Archbishops immediately made their moves. Their bodies almost flashing towards Berry. Zhao Hai couldn't help but change his expression upon seeing this. He knew that Berry had suffered some wounds. This was because light magic had an innate strength against Demonic beings. And the recent attack was the sacred scriptures light magic.

However, Zhao Hai didn't make his move. He knew that if he helped Berry right now, then she would forever be unable to comprehend a Domain. Because of this, Zhao Hai continued to stand there.

Berry saw the two Archbishops coming over and couldn't help but stare for a moment. Then she quickly moved and clashed towards a red robed Archbishop. At the same time, Shue also sent an attack towards the Pope, intending to lessen the burden placed on Berry.

However, it seems like the three people of the Radiant Church had their tunnel vision towards Berry. Even though Shue had

made an attack, they still went straight towards Berry, making her fall into an unprecedented crisis.

Zhao Hai prepared himself to move at any time, but still decided to stay his hand. This was Berry's most critical time. People can break through at a moment of life and death. If she misses this opportunity, then Berry might find it difficult to develop her own Domain.

Berry's body had already reached the state of being able to comprehend a Domain. The only thing that she lacks was the opportunity to do so. Therefore, Zhao Hai decided to give Berry this opportunity to face life and death.

Actually, before this moment, Berry knew that nothing would happen to her. She believed that Zhao Hai wouldn't allow to have her be injured. This kind of thinking became a barrier to her breakthrough. Only when she comprehends a Domain would she get away from being a Demigod and become a Full God.

When the three people from the Radiant Church started to aggressively attack, Berry suddenly forgot Zhao Hai, she forgot about everything. The only thing in her mind right now was how to evade the Pope and the other two's attacks as well as how to counter. At this moment, Berry's Demonic blood finally activated, restoring her true Demon nature.

Under everyone's gazes, Berry's appearance suddenly turned pale before she vanished from sight. The Pope and the two Archbishops couldn't help but stare upon seeing this happening. Then the furiously roared and attacked Berry's original position. However, the only thing that they hit was thin air, nothing else.

The moment Berry vanished, Zhao Hai couldn't help but faintly smile. Then he closed his eyes and sank his divine sense towards the small figure on his upper dantian. Then the eyes of the small Zhao Hai opened, his hair waved calmly as he released a formidable spiritual fluctuation all around Zhao Hai's body. Then

everything was made clear, when those fluctuations returned. Zhao Hai couldn't help but gawk at what he saw, it was actually a siege hook!

Right, a siege hook, one that was used to climb walls. This fly hook was looked more formidable than the ordinary fly hooks that Zhao Hai saw back in ancient times. There were five fingers on this hook, they were no bigger than a person's finger. From what Zhao Hai can see, it seems like this hook was modeled after Berry's hand.

# Chapter 720 – Divine Race Arrives

---

The giant hook had a rope with it. This rope was made out of innumerable filaments that looked like hair, they looked terrifying.

Zhao Hai slowly withdrew his divine sense. He understood that this hook was just like Shue's greataxe, it was Berry's Domain.

Berry's Domain looks like it had three functions. First was providing her with stealth. Moreover, compared to general stealth ability, her Domain seemed to provide a higher level stealth. Even light magic wasn't able to break this Domain.

The second function was possibly to pull the enemies over. Otherwise, the hook wouldn't have this form. However, Zhao Hai was also sure that there were more to it than pulling enemies over.

The third function seemed to be a mental attack. The rope on the hook looks like Berry's hair, making Zhao Hai think that it would make mental attacks.

And just as Zhao Hai thought about it, the giant hook went flying and grabbed onto the shields of the Pope and the other two. When the hook reached two shields, the shields immediately shattered. However, when it came to the third layer, the hook got deflected. This was largely due to the staff bearing Archbishop to being very careful. Without the extra shields, the Pope's group would've already been killed.

The Pope's group couldn't help but cry out in alarm. They didn't know what happened, but they saw that two of their shields had just shattered. But then, they immediately thought of Berry's abilities. They knew that Berry was capable of stealth, so this hidden attack should have come from her.

However, they were still yet to find even Berry's shadow. The Archbishop with the radiant staff just made a few more protections

around them, providing them with additional support. At this time, Shue moved.

Shue has been paying attention to the Pope and the others' movements. When he saw Berry vanish, he couldn't help but stare for a moment. Then he immediately smashed their layers of protection. Right now, there was only a single layer of protection left for the Pope and the others.

Berry didn't let this opportunity go. She grasped the rope and threw it towards the Pope and the others, entangling them in the process.

At this time, Zhao Hai discovered that the three people from the Radiant Church were staying still, just looking blankly in the distance. They weren't any different from clay or wooden statues.

Zhao Hai understood that these three people had been enthralled inside Berry's mental attack. They weren't even thinking about their battle with Shue and Berry, they didn't move a step.

Zhao Hai was already aware that Berry and Shue had won. Although their three enemies had three divine artifacts, the artifacts were already deemed useless. After all, they were only artifacts, they weren't real and independent God-rank experts. Because of this, even them were unable to leave Berry's mental attack.

Under Zhao Hai's sight, Berry held her hook and gently attached on the last layer of the Pope's shield. Then she gripped her hook tightly as she made a final pull to break the Pope's last shield.

The just as Berry was about to grasp the Pope's head, proceeding to kill him, a while light suddenly appeared from the sacred scripture. This stopped the attack while at the same time, awakening the Pope and the two Archbishops.

At the same time, Shue sent several axe projections towards the Pope. And even if the Pope's group didn't respond, the sword of



judgement suddenly separated itself from the red robed Archbishop and proceeded to block all of Shue's attack.

After blocking the attacks, the radiant staff also flew up and released a lot of defensive shields all around the Pope's group. This made the Pope's group stare at the sudden change. However, they immediately turned ecstatic. As they opened their hands to receive the divine artifact, an archaic voice suddenly came, "Those who attack the servants of the Divine Race shall receive punishment!"

Berry and the others turned towards the direction where the voice came from. Then from the newly descended land, an old person with white robes suddenly appeared. Both the beard and hair of this person was all white. This made him look like a wise old sage.

Berry and Shue became startled, they knew that this was certainly a person from the Divine Realm. This person appearing wasn't good for them. Their plan to eliminate the Radiant Church has just been placed into disarray.

The Pope's group were overjoyed, they immediately knelt down and said, "We've seen the sacred master. Your loyal servants give their best regards."

The Divine Race person seemed to ignore the greeting of the Pope's group, he just nodded and said, "Get up, useless things. You really can't do things well, but since we can't do it without your effort, then I shall save your lives today."

As soon as the old man finished speaking, he suddenly heard a sneer, "Still daring to recklessly boast. They are already monkeys in the cage, and you still dare to guarantee their safety. I want to kill them today, let's see if you have the ability to stop that."

This made the people stare, then they turned to Zhao Hai. Shue and Berry's figures moved and returned to Zhao Hai's side. On the other hand, the old man actually gawked, he looked startled towards Zhao Hai's direction.

Zhao Hai looked at the Divine Race person and then coldly snorted, “I completely hate you Divine Race people. You still had the gall to be proud even if you haven’t stepped a foot on the Ark Continent. I am going to kill these three today, you want to stop me? Then try it!”

The old Divine Race person’s eyes flashed a cold light. He returned with a cold snort and said, “Good, good. I didn’t think that the Ark Continent would actually have God-rank experts. Also, even if we haven’t reached the Ark Continent, then how does that matter? I can still command the divine scripture, radiant staff, and sword of justice to attack you. Just by your own strength, it would be impossible for you to block out attack. Do you dare to meet my attack?”

Zhao Hai replied, “Then try it. I will certainly kill those three today, turning them into my own undead. At the same time, i shall also snatch your divine artifacts away.”

The old man got angry, he said, “Arrogant! Ignorant and arrogant! You actually dared to disrespect this God. Suffer death!” Then he waved his hand as the sacred scripture opened up and released a sword of light towards Zhao Hai. At the same time, the radiant staff also gave off a dazzling white light, beaming an offensive light spell towards Zhao Hai. Then the sword moved forward to attack. The path of the sword of judgement was quite peculiar. It actually made a huge arc, intending to attack Zhao Hai’s back.

These three attacks weren’t simple. The sword of light that came out of the sacred scripture was an overbearing attack. Moreover, in addition to being overbearing, it also exerted pressure. The pressure was akin to an attack by a God-rank expert.

The offensive light magic was a soul attack, it was very formidable. And finally, the sword of judgement was quite peculiar. Even if one can see it, it was extremely silent. Other than sight, no other sense was able to feel it.

If an average person were to meet this attack, then they would definitely be caught off guard. However, Zhao Hai wasn't a simple person. He didn't take these attacks seriously, then he suddenly said, "Thunder!"

Then nine beams of lightning came out, clashing with the attack made by the radiant staff, eradicating it in the process. Then Zhao Hai continued, "Mountain!"

A huge mountain suddenly appeared in front of Zhao Hai, blocking the sword of light. Although the sword of light managed to make a huge hole in the mountain, it was still stopped.

Then Zhao Hai said, "Swamp!"

The word caused a huge swamp to appear behind him. This swamp didn't look anything special, but when the sword of judgement collided with it, it seemed to be mired in a sticky web. Its speed got slower and slower before finally stopping in place.

Zhao Hai waved his hand as the three artifacts was pulled over to his body. The three artifacts didn't have enough time to run as they were immediately grasped by Zhao Hai. Just as they struggled, Zhao Hai immediately threw the three artifacts towards the Space. Upon absorbing the three artifacts, the Space quickly issued a prompt. "Items with light energy detected. First item is an evil extinguishing book. The second item is a sacred staff. The third item is evil executing sword. Virus program detected in each of these items, negatively affecting their performance. Removing the virus, virus removed successfully. Extracting light energy from the three items. All light element robots in the Space have now been upgraded to God-rank. The three artifacts has been integrated to the Blood Ghost Staff. Host can now judge a person, allowing the host's marked target to receive 50% more damage. Host's light magic has been increased by 50%!"

Zhao Hai listened to this prompt with a blank expression. He couldn't respond to the influx of information. He didn't expect this

result, it was completely out of his expectations. The light-element undead had actually become God-rank. This was extremely good, this was because he had a lot of light-element undead!

## Chapter 721 – Using the Trigram

---

Zhao Hai had clashed with the Radiant Church in many instances. Although not everyone in the church were light mages, they still held the majority of light mages and light attributed warriors. Additionally, Zhao Hai also killed a lot of magic beasts who had an innate talent in the element of light.

From the moment they were born, the bodies of the residents in the Ark Continent had their own attribute. Let's take Meg, for example, she had the water attribute, so she was well suited to studying water magic. Therefore, there were quite a few people and beasts who had the light attribute. And some of them weren't under the Radiant Church.

If Zhao Hai's calculations were correct, then all of the light element undead that the Space had numbered almost 10 thousand. In other words, he now had the same number of God-rank undead.

However, after asking Cai'er, he knew that these God-rank experts were only Demigods. This was because they had no Domain. Unlike the 500 God-rank Assassins who was actually found out to have their own Domain.

Zhao Hai was confused about this in the beginning. However, he changed his mind when he began to understand. These God-ranked Assassins were brought up because of Shiyang. Shiyang himself had his own Domain, so this achievement had also manifested on the 500 undead Assassins. On the other hand, although the three artifacts were formidable, they were still artifacts in the end, unable to manifest a Domain. Because of this, the light element undead weren't able to have a Domain.

After thinking up to this point, Zhao Hai couldn't help but sigh. The Space was indeed quite rigid. When talking about fighting strength, three 9th ranks with divine artifacts weren't any worse than Shiyang, they might even be stronger. However, since they

were artifacts and not people, the artifacts themselves were unable to establish a Domain. Because of this, the Space only extracted their strength and upgraded the undead, it didn't bother itself with giving the undead a Domain.

However, Zhao Hai was still quite satisfied. No matter what, the Space now had 10 thousand God-ranked undead, about 1 out of a thousand undead were now God-rank. This made Zhao Hai smile. One must know that people with light element attributes were quite rare in the continent. If he hadn't exterminated the Radiant Church, then he wouldn't have this many God-rank undead.

But to be honest, Zhao Hai's true happiness wasn't because of this matter, it was actually about the usage of the Dao Lotus. The Dao Lotus was extremely wonderful, it can attack, defend, help in absorbing energy, and even help in comprehending the Heavens. This was truly a top class treasure. However, Zhao Hai's understanding of the Dao Lotus was just limited, he hadn't even understood half of it.

The three characters that he had shouted before were actually about the eight trigrams: thunder, mountain, and water! The eight trigrams is separated into eight sections, Heaven(Tiān), Swamp(De), Fire(Huǒ), Thunder(Léi), Wind(Fēng), Water(Shuǐ), Mountain(Shān), Earth(Dì).

When Zhao Hai acquired the power of the Dao Lotus, he also acquired the method of using the trigram. Using the trigram was quite convenient, as long as Zhao Hai says the character, then he would immediately get the corresponding knowledge in order to execute it. Moreover, each character's might was very formidable. Zhao Hai only used three characters in order to block the attacks of three Divine Artifacts, this was hard evidence towards the formidability of the trigram.

After experiencing how strong the trigram was, Zhao Hai was now more confident regarding his own capabilities. With the help of the trigram, Zhao Hai was assured that he wouldn't be any

worse than any expert from the Divine Race.

Zhao Hai was now very clear about how fierce the trigram was. If hadn't used the trigram and only depended on his strength, the most he could do was to block the three divine artifacts, nothing else. Now that he had used the trigram, not only was he able to block the attacks, he was even able to capture the artifacts. For Zhao Hai, this was definitely a good result.

Contrasting Zhao Hai's happy harvest, the old Divine Race man didn't know how to react. He didn't expect that their side would actually lose three divine artifacts!

One must know that even in the Divine Realm, divine artifacts were still quite rare! In fact, what Iron Hammer told Zhao Hai before had some mistakes. Iron Hammer said that the Divine Race was strong, this was true, however, Iron Hammer didn't elaborate the fact that divine artifacts with their own spirits were also very rare. Artifacts with artifact spirits were also deemed to be on the top of the item echelon in the Divine Realm. Otherwise, the ancestors of the three major races wouldn't have entrusted their race's fate to Iron Hammer and the others. And if those kinds of Divine Artifacts were quite common, then the Divine Realm wouldn't have been ruled by the Divine Race, but instead, by the Divine Artifacts!

The three artifacts that the Divine Race had sent to the Radiant Church was meant to resist Iron Hammer and the others. However, since Iron Hammer and the others were injured, the Radiant Church managed to suppress their races quite easily without any intervention from the races' divine protectors. Because of this, an issue appeared on the Radiant Church, the succeeding generations actually forgot the initial purpose of the three artifacts. This caused them to worship these artifacts, using them as little as possible. The Radiant Church had become unskilled in using the artifacts. In the end, the Radiant Church wasn't able to eliminate the other races and just continued to

suppress them.

The Divine Race's appearance in the rift as well as their modification of the laws didn't come without a price. The land that descended actually had a protective shield. This shield wasn't used to guard against the people from the Ark Continent, instead, this shield was used in order to prevent any damages to the land as it fell down towards the Ark Continent. The shield was too formidable that it actually saved the falling land from being destroyed.

However, because this shield was too formidable, the Divine Race couldn't just forcibly remove it, making it impossible for them to invade the Ark Continent immediately. Only after seven days, when the new land gets stable would they be able to proceed with their invasion. Aside from their Divine Sense, the Divine Race were unable to enter the Ark Continent.

This flaw gave Zhao Hai a huge advantage. The Divine Race person had underestimated Zhao Hai, he expected that he could just command the divine artifacts with his Divine Sense in order to kill Zhao Hai. He didn't anticipate that the other party would actually take the divine artifacts for himself.

When he felt that his connection to the divine artifacts were severed, the Divine Race person couldn't help but be angry as he loudly shouted, "Brat, you dare! Return those artifacts immediately, or else, I shall shred you to bits!"

Zhao Hai gave a cold smile and said, "If you have the ability, then come. In the meantime, I shall be dealing with your dogs." Then Zhao Hai waved his hand as a giant palm appeared and grabbed towards the Pope.

The Pope was surprised, he sidestepped the attack as he muttered an incantation, giving himself a protective light element shield.

However, even if he was fast, Zhao Hai's giant palm was faster. Just as the Pope made his move, Zhao Hai's hand already captured



him. And with zero delay, the hand clenched itself, completely crushing the Pope's whole body. After a short and pitiful squeak, the Pope had turned into a pile of mush.

After that, Zhao Hai threw the Pope's body towards the Space. He wanted to see whether the Pope can still be turned into undead or not.

He can! Although the bones had been crushed, the Pope was still turned into an undead. This was due to the two requirements of making an undead, one was the flesh and blood, and the other was the soul. The soul, flesh, and bones were just materials in making undead. One could compare it to making a sword where you need to use iron, fire, and hammer. The bone was like iron, the flesh and blood was fire, and the hammering was like the magic spell. Even if the iron was broken, it can still be merged together, and as long as there was fire and a hammer, then the sword can still be made.

Upon seeing this, Zhao Hai didn't become polite, he immediately did the same to the two red-robed Archbishops, then turning them into undead creatures.

The person from the Divine Realm had a pale complexion as he looked at Zhao Hai's actions. He didn't expect Zhao Hai to have this much courage. He actually dared to kill the people of the Radiant Church in front of the Divine Race's eyes.

One shouldn't just look at how the Divine Race treats the Radiant Church. Although they were seen as dogs, the Divine Race was still very satisfied with the church's work. After all, the Divine Race wouldn't be able to break through the space and change the continent's laws without the help of the Radiant Church. He just promised the Pope's group that he would save their lives. However, Zhao Hai was still able to kill them, for the Divine Race, this was an absolute shame.

After looking at the Divine Race person's complexion, Zhao Hai

couldn't help but smile faintly, "Divine Realm friend, I had always been waiting for your arrival in the Ark Continent. In fact, I already prepared a lot for this to happen. However, the Demons suddenly appeared, this derailed my plan. This should have derailed your plan as well. At this point, we are in the same starting line. As long as your people arrive in the Continent, then I will immediately have you pay for the lives of the people in the Ocean Waves Dynasty. I'm very hoping for your quick arrival, I can't wait to kill several people from the Divine Race."

The Divine Race old man looked at Zhao Hai, and with clenched teeth he retorted, "Just you wait. When we arrive in the continent, I shall personally remove your bones one by one. I shall then go to your family and then feed them to the dogs!"

Zhao Hai looked at the old man and then coldly smiled, "I'll be waiting for you. Don't disappoint me." Then he brought Shue and Berry along with him as they turned around and leisurely walked back to the continent, purposefully making the old man's eyes turn red.

But what this Divine Race person didn't see was Zhao Hai's pale face just as he turned around. This didn't signify that he was afraid of the Divine Race, nor was it because he had a hard fight with them. On the contrary, he was very satisfied with today's result. Berry and Shue were able to comprehend a Domain, and he even managed to acquire ten thousand God-ranked undead as well as three divine artifacts. Today truly brought him a great harvest.

The reason for Zhao Hai's ugly expression was because of anger, he was raging at the Divine Race. These people simply didn't see the residents of the Ark Continent as people. Their arrival in the continent showed how they regarded the people of the continent. Compared to the Demons, it seemed like they were much worse.

Zhao Hai had an understanding regarding the Demon Race. He knew that the Demons lived with the rule of the jungle. The weak could only be either food or slaves, nothing else. But this

characteristic made it sure that they wouldn't just wantonly kill people. After all, an alive slave was much better than a dead one.

Although the Demon Race's final goal was acquiring the Ark Continent and killing every single resident inside it, Zhao Hai discovered from their actions tens of thousands of years ago that this was might not be the case.

From the nature of the Demon Race, they would surely change their mind. It was possible that they didn't want to eliminate everyone inside the Ark Continent, they also want to rule the place.

On the other hand, with how the Divine Race sees the people of the Continent, they would absolutely not be lenient. This can be seen in their previous action. In order to make their target, the Divine Race actually made the Radiant Church sacrifice an entire country's worth of people. If the Divine Race were to use this mentality in dealing with the Ark Continent, then the residents surely wouldn't be able to live proper lives.

When Berry and Shue saw Zhao Hai's expression, they didn't say anything. Although they weren't aware of Zhao Hai's thoughts, they still saw what happened to the Radiant Empire. They too were seething with rage.

The number of people in that country wasn't small, and the Radiant Church actually killed them off. In the end, only 1 thousand people, all of whom were the core of the Radiant Church, were left. All others weren't spared, this was too ruthless, it wasn't strange for people to be angry at this.

After some time, Zhao Hai let out along breath, calming his emotions. Then he lead his group back to the Space as they entered the villa. Upon entering, Zhao Hai immediately said to Laura, "Laura, inform all the armies in the Buddha Empire to rotate the defense and focus on the Radiant Empire. The attack of the Divine Race would truly be fierce. Focus all future defense strategies

towards them. As for everything else, leave them to me!”

Laura nodded, then went along to follow Zhao Hai’s directions.

## Chapter 722 – An Enemy of an Enemy

---

Lizzy turned to Zhao Hai and said, “The Divine Race truly are formidable. They changed the laws of the heavens and the earth, they even managed to block the progression to God-rank. And now, they managed to bring an entire army in order to deal with us. It seems like they were truly annoyed by their past failure. Their plan of attack would surely be as fast as lightning. Fortunately, we had managed to get good fortunes to resist them. But Brother Hai, would the ordinary armies really be of use? They will surely die in the battlefield!”

Zhao Hai sighed, “We still need to have them. After all, they are also residents of the Ark Continent. If we don’t make them help, then they might feel dread when everything is over. They might fear that we would coerce them in the future. Also, did you forget about the other races in the Divine Realm? One must know that the Divine Race still had their own enemies in the Divine Realm, and those were the Gods of the three races. If those three races were to enter the war, then it would be a huge advantage to us. These people would definitely be great allies.”

Upon hearing Zhao Hai, Lizzy gave out a small sigh, “I understand. But Brother Hai, do you believe that those Gods are still alive? It’s been countless years, I’m afraid that they had been eliminated a long time ago. Even Gods wouldn’t be alive after tens of thousands of years.”

Zhao Hai nodded, “I’m also aware of that. However, them being of help is still a huge thing for us, so we might as well try. If those Gods can help, then establishing a good relationship with them would be very good. Even if they can’t, then we can just rely on our own strength, showing them that we can provide sufficient power. It’s good to have more people who have a grudge against the Divine Race.”

Lizzy understood Zhao Hai’s words, in the simplest form, Zhao

Hai just expressed that an enemy of an enemy is a friend. If those Gods have a grudge against the Divine Race, then as long as they see Zhao Hai's strength, then these people would certainly help out. With Zhao Hai, they can unite and destroy the Divine Race together.

However, Lizzy still couldn't help but express her worry, "But Brother Hai, do these GODs really have a grudge with the Divine Race? If they don't, then what do we do?"

Zhao Hai's eyes flashed a cold light, "Then there's nothing we can do. If worse comes to worst, then we will make God-ranks ourselves. Let's see which is more formidable, my Space, or the Divine Race."

At this time, Laura came back, she turned to Zhao Hai and said, "Brother Hai, the order has been passed around. I believe that it wouldn't take too long before they make the proper adjustments. Do we really have to look away from the Demons?"

Zhao Hai shook his head and said, "We still need to be on guard. However, the Demons aren't relatively strong compared to the Divine Race. From what I felt today, there are only ten God-ranked experts in their camp. Moreover, with the big move of the Divine Race, the Demons are surely to be on full defensive mode. They are more focused on the Divine Race compared to us. For them, the Divine Race is more dangerous."

Laura and the others nodded, what Zhao Hai said was true. Both the Demons and the Divine Race weren't aware that Zhao Hai already had God-rank undead. Since they didn't expect Zhao Hai's side to have more strength, then they would definitely suffer in the future.

At this time, Lizzy asked, "Big Brother Hai, did you just say that the Divine Race needed several days before coming out?"

Zhao Hai sighed and said, "Less than seven days. This was something that came out of the Pope's own mouth. I'm afraid that

these seven days would be the most peaceful days of the Ark Continent.”

Laura nodded and said, “Brother Hai, we should have the Dwarves and Elves make the proper arrangements. At the same time, informing the four big Empires would be great as well.”

Zhao Hai nodded. Although the Divine Race and the Demons have already appeared, most of the Ark Continent’s land was still in the hands of the four Empires. And even if the Buddha Empire has been turned into a battlefield, it was still in Zhao Hai’s control. If the Divine Race and the Demons wanted to disrupt the continent, then it was certain that they would send some experts towards the other four Empires, harassing the Ark Continent’s rear.

At this point, Zhao Hai’s most difficult problem was the issue of military strength. One shouldn’t overestimate Zhao Hai’s more than 10 thousand God-rank undead. All of these undead were crucial in the actual battlefield. These 10 thousand undead simply aren’t enough in front of the Demon and the Divine Race. This was what made Zhao Hai very worried.

Without God-rank experts, then any preparation was useless. This made Zhao Hai anxious. Looking at Zhao Hai’s worried expression, Lizzy couldn’t help but comfort him, “Big Brother Hai, how about we return to the Black Wasteland and take a look at the situation. See if any of the 9th ranks have made a breakthrough. If they did, then you can just hand the task of protecting the Empires over to them. As long as they stop the attack for some time, then we can use the Space in order to rescue the people.”

Zhao Hai nodded and said, “Alright, it has also been a long time since I returned to the Black Wasteland. Let’s go back and have a look.” He stood up and then along with the others, they vanished and returned to Iron Mountain Fort.

Green and the others were currently inside the castle. The Black

Wasteland has been extraordinarily busy recently, there were simply too many people here compared to before. The Dwarves had dug out a lot of caverns in Iron Mountain. Moreover, they had also started to deliver iron ores from the mountain every day. The Dwarves already had their own furnace in the castle, all of them were busily making various types of weapons.

The Elves weren't idling as well, they kept planting trees all around Flower City. At the same time, they were also manufacturing weapons. The Elves were very clear, the Ark Continent was on its way to disaster. It was impossible for them to live like before, wherein they were completely focused on making artware.

Only the Beastmen weren't present in the wasteland. This was because there was no need to move. The Beastman Prairie was also quite far from the Buddha Empire. Even if the frontlines were shaken to its core, the prairie still wouldn't be affected. However, the Beastmen were going all out in dispatching its troops in order to help.

The Black Wasteland had already been made known to everyone on the continent. After all, a lot of Human refugees were sent here. But nobody dared to have greedy thoughts when it came to the wasteland. This was because Zhao Hai was a very strong leader. There weren't a lot of fools that dared to covet his territory.

Green and the others were fairly busy each day. There were a lot of newcomers in the wasteland, their basic necessities were needed to be managed. Otherwise, chaos would ensue. It was great that these supplies were already prepared by Zhao Hai, there weren't any shortages that happened. Additionally, the various groups also had their own managers, this allowed Green to be less busy than he needed to be.

Green and the others were currently on a meeting. In attendance were representatives from the Dwarves, Elves, Beastmen, and Humans. These people were in charge of managing their respective



people. Although the Black Wasteland had a lot of refugees, Zhao Hai still kept his strict rules in place. It was also made clear that the punishments on each rule breaking was the same for all races.

The major leaders weren't in opposition to this rule. The status and strength of Zhao Hai were too formidable, all of them were very respectful towards his decisions.'

When Green heard that Zhao Hai had come back, he immediately led the managers to see Zhao Hai. Zhao Hai talked to these people, asked them about their situation, and then had them go back to their posts.

After the managers had left, Zhao Hai immediately turned to Green and said, "Grandpa Gree, how are things going? Did any of those 9th ranks from before break through to God-rank?"

Green shook his head and said, "Not a single one. Origin Sword Saint was the closest one. Those 9th rank beasts would have it much harder to reach God-rank compared to the Humans. Young Master, did something happen?"

Zhao Hai nodded, then he reported what happened with the Divine Race to Green. After Green heard Zhao Hai's words, he knit his brows and said, "This is really quite troublesome. Young Master, I think the most important thing that we need to do is to spread what happened to the Radiant Empire. Otherwise, people from the continent would still think that the Divine Race are good people. If 'they still held belief in the Divine Race, then they might cause internal problems to our side.

Zhao Hai nodded, "When the time comes, I'll have the major powers do this. Our main concern is our lack of people. And once the Divine Race discovers about the Black Wasteland, then they would surely come and target it first. First is because this is our root, and the other reason is because they really hate me now."

Green nodded, then he said, "Young Master, how do you plan to deal with this?"

Zhao Hai thought for a moment before he withdrew the three divine artifacts that he had taken from the Radiant Church. Although these three artifacts had been integrated to the Blood Ghost Staff, Zhao Hai could still take them out. After all, even if the three artifacts had great powers, they were still quite inferior to the Blood Ghost Staff.

Zhao Hai gave the three artifacts over to Green and said, “Grandpa Green, take these three divine artifacts. These things were handed over to the Radiant Church by the Divine Race. Now, they are all under the Space’s control. You can use this sword of judgement. The radiant staff will be given to Grandma Marine while the book will be handed over to Grandpa Kun. Keep these things as a secret. Once the Divine Race attacks, you can use them to resist for quite some time. I will immediately come over and help as soon as I receive word.”

Green wasn’t polite, he took the three artifacts and said, “Alright. Young Master, you need to be careful. Right, how are Berry and Shue doing?”

# Chapter 723 – Adjusting Strategies

---

When Zhao Hai heard Green, he couldn't help but smile lightly as he replied, "They had been great. Shue and Berry managed to comprehend a Domain. Right, in two days, when the second batch of herbs matures, we'll immediately have Shue promote his clones. At that point, our strength would even be greater."

Green clapped his hand and said, "Fantastic! We'll be confident in facing the Demons and the Divine Race by then. Right, Young Master, what are you planning to do in the future?"

Zhao Hai calmly replied, "Let's wait for the Divine Race to attack us when their shield disappears. At that time, we'll take the offense to them. I'll get an army and give them spatial water in order to be raised to 8th rank and then 9th rank. Only this composition could manage to face our two enemies. Even if other people are eager to help, all that would be waiting for them is death!"

Green knit his brows and said, "Wouldn't that reveal the existence of the Space?"

Zhao Hai shook his head and said, "I don't think so. The only thing that they would discover is the fact that I have a formula to increase one's strength, the Space would never be connected."

Green nodded, "Alright, at the worst, people will die. Young Master, you don't need to worry about the things here. There won't be any problems."

Zhao Hai nodded and said, "Don't be too strict on the refugees. As long as they don't make a huge mistake, then that would be fine. After all, these people are in a new environment. If you push them too much, then they might think that we are bullying them."

Green smiled and said, "Young Master can rest assured, we have yet to punish someone. Everyone here respects the Young Master's

instructions. But if we find someone, then we guarantee that he wouldn't be punished too hard."

Zhao Hai nodded, "Then that's good. The continent has been plunged into hard times. The Divine Race had changed the laws of the heaven and earth. This would surely bring about some consequences. The Divine Race are truly scums, they even used such a method."

Green was confused at Zhao Hai's statement, he looked at Zhao Hai and asked, "Young Master, is the change in the laws really that serious?"

Zhao Hai forced a smile and said, "Naturally. In the past, the Ark Continent was an independent plane, it had its own laws. Now that these laws had been changed, it had shattered the continent's division towards the Demon Realm and the Divine Realm. These two higher planes might not find trouble with this, but the Ark continent would surely feel the hardships. With the Ark Continent being disturbed, I'm afraid that we would be susceptible to more invasions from other planes in the future."

Green stared for a moment before his expression changed, "It's like that? When that happens, then wouldn't the continent be destroyed?"

Green's worries held true basis. The reason why the Ark Continent was invaded by the Demons in the first place was because of the initial action made by the Divine Realm, having a God descend. Now that the laws had been changed even more, the consequences would surely be more severe. The Ark Continent was fortunate that it hadn't been destroyed in the first place.

Zhao Hai smiled bitterly, this was only his guess. But this guess had been made while he was connected to the heavens because of the Dao Lotus. What he understood was only a few things, so he could only make an intelligent guess at this point.

When Green saw Zhao Hai's expression, his chest couldn't help

but feel heavy. If what Zhao Hai said was true, then the disaster for the Ark Continent has just started.

Upon looking at Green's face, Zhao Hai comforted him, "Grandpa Green you don't need to think about it too deeply. In the worst case scenario, we can all just hide inside the Space."

Green nodded, then he knit his eyebrows and said, "Young Master, this outcome has surely been thought of by the Divine Race. Wouldn't it be detrimental for their goals if the Ark Continent were to be unsafe?"

Zhao Hai thought about it, and then he said, "That may be possible, however, we can't make solid judgements this early on. When we come in contact with the Divine Race, then it may be possible for us to be clear about it. Alright, Grandpa Green, I won't be staying for long. I'll be heading to the Buddha Empire now to take a look."

Green nodded, "Young Master, you don't need to worry about here." Zhao Hai nodded, then he gave a signal to Laura and the others before they entered the Space. Then Zhao Hai took Shue and Berry to Rising Sun City.

Rising Sun City was the most forward defense against the Demon Race. Originally, Zhao Hai didn't want to come here. However, since he was most familiar with the people transferred from Demon City, he decided to upgrade the strengths of the people here first.

Moreover, he came here to trade Shiying. Zhao Hai didn't have too many God-rank experts. Therefore, he can only leave Shiying here to guard the place. But now, he has a lot of light element God-rank undead. The light element is extremely strong against the Demons. Because of this, Zhao Hai prepared to have Shiying go against the Divine Race while leaving some light element undead here.

Although the Demons have gone silent and had paused their

construction, Zhao Hai knew that all of this was because of the changes to the Ark Continent's laws. The Demon should be revising their plans at this time.

In the past, the laws of the Ark Continent were still present. Even if the Demons wanted to attack the continent, then they wouldn't be able to send too many God-ranks. Because of this, they decided to build a city and steadily advance, stationing God-ranks on each forward city as they slowly devour the continent.

The laws of the Ark Continent also didn't allow too many God-ranks inside it. This was the reason why the Demons didn't dare to send a lot of God-ranks.

The Demons had done a lot of experiments in the past years. Although they didn't think of changing the laws of the continent like the Divine Race, they were still able to create a concrete plan. These experiments included sending God-ranks to the continent to see how many experts the continent would be able to support, and also how long they could stay.

After constant experiments, the Demons have finally gained their results. The laws of the continent only allowed up to five God-ranks to enter. If a single God-rank enters, then the continent can allow this expert to stay for half a year. But this God-rank also needed to adjust for a month before he can move. After one month, the God-rank would be able to display 70% of his power. In three months, he can show 80%. Then after more than five months in the continent, the expert can achieve 90% of its power. After reaching this peak, the God-rank would then need to leave after half a day.

This was the reason why the Demons opened a spatial rift. And this was also the reason why the Demon Dragon King and the four others were the only ones sent as the vanguard.

For five God-ranks, the continent would only allow them to stay for three months. Half a month to adapt to the laws, then after

that half-month, they would be able to use 60%. After one month, 70%. Two months, 80%. Then on the third month, they would return.

This was the law of the Ark Continent. The Demons had regarded this law heavily. They sent out five God-ranks this time in order to secure the Demonic Abyss. They were afraid that the Ark Continent's people would destroy their city.

The Demons knew that it didn't matter what they did, as long as they used the Blood Void, then the destructive display would certainly alert the residents of the Ark Continent. Because of this, the Demon Realm didn't hesitate to send five God-rank experts.

However, when the Demon Dragon King and the others arrived in the Ark Continent, they were immediately met with Zhao Hai, even before they had completely adapted to the laws.

Because they weren't able to adapt, the Demon Dragon King's group couldn't display all of their strength. Although they were God-ranks with strong abilities, their power were still reduced by the continent. Without adapting to the laws, these God-ranks would need to return to the Demon Realm after one month if they decided to disregard the laws. This situation made it hard for the Demons. If they were forced to go back after one month, then Zhao Hai would be able to completely lock them out, seeing that he can use 100% of his strength. Shue and Berry were also present, with them in hand, Zhao Hai would be able to deal with every God-rank that the Demon Realm would send. One could say that the Divine Race had provided the Demons some breathing room for their future plans.

Now that the laws had been changed, there was no need for the Demons to make their city. They can just send their God-ranks in along with their army in order to conquer the entire Ark Continent. They would start by capturing the cities as they advanced to all the corners of the continent.

The Demons needed to be swirt because the Divine Race was already here. If they continued to build their city, then it was possible that the Divine Race would have already conquered the continent. The Demons would be ordering soup without being able to drink it. Because of this, the Demons have decided to change their strategy.

After thinking up to this point, Zhao Hai decided to trade Shiying with the light element undead. Although Shiying wasn't weak, he wasn't the strongest Demon either. His techniques were all made in the Demon Realm, it wasn't ideal for him to face the Demons in the battlefield since he couldn't display his strength to its full potential.

The light element undead, on the other hand, were different. The light element was used to suppress the Demons. Even if these undead weren't high-level, only being Demigods, they can still get an advantage due to their numbers. Along with Besmir and the others, they would surely be able to go against the Demon attack.



## Chapter 724 – Promotion

---

Besmir was still inside the General's residence. Although they already had a lot of reinforcements, Besmir still didn't have a moment of relief. He had seen the fight between Zhao Hai and the God-ranked Demons. To be honest, upon seeing the battle, a deep anxiety rose inside him. The strength that Zhao Hai and the Demons had shown was just too tremendous. Each punch and kick that they did seems to be able to move mountains. Facing enemies like these needed more than just ordinary soldiers, they needed 9th ranks if they wanted to keep up. Besmir was very clear about Zhao Hai's importance in resisting the Demons and the Divine Race, but the help that Besmir and the others can provide was just too low.

Because of this thought, Besmir worked hard. He completed every single task diligently. This was to minimize Zhao Hai's worries as he battled the Demon Experts. There was little time when he relaxes, he was almost always inside the battle room. Those who were with him were almost scared of his frantic work.

While Besmir was looking at the sand table, a voice suddenly came from outside, "We have seen Mister!"

Besmir stared, then he quickly recovered himself as he turned around to see Zhao Hai. Besmir immediately stepped forward and gave a salute, "Mister, please come in."

Zhao Hai nodded, then he entered the battle room. He turned to Besmir and smiled faintly, "General Besmir, you've been working hard. I came here today because I have something for you to do. Have everyone leave the room. Berry, Shue, go guard the door."

After hearing this order, Besmir couldn't help but be startled. However, he immediately had everyone leave the room as Shue and Berry guarded the entrance. Zhao Hai sat on a chair and beckoned towards another in front of him, "General, please take a seat."

Besmir was quite anxious about Zhao Hai's actions, however, he still sat down and listened intently. Zhao Hai smiled at Besmir and said, "General, tell me about what you think of this war. No need to hold back."

Although Besmir didn't understand where Zhao Hai wanted to take the conversation, he still nodded and said, "Alright. Mister, to be honest, I really don't feel good about this war. The Demons are just too strong. And since the Divine Race managed to shatter the heavens, causing ripples everywhere, I also reckon that they're quite strong. The reason why I don't feel good is because of you, Mister. You are strong, but as for us, we can only do so much. There are too few people in the continent who can provide sufficient help to you. I'm not too optimistic about the future."

Zhao Hai nodded, he replied, "What you said is true. The present situation isn't really good. But we aren't left with nothing. Everyone knows that I have a lot of good things in my hands. And those things are truly unique in the continent. Nobody understood why this was the case. In fact, there really isn't anything mystical about it, I just happen to have a team that specializes on alchemy and refining. Our goal is to develop a way to quickly improve one's strength."

Besmir listened intently to Zhao Hai. When he heard the last words, his eyes couldn't help but shine. He can now understand where Zhao Hai's conversation would end up.

Seeing Besmir's expression, Zhao Hai smiled faintly and said, "Right, the General is a smart person. It seems like you already understood why I came here today."

Besmir looked at Zhao Hai and said, "Is Mister saying that the potion has been completed?"

Zhao Hai nodded, "Correct. The potion has been finished. It doesn't have any side effects. After drinking it, average people would reach 8th rank within two days. After reaching 8th rank,

they can then drink another potion that can help them reach 9th rank in one day. Only by doing so would we gain a chance against both the Demons and the Divine Race.”

Besmir looked blankly at Zhao Hai. If he wasn't aware of how strong Zhao Hai was, then he wouldn't be able to believe any of this at all. He would just think that Zhao Hai was crazy.

In the past, 9th ranks were the top existences in the continent. 9th ranks were very hard to reach for ordinary people. Now, Zhao Hai told him that he can make 8th ranks in two days, and then a 9th rank in one. A 9th rank experts in just three days? This was something beyond crazy.

Zhao Hai smiled at Besmir's expression, he turned his hand as a bottle appeared, “If you don't believe me, then go and try it.”

Zhao Hai placed the bottle of spatial water on the table and then said, “Drink this potion. Since you are 7th rank, then you'll reach 8th rank by tomorrow. When that time comes, I shall give you another potion to promote you to 9th rank.”

Besmir looked at Zhao Hai, and then at the bottle on the table. In the end, he nodded and didn't say anything before taking up the jar and drank it up in one go.

Seeing Besmir's action, Zhao Hai faintly smiled and said, “Go and take a rest. Stabilize your breathing. Come see me tomorrow.” Besmir nodded. Then Zhao Hai stood up and said, “Alright, then I won't be disturbing you any further, take a rest.” Besmir stood up, gave Zhao Hai a salute and then left the battle room. Originally, the General's residence was the City Lord's Mansion. The current battle room was the mansion's lobby. There was a small guest room at the side of the lobby, that room had now become Besmir's bedroom.

When he saw Besmir leave, Zhao Hai turned around and walked out. Outside the room were the other enlisted officers. All of them were respectfully standing, nobody dared to speak a word.

Zhao Hai looked at them calmly and said, “General Besmir had something to do today. Don’t disturb him. Leave two guards to protect the entrance. If you need anything, then just hold it off until tomorrow.” All of them responded, nobody made a comment. All of them were aware about Zhao Hai’s status. He wasn’t only an elder and a prince, he was a God-ranked expert, a peak existence in the Continent right now.

One must say that in the past, the 9th ranks of the continent could see themselves as Zhao Hai’s equal. But now, nobody would dare do so, Zhao Hai was at the apex of strength.

After the group left, Zhao Hai released Alien and then entered along with Shue and Berry before going back to the Space.

Laura and the others were currently handling material allocation and transport. At the same time, they were also sending letters to the Emperors of the continent, informing them about what happened to the Radiant Empire. This would be used in order to spread information about the atrocities of the church, making the population lose faith in them.

Besides this matter, Zhao Hai also made them ask the Emperors for their most trusted people. Moreover, Zhao Hai also stated that he wanted to promote the strengths of those on the list. As for those people that the Emperors didn’t trust, Zhao Hai wouldn’t bother with them in the future.

The Emperors immediately believed Zhao Hai’s words. They already knew Zhao Hai’s strength. Don’t think that the people in Demon City were all from the Buddha Empire. Among the Adventurers and Mercenaries were spies of the other major powers. Because of this, it didn’t take too long before Zhao Hai’s fight has been made known to the entire continent.

After knowing Zhao Hai’s strength, these people weren’t worried about being fooled anymore. With Zhao Hai’s capabilities, then he would have already acted, he wouldn’t wait until now.

The most happy about this situation were the people in Lyon Empire. Zhao Hai was their current Emperor. Having such a powerful ruler, it wasn't strange for the population to rejoice.

Because of this as well as other reasons, the Empires immediately sent their lists over to Zhao Hai. They didn't hesitate a bit and send a huge pile of names. Upon seeing this list, Zhao Hai couldn't help but chuckle, this was because almost all of these people were 8th ranks.

For Zhao Hai, this was a good thing. This would eliminate the period of turning them into 9th ranks.

But since these people were the trusted people of the major Empires, it would be impossible to direct them to the battlefield. However, Zhao Hai wasn't counting on them to be on the battlefield. He wanted to use these people as a proof. As long as these people get promoted, then everyone in the continent would have faith on Zhao Hai's method. When that time comes, then there won't be any issue whenever Zhao Hai wanted to promote additional people.

After the names were sent, Zhao Hai immediately took some water from the Blood Pond and then had them sent to the different Imperial Palaces for the people on the list to drink while he stayed in the Buddha Empire.

After handling these matter, Zhao Hai finally relaxed. He rested inside the Space as he prepared to go to battle at any time.

Zhao Hai was also waiting for the herbs in the Space to mature. He wanted to make God-ranked potions as soon as possible. The Divine Race were waiting for their shield to expire, only then would they be able to start their invasion of the continent.

After having rested inside the Space, Zhao Hai appeared on the City Lord's mansion the next morning. At this time, Besmir had also woken up. He had truly become 8th rank. When he saw Zhao Hai, he was very excited, he immediately gave a bow and said,

“Mister, thank you very much. I have already reached 8th rank.”

Zhao Hai nodded, then he withdrew another bottle, this one had water from the Blood Pond. Then he gave the bottle to Besmir and said, “The potion in this bottle will promote you to 9th rank. After becoming 9th rank, I’ll have to ask you to gather some trustworthy people in Rising Sun City. After gathering them, go and call me. I’ll improve them to 9th rank so that they can have more impact on the future battles.”

## Chapter 725 – God-rank Army

---

Standing calmly in front of the Processing Machine was Zhao Hai. He looked at the machine as it swallowed up the materials on the ground, the gold coins on his inventory a million coins less. Then the machine started its timer.

This was the second time that he was making a God-rank potion. Because of this, he was now quite familiar with the process. The only thing he needed to do was wait, when the time comes, Shue's clones would also become 9th ranks.

One must say that Zhao Hai was very lucky in having Shue as his subordinate. Shue's cloning ability was just too formidable, it was basically a one-man army. Now that he can drink another God-rank potion, his clones would now become 9th rank as well. This thought was just too scary.

At this moment, Zhao Hai was worried whether Shue's God-rank clones would also be able to establish a Domain. If they did, then it would be very good for Zhao Hai's side.

The timer beeped down unceasingly. Zhao Hai couldn't help but let out a long sigh as he said, "I hope our time is enough."

The one who heard him was the nearby Berry, she looked at Zhao Hai and said, "Feel relieved, Brother Hai, we certainly have enough time."

Shue looked at Zhao Hai and said, "Young Master, rest assured, this Shue will definitely be of use, definitely." Zhao Hai smiled faintly and patted Shue on the shoulder as he said, "Everything will be alright, there's no need to worry about it too much. You will certainly be a huge help. In the future, you and your clones would be part of the main army. A man that can turn into a thousand would be terrifying in the battlefield. Hahaha. The Divine Race wouldn't come soon, but even if they do, we still don't need to be afraid of them. To be honest, I want the Divine Race to

come sooner, I really wanted to see how strong they are.” Shue nodded, but his eyes were still firm. Then Shue looked at Zhao Hai and said, “Young Master, can I ask you for one thing?”

Zhao Hai stared, then he smiled and said, “Say it, there’s no need to be too polite to me.” Shue nodded and then said, “Young Master, can you promote Shun next time? Out of all the people on our side, Shun is the most compatible to be my partner in the battlefield. But if the Young Master has any plans, then you don’t have to consider my request.”

Zhao Hai laughed, and then he patted Shue on the shoulder and said, “Hahaha, I thought that it was something serious. Don’t worry, focus on having your clones become God-rank first. After that happens, then your Young Master would help Shun become 9th rank.” Shue was overjoyed by Zhao Hai’s reply, he quickly replied, “Thank you, Young Master.” Zhao Hai patted his shoulder once more and said, “Alright, let’s head back in. Let’s drink a couple of cups. We’ve been too busy these days, we need to relax.”

Zhao Hai’s heart felt warm after listening to Shue’s request. Shue hadn’t asked for anything ever since he followed him. This was the first time that Shue made a request, but it actually wasn’t for himself, instead, it was for a friend. After becoming God-rank, Shue didn’t forget about Shun. This made Zhao Hai very happy.

After they arrived at the Space, Zhao Hai made Meg prepared several dishes. Then he sat with Shue in the dining room while having a few cups of liquor. On the other hand, in every city in the Buddha Empire, people who had been placed on the list have emerged to be 8th ranks, some even got promoted to 9th.

These 8th ranks can be promoted later on. As for these 9th ranks, Zhao Hai asked Cai’er to observe their current actions.

A 9th rank expert was a significant person in the Continent. Although these people were elected, it was still difficult to be assured that they won’t do anything excessive upon becoming 9th



rank. But if they do, then Zhao Hai would definitely be impolite.

Besmir was now 9th rank. Aside from him, there were also quite a number of people who had become 9th rank in Rising Sun City. These people included Elves, Beastmen, and Dwarves.

As the number of 9th ranks increase, Besmir's mood had become better and better. A lot of 9th ranks meant that Rising Sun City's fighting strength was strong. For Besmir, this was truly a good thing.

Additionally, among these 9th ranks were Elves, Beastmen, and Dwarves, races who found it hard to upgrade their strength. However, once these people become 9th ranks, their strengths would be a lot more than any Human experts.

Besmir's current emotion wasn't unique, it had also propagated all throughout the continent. In the Buddha Empire, 9th ranks started appearing in each of the cities. This caused the people to have their morale increase.

However, although these people had become strong 9th ranks, nobody dared to act arrogantly. Earlier, there were some people who had become 9th ranks who thought that they were already great. Zhao Hai might not care about normal arrogance, but when these people started to do evil things, Zhao Hai immediately sent and undead to seize this person. After that, the undead didn't hesitate to execute this person in front of the whole city before turning the person into an undead.

Zhao Hai's lightning-fast methods truly frightened everyone. This caused the recently promoted 9th ranks to behave themselves.

Two days had already passed by, Zhao Hai and the others were in front of the Processing Machine. The timer on the machine was quickly approaching zero. When the timer turned zero and the beeping stopped, the God-ranked potion immediately appeared in front of them.

Zhao Hai didn't hesitate as he took the potion and handed it over to Shue, "Shue, drink this immediately. I reckon that the Divine Race would be here soon. We need all the strength we can muster."

Shue didn't waste any words, he immediately took the potion and downed it in one go. This time, Shue didn't need to stabilize himself. His body just shone a blue light for a moment, then after the light vanished, Shue turned to Zhao Hai and said, "Young Master." Then another Shue appeared on his side. Zhao Hai can sense the aura of a God-rank expert on this clone of Shue.

Zhao Hai nodded and said, "Good, good. Right, does he have a Domain?"

Shue nodded, "He has, Young Master. After all, he is another version of me. The only reason he isn't God-rank before was because there wasn't enough energy in the first potion. Now that I had enough, my clones' immediately got improved. He will have everything that I have, including my Domain."

Zhao Hai felt great happiness, "Great. That's fantastic! Hahaha. I really am envious of your divergent ability. Good, good. Let's go out and see when the Divine Race would arrive. I can't wait to see their expressions." Then Zhao Hai took Berry and Shue out of the Space.

The three of them went out and arrived inside Upper Bank City.. This city was also one of the big cities in the Buddha Empire. But now, the place was completely deserted. It was actually part of Zhao Hai's initial plan for defense, however, due to the sudden appearance of the Divine Race, they had no choice but to vacate this city.

Zhao Hai wanted to have his first clash with the Divine Race in this city. This was because of its good position as well as it being the first city to be encountered if one were to come from the Radiant Empire. It would be impossible for the Divine Race to miss this city.

The reason Zhao Hai was assured was because he knew how arrogant the Divine Race were. From the way they act to the way they talk, these Divine Race people would definitely place their crosshairs on Zhao Hai. Zhao Hai just killed the Pope in front of them while also taking three of their divine artifacts. In this situation, Zhao Hai doesn't need to go to the Divine Race, the Divine Race would be the ones who will go to him.

After all these considerations, Zhao Hai felt relieved as he waited inside the city. He must teach the Divine Race a lesson, let them understand that the Ark Continent wasn't their own backyard. They couldn't just take a walk here whenever they wanted. The Ark Continent wasn't their pig pen, and its residents aren't their farm animals. If they wanted to conquer the Ark Continent, then they would need to show real skill. Even if they went all out, the end result was still completely unknown.

Originally, Upper Bank city held a population of a million people. Additionally, this was also the closest Buddha Empire city from the Radiant Empire. It itself held great strategic significance. Because of this, the walls of the city were quite thick. Moreover, the city was also protected by a magic formation. Although this formation was nothing in Zhao Hai's eyes, it still proved how valuable this city was.

After Zhao Hai's group of three appeared in the city, Laura and the others followed them out. These days, the women were very busy inside the Space, they went out this time to taste some outside air.

Even if the environment inside the Space was very good, staying for too long inside it would also make people depressed. A change of scenery was always good.

The group stood on top of the city wall, looking towards the distant Radiant Empire. At this moment, Lizzy opened her mouth, "The population of this city used to be 1 million. Now it had turned into a ghost town. Sigh, Human affairs are truly unstable."

Zhao Hai turned to Lizzy before looking at the empty city streets, “This is already good. If you go to the Radiant Empire, not only would you see a dead atmosphere, you would also see dead bodies strewn around. Seeing all those dead people just on the streets would make you gasp, that scene was just too terrifying.” Lizzy felt her complexion pale, she couldn’t speak. At this time, Shue turned to Zhao Hai and said, “Young Master, we should see whether we can make good use of this city’s magic formation. Although it can only be used for defense, it is much better than nothing.”

# Chapter 726 – Crystal Stone

---

Zhao Hai looked at how big the city was. With this size, it was impossible for it to not have a defensive magic formation. However, the capabilities of this formation was too limited when facing a God-rank expert.

But this didn't mean that formations were useless. On the contrary, magic formations came in many types. Moreover, the size of the formation also needed to be taken into consideration.

The defensive capabilities of these magic formations mainly depend on the crystal stones used. If the energy inside these crystals was formidable, then the formation would be formidable as well. If the energy of the crystal was too low, then the magic formation would also be weak.

The issue with this was the fact that the Ark Continent rarely had big crystal stones. The current crystal stones on the Ark Continent couldn't even block the attacks of 9th rank experts, much less God-ranks.

Naturally, Shue knew about all of this before he told his idea to Zhao Hai. After seeing that Zhao Hai was considering it, he added, "Young Master, have forgotten about the crystal stones that you discovered back in the Northern Icefield? Those crystals were very full. You can try and see what effects those would have on the city's magic formation.

Zhao Hai stared, then he patted his head and said, "I actually forgot about those. Good, then I'll try it immediately. Shue, you take care with the installation of those crystals while I head out of the city. After those crystals are installed, you go and feel the energy of the formation, see if it can produce sufficient energy for our use. Record all of your findings."

Shue understood what Zhao Hai meant, if this experiment ends with a success, then its impact for the continent would surely be

huge.

Shue nodded as he made his clones appear. Zhao Hai waved his hand, withdrawing a pile of crystal stones and gave them to Shue. The clones immediately took the crystals and placed them alongside the city's magic formation.

Zhao Hai was now outside the city. He quietly observed the situation to see if the crystals would be useful in protecting the city.

Not long after Zhao Hai went out, a layer of protective shield covered the city. This shield wasn't the same as what Zhao Hai saw before. In the past, the protective shield that Zhao Hai saw had a pale yellow color. On the other hand, the shield in front of his was actually blue in color, one could even see some ripples occurring here and there.

Zhao Hai stared at this protective shield, he couldn't help but place his hand on its surface. It didn't take too long before a chilling cold air was felt. Zhao Hai gawked, but he wasn't surprised. After all, the crystals that he put out were ice crystal stones.

Then Zhao Hai established his Domain, he waved his hand as a giant palm appeared. The palm made a fist as it attacked the protective shield.

The result surprised Zhao hai, the shield actually wasn't destroyed. Conversely, the the protective shield blasted out a cool air, freezing the big hand.

Zhao Hai didn't think that this protective shield would have this effect. He shook his Domain and attacked the protective shield with full force. The protective shield rippled, but it wasn't broken. Moreover, Zhao Hai can feel the waves of cold air transmitted from his Domain. This chilling wave was very strong. If a Demigod were to be careless, then they would definitely be injured by this shield.

Zhao Hai nodded and then retrieved his Domain. After that, he turned to Shue as the latter dissolved the magic formation.

After Zhao Hai returned to the City, he immediately went to Shue and said, “What did you get? How much energy did my attack take from the crystals?”

Shue promptly replied, “Young Master, the crystals are very formidable. Your attack took almost no energy away from the crystals. Moreover, I discovered that as long as one injects energy into the crystal, it can recharge itself indefinitely.”

Zhao Hai was shaken, then he immediately took a new crystal stone from the Space and poured his energy into it. Strangely, no matter how hard he injects his energy, he couldn't do it. Zhao Hai stared for a moment, then he turned to Shue and said, “Shue, give me one of those used crystals.”

Shue nodded, then he took a piece of crystal and gave it to Zhao Hai. Upon receiving the crystal, Zhao Hai immediately tried to inject his energy into it. This time, it didn't take too much effort for the crystal to accept energy. Before long, the crystal was filled to the brim. Zhao Hai made some calculations, the energy that he had injected was the same energy it took for an ordinary attack. It seems like the magic formation didn't consume too much energy and it can also be used repeatedly.

After thinking up to this, Zhao Hai took a used crystal and then gave it to Laura, “Laura, try pouring your energy into this crystal.”

There was a reason why Zhao Hai did this. After becoming God-rank, one's energy would undergo a change, it would become much purer than before. Moreover, it would also lose its original attribute, it was simply pure energy.

Such pure energy can surely power a crystal. However, the general strength of the continent only involves 9th ranks. One must know that 9th ranks still had their attributes. Laura's attribute was fire, which happened to be the exact opposite

element to the ice crystal. Zhao Hai wanted to see whether Laura can pour her energy to charge the crystal.

Laura tried it for a moment before she shook her head and said, “Brother Hai, it’s no good. I can’t pour anything into the crystal.” Zhao Hai nodded, then he turned to Megan and said, “Megan, you try.”

Megan nodded, then she received the stone from Laura and then tried to pour energy into it. She didn’t expect that she would be successful. Before long, the crystal was filled. Megan turned to Zhao Hai and said, “Elder Brother Hai, I can pour my energy into it. The crystal has been filled.”

Zhao Hai nodded, then took another used crystal and gave it to Meg, having her try. In the end, Meg was unable to pour her energy inside. Zhao Hai can now affirm that the crystal would only attract energies of the same attribute or God-rank energy. Other attributes were no good.

Zhao Hai turned his head to Megan and said, “Megan, how much energy did it take you to fill the crystal up?”

Megan recalled for a moment and said, “Not that much, approximately about 1% of my total energy. I can recover it after a while.”

Zhao Hai nodded, then he smiled faintly and said, “That’ good. Let’s see how those Divine Race fellows attack me this time.”

At this moment, Laura turned to Zhao Hai and said, “Brother Hai, are you planning to have these crystals power the magic formations in the continent?”

Zhao Hai nodded, “You should be aware of the situation regarding the major cities in the continent. Aside from our help, they really don’t have much in terms of defense against the Divine Race. If the Divine Race decided to cause large scale trouble, then the continent would surely be placed into turmoil. If our rear gets



chaotic, then our job in the frontline would be affected.”

Laura understood what Zhao Hai meant. The present situation was like this. Even if the Divine Race were yet to appear, they still needed to make sure that everyone was completely safe.

Iron Hammer said that the Divine Realm was much different compared to the Ark Continent. Newborn children in the Divine Realm were already 8th ranks. When they grow up, they would freely enter 9th rank. Upon cultivation, they can easily reach God-rank. This was a terrifying thing to think of.

Think about it, a plane that allows the existence of God-ranks, even if the amount of this God-ranks wasn't a lot, they would still add up to a terrifying amount. Because of this, Zhao Hai needed to prepare in dealing with the Divine Race.

Laura looked at Zhao Hai and said, “Brother Hai, since these crystals can replace ordinary crystals, then would they work on magic cannons as well? Will the power of the cannons increase?”

When he heard Laura, Zhao Hai stared, then he immediately nodded and said, “This is a good idea. Let's go and make some experiments.” Then the group's figures vanished as they used the Space to transfer to the Lyon Empire.

No matter what, Zhao Hai was still the Emperor of the Lyon Empire. Doing his experiments here would certainly have no issues.

Although Zhao Hai was the in-name Emperor of the Lyon Empire, the one running everything here was actually Evan. The entire Lyon Empire knew that Zhao Hai was busy in the frontline, battling with the Demons and the Divine Race. Because of this, the Empire followed Evan's instructions.

Fortunately, Evan had ruled the Purcell Duchy, so he had great experience in management. He knew what to do with great Nobles, therefore, there weren't much troubles in the Lyon Empire. At the

same time, these Great Nobles didn't dare to cause any trouble. Everyone in the continent knew about how powerful Zhao Hai was. If they drag Zhao Hai behind, then they would definitely suffer.

As soon as Zhao Hai and the others arrived at the Lyon Empire's Imperial Palace, they immediately went towards the Great Hall. When the Great Nobles saw Zhao Hai, all of them immediately bowed and said, "We have seen His Majesty. Long live!"

Zhao Hai nodded, then he looked at the Nobles and said, "I have something I need to do. Go find me a quiet place, it must be very spacious. Prepare some magic cannons as well. Remember to make this thing known to as few people as possible. Find people who are trustworthy and make them help out."

Although these Nobles didn't understand what Zhao Hai wanted to do, all of them still nodded and prepared everything. Evan looked at Zhao Hai, confused, then he asked, "Little Hai, what's happening? Did you discover something?"

Zhao Hai nodded, then he retold his discovery of the wondrous properties of the crystal. He also took out a crystal and handed it over to Evan. This crystal had great energy within, however, Evan can't feel the energy when he held it in his hand. There wasn't any cold and chilling sensation when holding the crystal, but Evan can see the formidable energy inside, it can truly wound a Demigod expert. This crystal was truly unusual.

# Chapter 727 – Experiment

---

There was a valley not too far from the Lyon Empire's capital. This valley held no specialties, only rocks, nobody lived here. This place was called Stone Valley.

It was a different day in the generally empty Stone Valley. In this virtually unnoticed place came many people. Moreover, these people were the most influential personages in the Lyon Empire. A single cough from one of them would be able to move an entire Lyon Empire army.

Why would powerful people come to a place where birds won't even defecate in? Along with these group of people were the cavalry of the Lyon Empire. These soldiers were carefully selected so there wasn't any problem with them.

Zhao Hai came in using an ordinary carriage this time, he didn't want anyone to know that he was here. This time, he came to do some experiments, so he brought ten magic cannons for the tests.

The soldiers in the valley quickly set up the magic cannons before they went to the sides. Zhao Hai didn't dare have the soldiers operate the cannon, he was afraid that accidents would happen, killing someone in the process.

Zhao Hai went towards a magic cannon and inspected it carefully. This magic cannon was the most advanced and powerful weapon in the continent. But this magic cannon didn't look like the cannons that were seen back on earth, it looked more like a satellite receiver rather than a cannon. The power of this magic cannon depended on the crystal stone. People would place the crystal in the middle of the cannon, then they would activate the magic formation to gather the energy inside the crystal. Then the energy would pass through the edges of the cannon and reflected onto a small plate in front of the cannon. This metal plate also held a magic formation in it, when sufficient energy gets gathered, then

the cannon would proceed to fire.

The fired beam would then be sent towards the target, reaching the energy level equal to the crystal used. However, it is a pity that the crystal stones used to fire these magic cannons were of inferior quality, making its power quite weak. This was the reason why magic cannons weren't used in the battle between the Demons and the Divine Race. But this time, the crystal that Zhao Hai had brought was not the same as those inferior ones. With the high energy contained within them, Zhao Hai prohibited soldiers from manning the cannons lest an accident would happen. The cannons were operated by Zhao Hai's undead. At this moment, Zhao Hai took out a piece of crystal and handed it over to the undead who then placed it on the middle of the cannon and then pressed the activation button.

Not long after the button has been pressed, the entire magic cannon suddenly shone a blue light. The blue light went on to circle the magic formation before being focused on the metal plate on the middle. Upon arriving at the small plate, a beam of blue light immediately shot out.

The blue light looked the same as a laser beam. The light penetrated the surface of the mountain but to Zhao Hai and the others' surprise, nothing happened. There wasn't an explosion nor were pieces of rock being thrown around, everything was as normal as they were before.

Zhao Hai stared, then his figure moved and approached the wall of the mountain. He wanted to know what happened to the wall, and he couldn't believe that the blue light did nothing. Just as Zhao Hai arrived by the wall, he immediately felt a chilling cold air. The cold was quite strong that Zhao Hai could already feel that he was in world of snow and ice just a meter away from the wall. Although there were no changes on the wall, it was evident that the soil around it had turned into permafrost.

Zhao Hai immediately dug into the mountain wall. Only after

digging through five meters of rock did the mountain return to being warm. In other words, the chilling effect had actually penetrated through five meters of solid mountain wall.

This was a good result. Three meters would already be good enough, but it actually managed to make it five. From this trial, it can be seen how powerful the magic cannon attack was.

Zhao Hai made some calculations. If this beam hit a 9th rank, then they would certainly turn to ice in mere seconds. God-ranked experts would also feel afraid of this cannon attack.

The others who had gathered here were also surprised by what happened. They knew about the power of a magic cannon. Even 100 magic cannons wouldn't be able to exhibit this effect.

Zhao Hai nodded, then he returned to the cannons. He made the undead continually fire the magic cannon. He wanted to see how many attacks it would take before the crystal ran out.

Before long, blue light flashes repeatedly until the crystal had been exhausted. Zhao Hai counted and saw that it would take 2318 shots before a full crystal gets depleted. 2318 Demigod-level attacks, this wasn't a small number.

Zhao Hai took the empty crystal out and examined it. The crystal was fully transparent, no energy was seen inside.

Zhao Hai turned his head and called an 8th rank expert over to input his energy into the empty crystal. The 8th rank quickly complied and poured some energy into the crystal. The crystal actually turned red from the original white, evidently showing that the energy placed inside was of the fire element.

Zhao Hai nodded, he can now understand what this white crystal was for. After a crystal was used up, then one could place energy of whatever element inside it. However, if there was still a sliver of ice element energy inside, then it would be impossible to place other types of energy into it.

However, Zhao Hai still had a question. Would this crystal be recharged over and over? Can it be used infinitely? This seemed to be unlikely.

Zhao Hai waited before the 8th rank completely used all of his energy up. Then he took the crystal and examined it. Zhao Hai found out that an 8th rank expert can only fill up to a fifth of the total capacity of a crystal. It seems like it needs five 8th rank experts in order to completely fill up one empty magic crystal. Zhao Hai recorded all of his findings, these would definitely be useful in the future.

Zhao Hai didn't fill the crystal up to full. Instead, he handed it over to the undead to use it. This time, the magic cannon fired a beam of red light. When this red light got in contact with the mountain wall, a loud explosion was immediately heard. A huge hole was blown out of the mountain face, ten meters across and three meters deep.

Such might wasn't small, but Zhao Hai's purpose this time was to consume the energy inside this crystal, so he didn't really care much about it. After having the undead fire the magic cannon and consume the energy inside the crystal, Zhao Hai placed a bit of energy inside the crystal and fired it again. This process repeated for ten times, after the tenth firing, the crystal finally cracked, rendering it useless.

Zhao Hai recorded this result and then he turned his attention to the magic cannon. He was quite sure that the magic cannons would also wear off. After being used multiple times, these cannons should become broken. Zhao Hai wanted to see at which point the cannons would break down.

Zhao Hai inspected the current state of the cannon. Although it can still be used, cracks were already seen on its surface, it seems like its life was soon to be used up.

Zhao Hai nodded and then traded the magic cannon for another

one. The experiments continued, one cannon after another. In the end, Zhao Hai found out that magic cannons can fire 2000 to 2500 times.

Upon completing his experiments, Zhao Hai returned to the Lyon Empire's Imperial Palace. Then when they arrived at the Great Hall, he turned to the Great Nobles and said, "I came back this time to see the capabilities of these crystals. These stones have been acquired by me back when I was exploring the Northern Icefield. The energy inside these crystals are very formidable, you should have seen it on the magic cannons earlier. The usage of these crystals aren't limited to magic cannons, they can power protective formations as well. When I return to the frontlines, I shall leave some of these crystals to you. Every instruction for its operation and properties shall be written carefully. Have these crystals delivered to the cities in the Lyon Empire for defensive purposes. If I were to discover that someone has been hoarding these crystals, then I will definitely be impolite."

These Nobles in the Lyon Empire were aware about how precious these crystals were. But they also needed to take Zhao Hai's threat into consideration. If Zhao Hai deemed them to be enemies, then they would be in opposition to the entire continent. With Zhao Hai's status, nobody would dare disregard his orders. Because of this, every single Noble replied, "Your will shall be done, Your Majesty."

Zhao Hai nodded, "Remember, only hand these crystals over to people that you absolutely trust. Take care of them extremely well, there shouldn't be any mistakes. When the Divine Race comes, these crystals would be extremely helpful in dealing with them.

The Nobles issued a sound of affirmation. Zhao Hai nodded, then he took out several crystals and handed them over to the Nobles present.

After completing all of these, Zhao Hai turned around and returned to the Space to head towards the Rosen Empire. Since he

already did his experiments, he can immediately hand the crystals over to the major Empires. He introduced their uses and properties and how they would be used to resist the Demons and the Divine Race. With these crystals, ordinary people could now be assured of their safety inside the cities of the continent, this was an extremely good thing.



# Chapter 728 – Shue of the Thousand Shadows

---

Heads covered with silver helmets, bodies donned with shiny silver armor, a long silver spear on their hands as well as a silver longsword on their waists. Although they were wearing full silver armor, they didn't seem to be encumbered at all. Their bodies were stably floating in mid-air.

At first glance, once couldn't see where this sea of silver men ends, they were just too numerous. All of them were just standing there quietly, as if waiting for something.

In front of this army was a group of white robed people. The ages of these people varied, but each and every one of them gave off a consecrated aura.

If Zhao Hai sees them, then he would definitely know that these people were of the Divine Race. The army of the Divine Race was no less than a million. They were now concentrated on the edge of the descended land, the soldiers were waiting for their inquisition.

In fact, they had a reason for being here, they weren't standing here for no reason. Today was the day that the protective shield would disappear. Once it was gone, then they would immediately start to conquer the entire Ark Continent.

What the Divine Race didn't know was the fact that Zhao Hai had long been aware of their action. Although Zhao Hai hadn't come to the new land for a while, he already had the Blood Ghost Staff explore the area. Because of this, he can always use the monitor in order to see the situation at the protective shield's vicinity. It would be impossible for Zhao Hai to miss this huge army concentrated on the border.

Zhao Hai was now inside Upper Bank City, ready to meet the Divine Race. In the past few days, he had sent people to the various

Empires and delivered the crystals. Moreover, Zhao Hai also sent his crystals to all the cities in the Buddha Empire. Although the occupied cities weren't a lot, they could still support themselves using the magic formations as well as the magic cannons.

At this point, the Ark Continent was prepared and is waiting for the Divine Race attack. Naturally, Zhao Hai didn't relax on his monitoring of the Demon Race. The God-ranks in the Demon camp had gotten more and more, their army increased while the construction of their city had become faster. What made Zhao Hai feel strange was the fact that the Demons were yet to attack the Ark Continent. Even Demon City that was the closest place faced no Demon invasion.

But after thinking further about the actions of the Demon Race, Zhao Hai didn't take too long to understand what they were doing. The Demons were waiting for an opportunity. They knew that the Divine Race would attack the Ark Continent first, and not them. Because of this, the Demons planned to keep their position and wait for any substantial result to come out.

If Zhao Hai and the others were defeated by the Divine Race, then the Demons would immediately dispatch their troops and attack Rising Sun City. If the Divine Race suffers a loss, then Zhao Hai and the others would certainly have some losses as well. When that time comes, the Demons would dispatch their troops and kill Zhao Hai.

To be honest, the Demons were currently dreading Zhao Hai. With his formidable undead, Zhao Hai would be able to become an Overlord in the Demon Realm. With this enemy, it was assured that the Demons would pay Zhao Hai their utmost attention.

At the same time, the Demons were also happy with the Divine Race's move. The Demons were lucky that the laws of the Ark Continent had been changed, otherwise, with Zhao Hai in the Ark Continent, it would be difficult to mount an invasion.

The Demons respect experts, and Zhao Hai was such an expert that was worthy of this respect. Because of this, although the Demons hated him, they also couldn't help but admire his strength. Zhao Hai didn't use any underhanded moves when waging war with them. After a battle, Zhao Hai would allow both sides to peacefully retreat. Although he was still hateful for what he did to the Demon Dragon King's group, the Demons still had to recognize that Zhao Hai was strong.

Because of this, the Demons decided to stand by and watch. When the results of Zhao Hai's clash with the Divine Race comes, it wouldn't be too late for them to make their action.

Zhao Hai had a faint idea about this plan, however, he didn't have the means to do anything about it. The Demons not making their move had also given him some breathing room. After all, his manpower was insufficient for a two pronged war.

Zhao Hai was sitting in the Space while looking at the monitor. The Divine Race were peacefully standing in their current position. Aside from the white robed individuals in front who were casually chatting, the other people were acting like wooden stakes, just standing there, motionless.

After seeing this scene, Zhao Hai's expression couldn't help but sink a little. These small details can tell the might of an army. This was the reason why the Chinese army paid great attention to their standing army positions. Military posture might sound simple, but this was a good testing point of an army.

These Divine Race soldiers had stood there motionless for a long time. There weren't any unnecessary movements on even a single one of them. For all of them to stand there showed how great their willpower was. This was certainly an elite army.

At this time, Zhao Hai noted that the outer edge of the new land had suddenly rippled. Then the protective shield surrounding it started to crack, silently breaking itself apart.

Zhao Hai really couldn't believe that a protective shield that blocked the advance of God-rank experts would just vanish silently like this.

But the Divine Race's movement stopped Zhao Hai from his thoughts. When the Divine Race saw that the shield was gone, they immediately gave a command to the army, leading them to kill towards the Ark Continent.

After seeing this situation, Zhao Hai couldn't help but take a deep breath to calm his emotions down. Then he turned his head to Laura and the others and said, "Laura, Ruyen, I'll leave the logistics to you two. Lizzy, Megan, I'll hand the command of the undead over to you. Shue, Berry, come with me."

The group nodded, then Zhao Hai led Berry and Shue out of the Space. As soon as he arrived outside, Zhao Hai immediately released two million undead. These undead immediately formed a cube formation as they quietly waited for the Divine Race to come.

At the same time, Zhao Hai also sent some undead towards the city's magic formation. He also took out 100 magic cannons from the Space and placed them on the walls of the city.

After his experiments, Zhao Hai decided to keep 100 of these magic cannons with him. After all, these cannons were now able to contend with God-ranks once they're were powered by the powerful crystals. At the moment, most undead that Zhao Hai had were 9th ranks, if these undead were to fight against God-ranks, then it was certain that they would suffer a loss. But now that the magic cannons were on play, the undead's capabilities have increased, this was a huge advantage for Zhao Hai's side.

The Divine Race didn't disappoint, just two hours after Zhao Hai exited the Space, they arrived.

Their move was very daring. After they came out of the new land, they didn't stop for a moment and just headed straight forward. From this point, one could see how proud they are.

Zhao Hai was currently standing on his Bone Dragon as he stared at the slowly approaching army. His facial expression stayed calm, he also didn't make an initiative to attack. He knew how proud these Divine Race people were, to demonstrate their superiority, they would definitely spout out a few words before beginning their attack.

And just as Zhao Hai expected, when the Divine Race army reached a kilometer away from the city, they stopped. Then the white robed God-ranks slowly flew towards Zhao Hai's direction.

Zhao Hai felt how strong these people were. In this 1 million army, 50% of them were unexpectedly God-rank. This startled Zhao Hai. Moreover, although the other half weren't God-rank, they were still 9th ranks. The Divine Race were truly going hard with such a lineup.

Zhao Hai commanded his Bone Dragon to meet these white-robed people. Both sides stopped when they were 50 meters away from each other. The one leading the white robes was the one Zhao Hai took the three divine artifacts from.

That old God-rank looked at Zhao Hai, he couldn't help but coldly smiled and said, "Zhao Hai, I didn't think that we'd meet this early."

Zhao Hai smiled faintly at the old man and replied, "Why aren't you expecting it? Didn't I say that I'll be waiting for you? Right, how is your face doing ever since I took those three Divine Artifacts away?"

When the God-rank heard Zhao Hai bring this matter up, his complexion couldn't help but turn cold. He looked straight at Zhao Hai and coldly snorted, "Hmph, there's no point in flaunting your lucky encounter. After all, you will die today. Remember the name of the Divine that will kill you, Silver Shuke!"

When Zhao Hai heard this old man's name, he couldn't help but laugh and said, "Interesting, too interesting. Such a dignified

Divine actually had that kind of name, why does your name sound like it belongs to a thief? It seems like the I have overestimated the Divine Race too much.”

When the Divine Race heard Zhao Hai, they couldn't help but change their expression. Divines had their own pride, they always claimed that they were a cut above the people from the Ark Continent. They weren't able to bear being mocked by Zhao Hai. One Divine went forward and coldly said, “Brat, you dare mock my Divine Race? Do you dare have a duel with me?”

Zhao Hai looked at the Divine Race as though he had seen an idiot, then he said, “What? You still do duels? I didn't think that you would still resort to such ancient way of fighting. You Divines really do disappoint me. But since you dared to issue me a challenge, then I will give you what you want. Shue, kill this fellow!”

Shue gave a nod before his figure moved and appeared in front of Zhao Hai. He looked at the challenging Divine and said, “If you want to fight, then come. But at your level, you are unqualified to fight against my Young Master. If you want to fight him, you have to come through me first.”

The Divine went on to throw his robe away, Shue also went forward. Zhao Hai and the other God-ranks took a step back to give the two people some space.

Shue looked at his opponent, then his expression turned serious, he wielded his axe on one hand before he shouted, “Buda Clan's steward, Shue of the thousand shadows!”

## Chapter 729 – Sly Divine Race

---

Shue's opponent didn't think that Shue would become polite. This made him stop on his tracks and stare. This was because the Divine Race would usually declare their names before they attack. Cheap attacks weren't something that the proud Divine Race would do.

Because of this, the Divine Race was shocked by Shue's performance. He didn't think that Shue, who was rude earlier, would suddenly declare his name.

It wasn't only Shue's opponent who was startled, the other Divines did the same as well. They didn't know how to handle such an action.

Zhao Hai looked at Shue and smiled. Before the battle, Zhao Hai already discovered that this Divine Race person was stronger than Shue. Shue was now God-rank, and his opponent would surely be a level above him at least. Zhao Hai had Shue battle the enemy because of Shue's divergent ability. Shue's clones would be able to overwhelm this person, so Zhao Hai was confident in sending Shue over.

However, Zhao Hai didn't think that Shue would make a smart move. Although Shue's words were unnecessary, Zhao Hai knew that Shue's true intention was to break the arrogance of the Divine Race.

Shue was also aware that this Divine Race expert was very strong. And when the Divine Race person made the challenge, he was quite mad, his morale at its peak. If Shue went on to fight him at this state, then even if he won, he would still make a lot of effort to do so. Since this person was consumed by anger, his attacks would surely be fierce. Moreover, the other party surely has reached 2nd level Domain, his attacks would definitely be strong.

Because of this, Shue used this little method of being polite,

shaking the Divine Race expert and resetting his mindset.

Although Zhao Hai understood what Shue wanted to do, he still kept quiet and just calmly looked at the opposing party. He wanted to know whether the enemy would continue with his anger or declare his name.

If the Divine Race expert decided to continue on his frenzy, then it shows that the Divine Race didn't care for their reputation. On the other hand, if he declared his name, then it meant that the Divine Race were rigid people whose reputation is much more important to them than their lives.

Different enemies required different methods. Because of this, Zhao Hai paid great attention to the other party's response.

After staring for a moment, the Divine expert's complexion turned pale. However, he still restrained his anger as he gave a salute to Shue and said, "Divine Race's Raging Fire General, Tiger Huan!"

After saying his name, the Tiger Huan immediately gave a shout and charged towards Shue. But Shue had enough time to prepare, his figure moved as he established his own Domain.

Tiger Huan didn't think that Shue would also be a God-rank Expert who had comprehended a Domain. When he saw Shue establish his Domain, Tiger Huan couldn't help but stare for a moment. Then he also made his move and established his own Domain.

His offensive rhythm was also destroyed for a second time. However, after seeing Tiger Huan's Domain, Zhao Hai couldn't help but frown.

Tiger Huan's Domain was a human shaped Flame Demon. Naturally, this was a 2nd level Domain. Moreover, since it was a fire element Domain, its attacking strength would surely be strong while its defensive ability would be quite decent. Seeing that the



other party had such a Domain, Zhao Hai felt that he wouldn't be very easy to deal with.

Shue didn't think too much about this, no matter what kind of enemy he was faced, he would still go on and fight them. Zhao Hai wanted him to deal with the enemy, and no matter who it was, Shue needed to accomplish the task, he didn't want Zhao Hai to lose face.

Of course, Shue understood that the enemy wasn't easy to deal with. He immediately made his move, along with his Domain, several other Domains also appeared, these were all made by his clones.

This action didn't fail to make Tiger Huan stare, he just saw multiple Domains, and all of them were just like Shue's. The first time he saw this, he immediately thought of illusions. He reckoned that Shue's Domain had something to do with tricking one's enemies. Aside from Shue's original Domain, everything else was fake.

Since Shue only had a 1st level Domain, then Tiger Huan's spiritual force should be stronger compared to him. Because of this, Tiger Huan thought that this illusion Domain was useless to him. He didn't worry much about it as he swept the numerous Domains with his Divine Sense and looking for the real one among the fakes.

However, just when his divine sense swept through the Domain, he discovered that the Domains he thought were fake turned out to be real. This made him stare, but he still disregarded it, he thought that it was a type of advanced level illusion. Although he couldn't completely understand it, Tiger Huan still coldly snorted and had his Flame Demon move. The Flame Demon made a loud cry before it raised its arms and formed two Fire Dragons that attacked towards Shue's Domains.

Tiger Huan wanted to use this attack to bring out Shue's real

Domain. However, what he wanted to happen didn't happen. At this moment, Shue had released five clones. This meant that six Shues were fighting Tiger Huan. Tiger Huan wasn't expecting any of these at all, he thought that Shue had an illusion Domain, this wrong assumption had proven to be deadly.

Just as Tiger Huan released the two Fire Dragons, Shue immediately made his move. Two clones went forward to meet the two fire dragons. The three clones then went on to attack Tiger Huan using their axe Domain.

Shue didn't fight with his clones for a day or two, additionally, all of them were tied by heart, their coordination was perfect. Shue commanded his Domain to chop the middle of the Flame Demon, as for the three clones, one chopped towards the Flame Demon's head, another went for the neck, and the last one went behind the Demon, preventing it from escaping.

Tiger Huan immediately felt that things weren't going well, however, it was too late to make a counter-attack. But still, Tiger Huan was still a God-rank expert who had a 2nd level Domain. Although he couldn't escape, he still didn't lose heart. He controlled his Flame Demon and made it turn into a defensive stance, capitalizing on the fact that its defensive capabilities were also quite good.

The three axe Domains hit the Flame Demon, rendering Tiger Huan into a miserable situation, he gave off a scream as blood spurted out. However, Tiger Huan continued to steel himself, as the axes fell down, he immediately changed the shape of his Domain, making the Fire Demon turn into a spherical shape. Not only did this remove the targeted parts of the Flame Demon, it also made the axe attacks deal half their intended damage.

Still, this damage injured Tiger Huan. But even so, he still didn't retreat, instead, he became angry. He didn't think that a strong God-rank like himself would actually be wounded by a person from a lower realm. How could a proud person like himself bear this

humiliation.

Tiger Huan shouted ferociously as his Domain turned back into a Flame Demon. Then a fiery sword appeared on the Flame Demon's hand before it attacked Shue's axe Domain.

Naturally, Shue wasn't held back by this development. He immediately directed his axe Domains to attack the Flame Demon once more. At this time, Tiger Huan was already aware that Shue's Domain were not illusions, all of them were real, and their attacking strength wasn't weak.

Although Tiger Huan couldn't understand how Shue did it, he still knew that it had to be a secret technique. He knew that if he didn't kill these clones as soon as possible, then the damage that they can inflict could only increase as the battle went on.

Tiger Huan's attack was very fierce, however, Shue wasn't intending on facing it head on. At this moment, Shue was like a pack of wolves attacking a lone bison. Whenever the Flame Demon made a move, Shue's clone would just retreat while the others continue to make cheap shots. This would make the Flame Demon target another clone, that clone would then retreat while the others make their attacks. This cycle would continue until Tiger Huan would get tired.

When Zhao Hai saw how Shue fought, he couldn't help but nod. To be honest, Shue's method was very simple, but this method was very hard to deal with. However, this action needed almost perfect coordination from all the participating attackers, otherwise it wouldn't be as effective.

Breaking this method was also very simple. One was to fight and entangle one of the attackers, making it difficult for other people to come in and join. However, this method needed one to be flexible and more powerful than the other.

The second method was strength, overwhelming strength. If one could wipe out an attacker after each attack, then it wouldn't take

too long before the attackers would get consumed.

However, it was quite obvious that Tiger Huan was unable to do these two methods. Because of this, he was plunged into a difficult situation by Shue and clones. But Zhao Hai still paid attention to the fight, he was on guard against the other God-rank experts as well as the army behind them.

While Shue was continuing to fight, Lizzy's voice suddenly came, "Big Brother Hai, there's a change in the Divine Race Army. People have come around, intending to do a sneak attack. What do we need to do?"

Zhao Hai stared for a moment, then he looked at the opposing Divine Race and coldly snorted. It seems like the Divine Race wanted Zhao Hai to focus his attention on the fight while they sent out an army to circle around to give a fatal strike whenever convenient. This was a good method, ordinary people would definitely fall for it.

The people that the Divine Race sent were all God-rank, and their attacks were much more effective compared to the undead. If they attacked an ordinary person, then they might be able to completely succeed.

But unfortunately for the Divine Race, Zhao Hai wasn't an ordinary person.

## Chapter 730 – Blood Lightning Bead

---

After Zhao Hai heard Lizzy's report, he said, "There's no need to care about them. Just prepare some undead to be dispatched. When they attack, immediately release undead on both of their sides, we'll eliminate them first."

Lizzy paused for a moment, then she said, "Big Brother Hai, then what do we do about the enemies in front?"

Zhao Hai coldly snorted and said, "We'll deal with them as well. Make sure to release a batch of undead behind them to prevent them from leaving. Then we'll have three groups of undead clash with their army, let's see how formidable the Divine Race's army really is."

When she heard Zhao Hai, Lizzy didn't say anything more, she just complied with the instructions and started to prepare. While this conversation happened, Shue was still attacking Tiger Huan. Since he couldn't face Tiger Huan dead on, Shue continued to attack him with wolf tactics.

On the other hand, the other Divine Race people looked at Shue and Tiger Huan's battle with an ugly expression. They didn't think that Tiger Huan would be placed in such a position by someone like Shue.

If they didn't have their own plans, then they might have already mounted an attack. They were currently waiting for their army to be in their positions before starting their plan to attack and kill Zhao Hai's group.

Zhao Hai has been observing these Divine Race people. He found that although they seem to be paying attention to the battle, their eyes were actually focused in front, which was the place right behind Zhao Hai. There might even be a hint of anxiety between their expressions.

Zhao Hai knew about what these people were thinking, but he didn't make a move. He knew that the undead had already shifted the magic cannons to the appropriate direction while keeping it a secret to the Divine Race. The magic formation has been primed as well, waiting for the moment to be activated.

Zhao Hai understood that the Divine Race had some understanding regarding these magic cannons. After all, the Radiant Church has been in the continent for many years, it would be impossible for them to be clueless about this matter.

The Divine Race knew that the capabilities of the magic cannons were limited. Not to say them, but even in the continent these magic cannons can only harm 6th ranks at most, 7th ranks will have no problem resisting them. Because of this, when the Divine Race saw Zhao Hai flaunting his magic cannons, all of them had a mocking thought inside their hearts.

At this moment, there was a change in the battlefield. Tiger Huang has been forced into a corner by Shue, he knew that if he didn't make a move, then he would fall here. Therefore, he suddenly screamed and then punched his own chest as he threw up some blood. Then his fingers moved as he muttered an incantation. The blood that came out suddenly floated in the air, and along with the incantation, it began to tumble until it looked like boiled water. Then the red blood slowly receded and turned black, forming a bead.

Tiger Huan gave a shout as he threw the bead over to Shue's clones.

Shue's clone felt something wrong with this bead, so it sent out an attack using the giant great axe, targeting the approaching bead.

However, what happened next made Shue stare. Just as the attack got in contact with the bead, the energy within it was suddenly being absorbed. After absorbing the attack, the bead

started to appear clearer.

When Zhao Hai saw this bead, his complexion changed. Although he didn't know what this bead was, he was certain that it wasn't simple. Moreover, he can feel a sense of danger coming out from that bead.

Zhao Hai knit his brows, then he looked at the other Divine Race and saw their happy expression as they looked at Zhao Hai's group. Zhao Hai knew that the reason of their expression was the army had already arrived behind him.

After thinking about this, Zhao Hai didn't wait as his figure moved and appeared right by the bead. Then he waved his finger as a spatial rift appeared in front of the bead, absorbing it into the Space.

The Divine Race didn't expect Zhao Hai to make a move. This caused them to be caught off guard, however, Silver Shuke immediately responded, "Zhao Hai, since you dared to disturb the duel, then don't blame us for being impolite. Begin!" Then the army started to charge towards Zhao Hai.

At this moment, Tiger Huan felt that the Blood Lightning Bead, which he had lost contact with, suddenly restored their connection. With a thought, he immediately compelled the bead to explode.

This blood lightning bead was a type of mixed magic. It was a combination of blood magic and fire element magic along with a hint of black magic. This kind of magic was very demanding with regards to its users, only people who had reached God-rank, like Zhao Hai would be able to use it.

However, even if Zhao Hai were to know of this magic, he would still opt out in using it. This was because the foundation of this magic lay on the user's blood essence.

Blood essence wasn't just ordinary blood, it was something that

was connected to one's life force. To each person, this blood essence was a very important thing. If a person lost his blood essence, even if they didn't die, like Tiger Huan, they would still find their strengths being knocked down a level. In other words, after Tiger Huan used his blood lightning bead, his present strength as a God-rank expert has been reduced to Demigod-level.

Naturally, Zhao Hai wasn't aware of this magic, after all it was a spell unique to the Divine Race. But even if Zhao Hai didn't know about the bead, he still didn't dare to underestimate it. Because of this, he made a move and absorbed the bead into the Space. After having the bead in the Space, he immediately threw it back out onto a place away from Shue and in the middle of the Divine Race army.

When Zhao Hai absorbed the blood lightning bead, the Space immediately issued a prompt. Only a short contact with the Space was needed to unravel the mysteries of the bead.

In general, the Space's prompt described the bead as an aggressive hybrid energy bead. The Space can use the Blood Pond in order to manufacture it and also the Dao Lotus to provide the lightning aspect. With these ingredients, the might of the Space's blood lightning bead was much stronger than the one Tiger Huan just made,

When Zhao Hai heard this prompt, he was immediately thrown into happiness. This was an extraordinary attacking method. If he didn't have the Blood Pond, then he wouldn't have the requirements to do this attack. But since he absorbed God's blood in the past, he can now use this magic an unlimited number of times. This was extremely good news for Zhao Hai.

While Zhao Hai revelled in his happiness, the thrown blood lightning bead had exploded in the middle of the Divine Race army. The blood lightning bead was truly worthy of being called a first-rate God-rank spell. This single blast alone cleared a circle fifty meters across the Divine Race army.



Every single Divine Race in this 50-meter circle was killed by the explosion. But fortunately, the formation of the Divine Race was quite spacious, the blast only killed less than ten people, their losses weren't serious.

When Silver Shuke gave his order, Shue made use of the opportunity to attack the weakened Tiger Huan. Using one of clones, he killed Tiger Huan in one fell swoop. When Tiger Huan died, a spatial rift immediately appeared right by his body as it was absorbed into the Space. Then after reappearing, Tiger Huan looked completely restored, no injury can be spotted, but his face was paler than normal, Tiger Huan has been turned into a zombie.

However, it was a pity that although Tiger Huan has been turned into an undead, he wasn't able to promote the levels of the undead. This disappointed Zhao Hai.

Judging by the Domain that Tiger Huan used, he should be of the fire element. In Zhao Hai's mind, Tiger Huan should be able to turn the fire element in the Space into God-rank. Even if their level wasn't too high, they should be Demigods at the very least. Unfortunately, the Space didn't issue any prompt.

But since Silver Shuke had started their move, Zhao Hai didn't have the mood to think about any of these. His figure moved as he pulled Shue and Berry away from the approaching army. At this moment, a war cry was heard behind him, it was the silver Divine Race army. Silver Shuke couldn't help but make a smug look towards Zhao Hai, he wanted to see the startled expression on Zhao Hai's face. He even wanted to say some disparaging words, knocking Zhao Hai's pride down a notch.

But much to his disappointment, Zhao Hai wasn't startled at all. On the contrary, he was looking at the Shuke with a smug look. Silver Shuke couldn't help but stare, then an unlucky premonition suddenly rose in his mind.

"Is he hiding something?" The Shuke muttered to himself. Then

he immediately found the answer, coming from the walls of the city were blue beams coming towards the army, the magic cannons had started to fire!

The Silver Shuke was startled by Zhao Hai's magic cannons, however, his heart immediately calmed down, he couldn't help but sneer and said, "Magic cannons? Hahaha. Zhao Hai, you really think that you can deal with us using inferior weapons such as magic cannons? I thought that you're much smarter than this."

Zhao Hai looked at the Silver Shuke and then sneered, "Really? Inferior magic cannons?"

100 magic cannons weren't a lot, however, an entire salvo coming from all of them looked quite frightening. The Divine Race just neglected them since they thought that they weren't anything serious.

However, this thought made them suffer a loss. Those who were hit by the magic cannons didn't care much about it. Some of them might cast a defensive magic, but most of them were too lazy to do cast anything. They intend to use their own physique to defend against the attacks of the magic cannons.

Only when the blue light hit their bodies did they discover that something was wrong. A powerful chill immediately rushed into their bodies. After their initial shock, they immediately went on to push the cold air out, however, they discovered that their meridians had been sealed with ice!

# Chapter 731 – Machine Gun and Artillery

---

The Divine Race who were turned into ice were immediately absorbed into the Space and were quickly turned into undead.

The attack of the magic cannon made the Divine Race army surprised. They never expected that the simply useless magic cannons would actually kill a hundred of them. This made the Divine Race army startled, but this disturbance quickly calmed down.

The silver commander looked at this with shock. He didn't think that the Ark Continent's magic cannons would actually be this powerful.

At this time, Zhao Hai led Berry and Shue back to the city. Then when they managed to enter it, the magic formation immediately activated.

When the magic formation got up, Zhao Hai laughed towards Silver Shuke and said, "Silver Shuke, are you convinced of our magic cannons now?" Then Zhao Hai's figure vanished as he mounted a sneak attack on the approaching Divine Race army.

Silver Shuke stared, but he knew that he couldn't underestimate the magical formation of the city. Although the protective shield didn't look any different, he still made a careful order, "Let me break the formation first!"

The Divine Race army complied, then they reformed their square formation before Silver Shuke went to the skies and wielded his sword to attack the blue protective shield.

However, Zhao Haid didn't care about them at this time. His attention was currently on the sneaking army from behind. These people weren't a lot, only about ten thousand people, however, they were all God-rank experts. But even with their current strength, this army still found themselves in a bad situation. They

were currently faced with undead both in their front as well as their back.

They were veterans in the battlefield, so it only took them a single glance to tell that the undead numbered about 2 million, this was a fearful sight for a small army such as them.

They wanted to do a sneak attack, going behind the enemy and eliminating them in one fell swoop. But who would've thought that they would actually be the ones who were caught in a trap. It seems like the enemy was aware of their actions and was already waiting for them here.

First was the magic cannon eliminating 100 of their kind, and then there was this undead ambush. Moreover, the army that could reinforce them had actually been blocked by the defensive formation of the city.

Although these soldiers were God-rank, they were too few in the end, only ten thousand people. On the other hand, they were faced with 9th rank undead that numbered in the millions. In this case, without Silver Shuke's group, they would certainly meet a quick and unfortunate death.

After knowing about their situation, the small Divine Race army steeled themselves. They knew that as long as they resist for a long time and wait for Silver Shuke's aid, then they would have a chance to survive. However, if they were to fall into Zhao Hai's hand, then they would definitely be exterminated.

These Divine Race fellows weren't fools. They came to the Ark Continent and also saw what happened to the Radiant Empire. Not a single citizen was left alive, and sole reason for this was the Divine Race's magic formation.

These people were nothing in the eyes of the Divine Race. In their minds, these people were no different to magic beasts, they didn't care no matter how many died.

However, the Divine Race also understood that their slaughter would definitely cause an irreversible hatred from the Ark Continent, especially Zhao Hai.

Even the Divine Race had heard of Zhao Hai's name, this person had destroyed a lot of plans that the Radiant Church had made. If not for Zhao Hai, then they wouldn't have been compelled to use their magic formation. But even then, Zhao Hai still had a grudge with the Radiant Church, and similarly to the Divine Race. If Zhao Hai were to forgive them, then that would certainly be very strange.

At this time, the trapped Divine Race army still believed that Silver Shuke would be able to break the formation in a short time. As long as the protective shield gets broken, then Zhao Hai wouldn't have the time to deal with them. When that time comes, they would use the opportunity to escape the undead entrapment.

However, these people have extremely underestimated Zhao Hai's strength. Although these people were God-rank, they were still ordinary God-ranks. And in Zhao Hai had a lot of God-rank undead in his hand.

When these people started to form their battle formation, preparing themselves to battle Zhao Hai, he suddenly made a move, throwing blood lightning beads towards them.

These God-rank experts didn't expect Zhao Hai to throw blood lightning beads one after another. Just as they were dumbfounded, the blood lightning beads exploded.

After a loud bang, several gaps were seen in the Divine Race's formation. Zhao Hai was very satisfied with the might of the blood lightning beads. However, he was also disappointed by the fact that the explosions of the blood lightning beads immediately turned the God-rank corpses into dust. When this happens, it would be impossible for him to turn them into undead.

However, when he saw that the formation has been broken, Zhao

Hai immediately shouted, “Kill them, spare nobody!” Then Zhao Hai waved his hand as all the God-ranked undead that he had charged towards the opposing Divine Race army.

Shue also made his move, 1000 of his clones simultaneously threw themselves towards the Divine Race Army. In addition, Berry, Shiyang, and the light element undead as well as Zhao Hai’s own attacks also flooded towards the Divine Race army. All of a sudden, the Divine Race army was divided into different independent squads.

However, these people were worthy to be called elite. After their initial disturbance, they quickly stabilized themselves and started to resist.

These people were God-ranks who had comprehended their Domains. At this time, they simultaneously made their Domains appear. What surprised Zhao Hai was the fact that their Domains were actually the same, all of them formed a long spear.

When Zhao Hai saw this, his heart couldn’t help but turn cold. He didn’t care about these ten thousand people, what he cared about was the might of the Divine Race.

Selecting 10 thousand God-ranked experts with the same Domain wasn’t easy. For them to do so was a testament to their military might. This was too astonishing.

But even if Zhao Hai was startled, he still went on and continued his assault. He knew that the formation wouldn’t hold up for too long against Silver Shuke’s constant attacks. At the same time, the opposing 1 million army wasn’t something that can just be disregarded. Although Zhao Hai had placed a lot of crystal stones on the city’s formation, he knew that they couldn’t support the protective shield indefinitely. Therefore, he needed to eliminate these people as soon as possible.

Zhao Hai’s present strength was much more formidable than any ordinary God-rank. These people simply couldn’t resist Zhao Hai’s

attacks. One after another, Domains were broken and people were killed before being turned into undead. In turn, these new undead would then turned on their previous allies, this was the convenience of black magic.

At this moment, Zhao Hai felt that the defensive formation of the city started to fluctuate, then it vanished. However, Zhao Hai didn't turn back, he waved his hand and released close to ten million undead to charge towards the approaching Divine Race army.

Silver Shuke's eyes were now red, he didn't think that their first conquest would have this disappointing result. Under his own eyes, 10 thousand elite soldiers were being killed. This was something unforgivable, he needed to kill Zhao Hai's group in order to satiate the hatred in his heart.

However, after he saw the dense and numerous undead, Silver Shuke knew that his hatred needed to be reeled in. He clenched his teeth as he gave a command, "Battle formations! Kill them all!"

The Divine Race army immediately grouped themselves accordingly before establishing their Domains. Almost immediately, all kinds of Domains appeared in front of Zhao Hai's undead army.

One must say that the Divine Race really did have the real skills. Not only did they gather similar Domain, they also grouped them into teams. With this arrangement, these people would be able to support each others' Domains in order to oppose the enemy. With how well coordinated they were, their might would surely be very formidable.

However, the Divine Race didn't expect that the undead would suddenly form their own formations. Then all of a sudden, blue light suddenly fired off. Every single person hit by this blue light has been frozen, then they vanished before coming back as an undead.

This was a type of formation that Lizzy and Megan had developed. They would use large bodied undead, such as the Dragons, and then place magic cannons on their bodies. They would then be able to be used as mobile turrets, allowing more flexibility in the usage of the magic cannons.

Although this method was good, the magic cannons on Zhao Hai's hands were just too few. He simply couldn't just use it to pressure the Divine Race.

However, they still had other means which were the blood lightning beads. If the magic cannons could be used by Zhao Hai as machine guns, then these blood lightning beads would be like artillery shells. A lot of undead had these blood lightning beads in their hands and would occasionally throw them into the Divine Race army.

But Zhao Hai also discovered the the might of these blood lightning beads were also limited, especially to those God-ranks who had their own Domain. The blood lightning can still affect them, but only when it exploded in close range, of which the Divine Race could just eliminate the undead.

Although the blood lightning bead and magic cannons were limited regarding its capabilities to suppress the Divine Race, they still managed to divert some of the Divine Race's attention. With the possible lethal consequences of these two things, the Divine Race also needed to consider dodging their attacks. As the matter stands, the Divine Race was currently mired in a sticky situation of the battlefield.

Silver Shuke was starting to worry. Their side only had about a million people while Zhao Hai's undead numbered to ten million. At this time, Zhao Hai's 100 magic cannons changed their crystal to fire type ones. The red beams coming from these magic cannons were now causing explosions, which was also quite lethal to the Divine Race army. These actions actually made it impossible for the Divine Race army to make a counter-attack.



# Chapter 732 – King of Kings

---

Since they cannot repel the undead, then they can't rescue the 10 thousand trapped soldiers. Silver Shuke can just watch as they get slaughtered by Zhao Hai.

For the first time, Silver Shuke felt being powerless. This feeling only came to him when he fought with other races in the Divine Realm. He didn't expect to have this feeling while in the Ark Continent.

The 10 thousand troops that went on to sneak attack Zhao Hai suffered serious casualties. At this point, 2000 of them were already left after the others were killed and turned into undead, and this number continued to decrease.

Nobody could blame the Divine Race army for being unable to fight back. After all, they were now being assaulted by more than 10 thousand God-ranks, and some of them were even their former comrades. These undead allies weren't weak, and all of them were even able to establish their Domains. It was no wonder that they had been completely suppressed.

More than 10 thousand people attacking 2000. Moreover, their strengths were almost identical. For the 2000 Divine Race army to be able to defend up to this point was already laudable. However, they were now beginning to get tired.

These people haven't used spells like the blood lightning beard. This was because they knew that even if this magic was useful to humans, they were completely useless to the undead.

When the Divine Race went to fight the undead, they discovered how formidable the durability of these undead were. Even if their arms and legs were crippled, they could still fight for quite some time. This ability was something that was absent from these Divine Race people.

Zhao Hai didn't have the mood to care about what the Divine Race was thinking. All he wanted to do right now was to quickly eliminate this army so that he can turn to deal with Silver Shuke's group.

After about half an hour, the 2000 remaining soldiers were finally eliminated by Zhao Hai. Then Zhao Hai turned to Silver Shuke's group as well as the battle that was currently happening.

One could see the miserable losses that the undead had suffered. The attacks of the Divine Race army wasn't a joke. The might of their combined Domains wasn't any worse than the attack of the magic cannons. With how clumped up the undead were, it was no wonder that the losses were what they were.

Zhao Hai asked Lizzy and the others about their casualties, of which Lizzy provided the answer. From the time the city has been attacked to the present, the undead losses had already numbered to more than 20 thousand.

This figure was within Zhao Hai's expectations. After all, the undead that he had sent were all 9th ranks. Naturally, they would be in a very disadvantageous place against the Divine Race. It can be said that if Zhao Hai wasn't able to discover the might of the magic cannons as well as acquire the blood lightning beads, then there would be even more casualties. Once Zhao Hai killed 10 thousand Divine Race soldiers, then he might have already lost undead that numbered to the millions.

Zhao Hai's new undead in the Space now counted up to twenty thousand, majority of them were from the prior Divine Race army. Only a few of them were acquired from the magic cannon attacks.

Although Zhao Hai has been doing well in dealing with the Divine Race army, it was still impossible for him to repel them. After all, the God-ranks in his hand were too few.

Silver Shuke also noticed that Zhao Hai had turned his head to their direction. His blood red eyes looked straight at him. The

troops under his command had just been exterminated by this Human in front of him. Moreover, they were turned into undead, this made Silver Shuke angry. But since he was embroiled with the battle with the undead, he still couldn't order a full charge.

One must say that Silver Shuke was an outstanding military man. He knew that keeping a clear mind in the battlefield was essential to being an effective commander. If his thoughts were to slip, then he might get killed.

A reason why he hadn't ordered his army to mount a full charge was because he was afraid of the blood lightning beads in the hands of the undead. To be honest, Silver Shuke didn't look to highly upon blood lightning beads in the past. In his opinion, although the might of these beads were strong, the time to prepare them was also quite long. Moreover, after being launched, one couldn't control them. If the opponent doesn't dodge and just stood there, then they might get destroyed, otherwise, the bead would just be useless.

However, after seeing Zhao Hai's undead army and the blood lightning bead on their hands, Silver Shuke discovered that his previous thoughts were very wrong. Blood lightning beads could actually be used as an ultimate weapon, it almost single handedly blocked the advance of the Divine Race army.

If these undead only threw the blood lightning beads, then Shuke wouldn't have been worried since the explosions can just be easily avoided. As long as they coordinate well, then they can definitely avoid the blood lightning beads.

However, Shuke was quick to discover that the undead had another method of using the blood lightning beads. As long as a soldier takes the initiative to clash, then the undead would immediately take several blood lightning beads and directly detonates itself near the soldier. This would ensure mutual destruction to both parties. This was the method that gave Silver Shuke the most headache.

The undead weren't afraid of death, however, it was a different matter regarding the Divine Race. Although they had formidable strength, they were still people in the end, they were also afraid of death. Because of this, the suicide attacks of the undead had made them afraid to proceed any further.

Actually, Zhao Hai didn't want to use such a methods. The undead in the Space were intelligent, they weren't any different from a normal person. In this case, making the undead kill themselves by explosion left Zhao Hai a bad taste in his mouth.

However, if he didn't do this, then he wouldn't be able to block the attacks of the Divine Race. This method wasn't Zhao Hai's original thought. Back on Earth, he had seen suicide bombers in the TV, bombs in driven cars or even just inside walking people. Whenever he sees these, he would groan, but he didn't think that he himself would have do it.

In the end, Zhao Hai had to recognize how effective this method was. After a few suicide bombings by the undead, Silver Shuke began to hesitate in launching a full scale attack. This caused both sides to be in a stalemate.

Zhao Hai also looked at the other big contributors in this war, which were the magic cannons. After discovering the use of the crystals, the power of the magic cannons have been increased, becoming terrifying weapons in Zhao Hai's hands.

But Zhao Hai was still not satisfied with this. He had all the alchemist in the continent unite and start to develop a new magic cannon. He had three requests for them, make a powerful cannon, make it more durable than the existing ones, and make them waste as less energy as possible.

Before the new magic cannon was developed, Zhao Hai had already told Patriarch Billy about it, having the Dwarves help with the process. Zhao Hai wanted to produce the ultimate magic cannon that was fit to be used in the war.

The newly promoted 9th ranks now had a new purpose, they were now in charge of refilling the empty crystal stones.

Zhao Hai had a lot of these crystals in the Space. Moreover, he has Bubble, so the Space can produce these crystals over and over. However, Zhao Hai didn't like the crystals produced by the Space, this was because most of them were of the water element. Although water element crystals were still formidable, they weren't really geared towards offensive attacks. What Zhao Hai liked to have were fire element crystals since they had an explosive effect, causing the most amount of casualties in the battlefield. Therefore, Zhao Hai wanted to have fire element crystals to be supplied towards the frontline.

Fortunately, crystals can store energy of a different element once they are used up, making it possible to have a lot of fire element crystals. In order to meet his demand, Zhao Hai adjusted his criteria to promote people who had the fire attribute to 9th rank. He wanted to have as much fire element 9th ranks to charge the crystals.

The people on the continent had no qualms regarding Zhao Hai's action. At this point, everyone knew about Zhao Hai's efforts in the frontlines against the Demons and the Divine Race. Therefore, they did as much as they could to not pull on Zhao Hai's leg.

The continent's most powerful nation's Emperor, the Rosen Emperor, was Zhao Hai's father in law. In the Lyon Empire, Zhao Hai was the acting Emperor. The Buddha Emperor currently had his people take refuge in the Lyon Empire, so naturally, he would give Zhao Hai some face. At the same time, the Aksu Empire was too far from their previous power. And even if they were in their heyday, they would still refrain from going against Zhao Hai. Not only are they adjacent to the Rosen Empire, they were also right beside the Black Wasteland, of which Zhao Hai's elite troops were stationed in. In this case, nobody in the continent would dare bare their fangs towards Zhao Hai's direction.

Just as the Dwarf prediction said, Zhao Hai had now become the Ark Continent's King of Kings. Although he wasn't explicitly crowned, every single resident of the continent were still listening to his words.

At the same time, the other races of the continent also didn't have any problems with Zhao hai. Although Zhao Hai promoted a lot of Humans to 9th ranks, he wasn't neglecting the other races. Beastmen, Dwarves, Elves, Fishmen, all of them were given spatial water and blood pond water in order to have their own 9th ranks.

Because of this, the other major races gave Zhao Hai their approval, giving him their complete support. Zhao Hai can now be said to be the uncrowned King of the entire Ark Continent.

While the research for the new magic cannon was ongoing, Zhao Hai also sent an order to all of the races. He wanted them to search for crystal stones. Zhao Hai didn't believe that only the Northern Icefield had these crystals. He believes that these crystals also existed on other parts of the continent, it was just that nobody paid any attention to them. Zhao Hai wanted to scour the entire continent for these crystals in order to aid the continent in the future war.

Although crystals can be recharged, they still had their breaking point. This meant that the crystals were consumable. They would certainly need as much crystals as then can in order to curb any shortages that may happen in the future.

While Zhao Hai was thinking about the magic cannons, he suddenly felt a deep and hateful gaze. He turned his head to look and saw that it was Silver Shuke!

# Chapter 733 – Formidable Diamond Ape Tribe

---

Silver Shuke's fiery eyes were looking straight at Zhao Hai. If looks could kill, then Zhao Hai would have already died 10 thousand times. Shuke's hatred towards Zhao Hai couldn't be described through words.

Of course, Zhao Hai wasn't intending to become friends with him. After all, the Radiant Empire's citizens have been used by the Divine Race to activate their formation. Zhao Hai and the Divine Race's enmity had now reached a point of no return.

Zhao Hai wasn't a hero, and to be honest, he didn't want to be. If not for the Demons and the Divine Race forcing him, then he wouldn't have stepped forward. He wasn't afraid to live off of two acres of land with his wives, have a kid who would give him headaches, and even a cow to take care of. Inside his heart, Zhao Hai really didn't have that much of an ambition.

However, the pressure brought by both the Demons and the Divine Race had compelled him to fight for survival, making him end up to where he is today. He didn't want to be a hero, but he already made a lot of connections in the continent, he had friends, relatives, loved ones, his home, and he didn't want all of them to get affected.

The people in the Radiant Empire had nothing to do with him, he hadn't even visited the country before. He thought of it as the lair of the Radiant Church, his biggest nemesis. Therefore, how could he visit such a place.

However, he couldn't help but be enraged when he saw the fate of the Radiant Empire's citizens. This meant that the Divine Race didn't see the people in the Ark Continent as people, and this angered Zhao Hai.

In fact, in Zhao Hai's eyes, the Divine Race were no longer people. They were monsters in humans skin, they were beings that would forever be his enemies.

Zhao Hai looked at Silver Shuke and then smiled faintly. He gave Silver Shuke a small bow as he said, "Thief Shuke, do you still want to decide victory and defeat today?" Silver Shuke knew what Zhao Hai meant. Before, Zhao Hai said that his name sounded like a thief's name, so he called Shuke Thief Shuke. To be honest, Zhao Hai's naming had made Shuke feel uncomfortable, however, he couldn't do anything about it.

After Zhao Hai said this, Shuke looked at the army that he brought. Some of his men were turned into undead by Zhao Hai, and more than 20 thousand of them were blown up by the blood lightning bead. The losses of this battle had exceeded 30 thousand. This didn't count the wounded, their losses absolutely weren't small.

Although Shuke's army numbered a million, they were also the vanguard forces. The vanguard shouldn't have too much losses upon entering the continent, otherwise, the succeeding armies would find it hard to transfer here.

After thinking up to here, Silver Shuke coldly snorted and said, "We'll let you off today, Zhao Hai. Just you wait, when the main Divine Race army comes, then we will certainly eliminate you." Zhao Hai smiled faintly and replied, "If you think you are confident, then feel free to do so." Silver Shuke snorted, then he ordered, "Reform your ranks and slowly retreat!" It didn't take too long before the Divine Race army formed their ranks and slowly went back.

Zhao Hai didn't pursue them, he just calmly looked at Shuke's army. Shue and Berry were also right beside Zhao Hai. Shue received his clones while Berry went out of her stealth. All of them looked at the retreating silver army. At the same time, Silver Shuke was also paying attention to Zhao Hai.



When the army got back to the Radiant Empire, Zhao Hai, Berry, and Shue immediately went back to the Space.

Upon reaching the Space, Zhao Hai immediately turned to Lizzy and said, “Lizzy, have you calculated our losses?” Lizzy nodded and said, “We did, in the battle, we used a total of 892 crystals. The undead casualties surpassed a hundred thousand. However, we also received about twenty thousand God-rank undead. Moreover, the Space just gave a prompt, all fire element undead had now been upgraded to God-rank, but they only have Demigod level strength.”

Zhao Hai was happy, “A prompt? Why haven’t I heard of it? I may be too focused on the fight. Anyway, that’s good. We have more fire element undead compared to the light element ones. How many new God-rank undead do we have?”

Lizzy smiled and said, “Right now, we have more than 20 million undead in the Space. However, majority of them are marine life forms, so almost all of them have the water attribute. In comparison, we don’t have that much fire element undead. In total, we have less than two million fire element undead. Although they only have Demigod strength, they aren’t that weak.”

Zhao Hai laughed and said, “Good, fantastic. With these undead, the Divine Race would surely be surprised at our next clash.”

Lizzy nodded and smiled, “With these many undead, along with the magic cannons and crystals, we could definitely block the next advance of the Divine Race. However, things wouldn’t be that easy, Big Brother Hai, we just went to take a look, the Demon army has increased significantly. The God-ranks in their camp had already reached a thousand. Moreover, this number has been constantly increasing.

Zhao Hai nodded, although it looks like the number of the Demon Race’s God ranks were incomparable to the Divine Race, he still didn’t underestimate them. The Demon Race’s fighting

prowess can be seen as the strongest out of all the parties currently in the Ark Continent, it had something to do with how they lived back in the Demon Realm. Additionally, according to Cai'er, the Demon population was much more than the Ark Continent. And with how formidable their 9th ranks were, Zhao Hai didn't dare to neglect them.

Zhao Hai let out a long sigh and said, "The Demons shouldn't be acting for quite a while, however, I will still send light element undead to face them. Once we have the light element undead stationed there, then we can rest assured. After all, we now have a lot of God-rank undead, separating 10 thousand wouldn't be much of a loss for our side."

Lizzy nodded, at this time, Laura walked in. Zhao Hai looked at her and said, "How is it?" Zhao Hai was asking about the state of the crystals. In this battle, they had used more than 800 crystals. This rate of consumption wasn't small. After having emptied the crystals, Zhao Hai immediately had them sent to the Space and then to the different parts of the continent, making the various 9th ranks input more energy into them.

For the battles, they would need fire element crystals with a small amount of earth element as well. The fire element had the strongest attacking power while the earth element had the strongest defense. The earth element crystals would be used in the defensive formations, they should be much better compared to the water element.

When she heard Zhao Hai's question, Laura smiled faintly and said, "It's going alright. They had already started to recharge the crystals. However, the energy of those 9th ranks are still too low. It takes several people to fill up an entire crystal."

Zhao Hai nodded and said, "Don't worry, just take your time. Filling those 800 crystals shouldn't take too much time. Right, how is the situation with the magic cannons, are they being done?"

Laura smiled and said, “Rest assured, you might not be aware of the Dwarf craftsmanship, but they used to be experts in making weapons like these. However, they still need to familiarize themselves. They are able to make 30 magic cannons per day at this point, but this rate would surely increase in the coming days.” Zhao Hai nodded, “That’s great, with the Dwarves’ help, we can relax even more. Right, how about the Diamond Ape tribe, how are they doing?”

The Diamond Ape Tribe was a powerful warring race. Their attacking strength was very strong, and upgrading their levels was something that Zhao Hai saw as important. Because of this, when he thought of promoting people, he naturally couldn’t forget about them. Moreover, he was also placing more importance regarding their development.

However, Zhao Hai didn’t think that the Diamond Ape tribe’s potion consumption was vastly greater compared to the other races. Even the Elephant tribe would need less in order to promote to 9th rank. This fact astonished Zhao Hai.

After undergoing multiple investigations, Zhao Hai finally found the root of the problem. The reason why the Diamond Apes were slow to promote to 9th ranks was because both the Diamond Ape and their giant ape companion needed to be 9th ranks together in order for them to be promoted. Otherwise, it would be difficult for a Diamond Ape to promote on his own.

After having this discovery, Zhao Hai didn’t hesitate and immediately promoted both Diamond Apes as well as their companion beasts. Then Zhao Hai tested how strong they got.

The tests gave Zhao Hai a glimpse as to why the Diamond Apes were called the kings of the Beastman Race. After rising to 9th rank, the Diamond Apes would undergo a huge change. Each of them would be able to acquire a new innate skill. This skill had a great relationship with their giant ape companion, this skill was even called synthesis!

After a Diamond Ape uses this skill, their body would combine with their giant ape companion. Not only would they be able to command the actions of the giant apes, but their strength, speed, and defensive capabilities would also be greatly improved. It was a genuine, real type of fusion.

Zhao Hai estimated that the Diamond Apes now had the strength that rivalled God-rank experts. And this was regarding a Full God, not a Demigod.

However, since the Diamond Apes were still 9th ranks in the end, they weren't able to establish a Domain. But still, once the Diamond Apes use their innate skill, their combat capabilities would improve, and they would then be able to contend with God-rank experts.

This discovery filled Zhao Hai with joy. He immediately went on and promoted the Diamond Apes en masse. But even if the Diamond Apes' strengths had been promoted, Zhao Hai still didn't make them go to the battlefield. The Diamond Apes had been fighting for their lives in the Northern Icefield for many years. Zhao Hai wasn't cruel enough to plunge them into battle once more.

The Patriarch of the Diamond Apes had even told Zhao Hai countless times that they wanted to be in the battlefield. But Zhao Hai still didn't take them there. Instead, he told them that he wanted them to guard the Black Wasteland. He discussed this matter with the Patriarch. The Black Wasteland was now Zhao Hai's root, once the Demons or the Divine Race finds out that about this place, then they would definitely target it in their future attacks. It wouldn't be good if a powerful guard force wasn't stationed here. Because of this, Zhao Hai appointed the Diamond Apes to be the guardians of the wasteland, of which the Patriarch agreed. Therefore, Zhao Hai was now relieved with regards to the security of the Black Wasteland.

## Chapter 734 – Storm Clouds Approach

---

When she heard Zhao Hai's question, Laura couldn't help but smile and said, "They're doing very well. The Diamond Ape Tribe currently has thirty thousand 9th rank experts. With their strength along with Grandpa Green's group as well as Cai'er, there certainly wouldn't be any problems in the Black Wasteland. Right, there is also a piece of good news, Origin Sword Saint has broken through to God Rank. He is the first God-rank that the Ark Continent had produced in thousands of years." Laura's statement was true. Origin Sword Saint was really a God-rank that managed to reach his level without the help of the Space.

Zhao Hai was glad with this news, he looked at Laura and said, "Really? Then that's fantastic! The Ark Continent finally had its own God-rank expert. However, after arriving at God-rank, senior Origin Sword saint would still need to comprehend his own Domain. Zhao Hai said, "How about this, since we already have magic cannons as well as the crystals, he wouldn't be needed in the Black Wasteland. Let's have him go with us first, then I'll have him participate in the battles. Maybe he can comprehend a Domain there." Laura nodded and replied, "Alright, I'll go and approach Grandpa Green about this so that he can tell Senior Origin Sword Saint. Brother Hai, when do you think the Divine Race would attack again?" Zhao Hai shook his head and said, "I don't know. But when they decided to retreat, I was sure that they would be waiting for reinforcements. Otherwise, it would be impossible for them to deal with us with their current numbers."

Laura nodded, then she sighed and said, "Once the Divine Race reinforcements arrive, then we wouldn't be able to live peacefully anymore. I didn't expect the Divine Race to be that strong." Zhao Hai nodded and said, "Fortunately, we have several means to deal with the Divine Race. Otherwise, we would really be in trouble. We might even be compelled to move the entire continent's population

into the Space.”

Laura agreed, “But things have been very strange. I thought that after killing a fire element expert, then the Space’s fire element undead would also reach God-rank. I didn’t expect that Tiger Huan wasn’t enough to promote them. Moreover, when they did get promoted, they only had the power of a Demigod.” Zhao Hai nodded, “It really is quite strange. When we got Shiying, the Space immediately promoted all the undead assassins. But now, only after we have killed a lot of God-rank Divine Race experts did the Space decide to promote the undead. It seems like the Space’s requirements had become much stricter compared to before.” At this time, Megan replied, “Although we have a lot of God-ranked experts in our hand, majority of them still have Demigod strength. We really lack undead that have Full God strengths. On the other hand, most of the God-ranked experts in the Divine Race army have already comprehended their Domain. In terms of overall strength, we are still a few steps behind. We’re lucky to have the magic cannons to supplement this weakness. Brother Hai, currently, we have magic cannons installed in big undead such as the Dragons. But I think it would be safer if the cannons were placed inside their bodies. This way, the cannons would have a sort of protection against external attacks.”

Laura agreed and said, “But in this case, we need to have the magic cannons be fixed inside the bodies of the undead. How would we be able to do this?” Zhao Hai thought for a moment and said, “When the Dwarves make the cannons, we can have them install a few steel chains under the cannon. When they are used, those chains could latch onto the bodies of the undead, securing them in place.”

Laura nodded, “Alright, I’ll inform the Dwarves regarding this matter. With the magic cannons on the way, we would be more prepared for the future. If the Dwarves get unbearable busy with work, we can just have more blacksmiths transported from the

other cities in order to help out.”

Zhao Hai smiled faintly and replied, “Good, then I’ll hand it over to you. However, make sure to ask the Emperors about this first. We can’t have them be dissatisfied lest we risk having a fire in our own backyard.”

Laura nodded and then turned around to leave. At this time, Zhao Hai turned his attention back to the monitor. The image shown right now was Silver Shuke’s group as well as the situation with the Divine Race.

After Silver Shuke’s group retreated from the city, they went straight back to the new land. But since they aren’t constrained to the new land like before, they had started to clean the surrounding lands and cities. All the dead people and beasts have been cremated. Obviously, they had a similar idea with the Demons. They wanted to make a foothold inside the Ark Continent.

When Zhao Hai saw that they weren’t planning on another attack, he shifted his gaze towards the Demons. The Demons were now becoming numerous. Additionally, they had already went on and occupied Demon City. With how close they were to Rising Sun City, the latter had already started to be in full alert.

However, there still weren’t a lot of God-ranked Demons in their side, this made them refrain from attacking Rising Sun City. Naturally, the Demons understood that if they have fewer experts than the Divine Race, then even if they occupy Rising Sun City, the Divine Race could just take it away from them. The Demons wouldn’t make a move until they have more experts than they had right now.

When Zhao Hai saw the state of the Demons, he became worried. If the Demons attacked frantically, then Zhao Hai wouldn’t have been worried. But they were too calm, and this was a scary matter. Having strong and calm Demons invade the continent didn’t bode well for the residents of the Ark Continent.

But seeing that there weren't any movements from the Demons, Zhao Hai became relieved. Then he turned his attention to the continent. The Ark Continent was still very peaceful. Although the Buddha Empire had been transformed into a battlefield, the other parts of the continent still remained to be unaffected. With Zhao Hai's careful preparations, the Ark Continent remained very stable.

In the Accra Mountain, a defensive line has already been setup. This defense has been taken care of by Zhao Hai. A large number of people participated in this defense, it included even the Beastmen and the Fishmen. Zhao Hai wanted to rely on the Accra Mountain to mount a long defensive battle against both the Demons and the Divine Race.

Not only the surface of the Accra Mountain, even the space that the Demons had dug out was made use of. This huge space was used as a huge shelter as well as warehouse for the defenders' needs. The blood formation here had already been used and cannot be reused, so the place had become a handy area for the forces of the Ark Continent.

Since the Accra Mountain was now devoid of any Demon presence, the movements made here was all in secret. The entire Accra Mountain had become a busy place. Even the area where the Dragons had lived had become a small base. Zhao Hai made use of the place to house his Blood Hawks.

In order to speed up the preparations, Zhao Hai assigned a lot of large magic beasts from the Space to work there. This ensured that the progress was very fast.

Seeing that nothing was wrong, Zhao Hai made a sigh of relief. He scanned all the undead in the Space and took out the big ones to be used as mobile cannons. He also assigned some undead to act as cannoneers for these moving weapons. Zhao Hai even used his metal manipulation technique to install chains and attached them into the bodies of the undead. Only when they are secured would



they be more convenient to use.

The next matter was the blood lightning beads. Although the beads had their shortcomings, the Space had an unlimited supply of them. In order to prepare for wartime, Zhao Hai also started to stockpile a bunch of these beads.

Time went by as Zhao Hai's group were busy in preparation. Laura would often take magic cannons made in the continent into the Space. Then Zhao Hai would facilitate in installing them inside the large undead.

Three days went by in a flash. While Zhao Hai was busy fixing the cannons into the undead, Cai'er suddenly flew over to him and said, "Young Master, quickly come and see this." Zhao Hai stared for a moment. He was busy with his things inside the Space all this time, so he had Cai'er manage the monitoring of both the Demons and the Divine Race. Cai'er certainly had news regarding the Divine Race since there weren't much changes with the Demon Race.

Zhao Hai and the others immediately went to the living room. The monitor was currently showing the current situation in the newly descended land. At this moment, a group of Divine Race people were emerging out of the new land. This time, they were flying.

This was a huge group, and in addition to the silver soldiers that Zhao Hai saw before, there were also huge magic beasts mixed in. These magic beasts weren't the same as those seen in the Ark Continent. They were mostly white and although they were huge, they seemed to be quite docile.

These magic beasts were pulling some carts. These carts were probably made out of saint light wood due to their color. Inside those carts were large quantities of resources. But what made Zhao Hai worried was the magic cannons that were carried over. These magic cannons looked similar to the ones in the Ark Continent.

However, they were much bigger, moreover, their magic formations looked more complex.

After seeing these magic cannons, Zhao Hai's expression couldn't help but turn ugly. He was aware that the Divine Race also had their own magic cannons, but he didn't expect that they would look this menacing. The Divine Race's strength was already much stronger than the Ark Continent, if the continent's magic cannons were weak, then the cannons would've already been rendered useless. But now, the Divine Race had brought their own magic cannons. And from how they look, it seems like they are much more powerful than the Ark Continent's version. This was huge trouble!

# Chapter 735 – How To Deal With It?

---

However, Zhao Hai was quick to discover an issue. The magic cannon of the other party seemed to be very heavy. Most magic beasts weren't able to pull it at all. Although it was placed in a cart, it looked strong and powerful. From the looks of the magic beasts that carried it, it seems like it wasn't something that one can conveniently carry. This was good news for Zhao Hai.

But when Zhao Hai saw the Divine Race people behind the magic cannons, his face couldn't help but change. These people were different than the ones that he had clashed before. In the previous battle, the Divine Race army that he faced were infantry. On the other hand, the ones he saw right now were cavalry.

The mounts of these Divine Race cavalry were quite strange. It was a kind of horse magic beast with wings and a horn, pretty much like how a person from Earth describes a unicorn pegasus. Just by looking at them on the screen, Zhao Hai was quite sure that these magic beasts weren't anything simple.

Each and every one of these cavalry soldiers wore light and comfortable armor. They had spears in their hands while a sword was hung on their waists. On their backs were their shields while a bow and a quiver of arrows was present on their saddles. One could see the capabilities of this Divine Race cavalry just by looking at their equipment.

In the back of this cavalry was another type of magic beast cavalry. It seems like these ones were part of the Divine Race's heavy cavalry. All of them were in full body armor, they looked like iron golems. Their mounts were a type of rhinoceros magic beasts. Metallic gloss flashed from the skins of these beasts, they also had a dangerous gleam in their eyes, making them look violent.

Zhao Hai immediately identified the two groups as Light and

Heavy Cavalry. With these two troops joining the Divine Race, their fighting strength would surely be much more formidable, it would be difficult to deal with them easily. Zhao Hai was frowning as he looked at the monitor. He wanted to see what other groups the Divine Race had brought. Before long, another group appeared. But this group made Zhao Hai rub his eyes, they didn't seem to be soldiers. These people rode on gorgeous carriages as they talked, laughed, and drank with each other. They looked more like noble children than people who were going to war.

However, all of them were wearing all kinds of magic robes. They also had magic staffs, it seems like they are the Mage group of the Divine Race.

Zhao Hai counted the number of Mage carriages that appeared on the new land. Each carriage had, on average, five Mages, and in this caravan, there were several hundreds of carriages. In other words, the Mage group numbered a minimum of a thousand people.

But what made Zhao Hai confused was the fact that when a person reaches God-rank, their energies would undergo a change. Whether they be Mage spiritual force or Warrior Battle Qi, they would be transformed into another type of pure energy. This energy was able to be used in both warrior and mage techniques. Because of this, there really weren't any division between Mage and Warrior when one becomes God-rank. But yet the Divine Race had all of these Mages, what was this all about?

Although he couldn't understand it, Zhao Hai still managed to have a general idea of how many Divine Race people arrived in the continent. There were a lot of newcomers, 5 million to be exact. And this didn't even count the logistics personnel that were assigned as support.

This number made Zhao Hai's expression even heavier. If one counted the logistic corps, then the Divine Race group that had arrived in the Ark Continent would reach near ten million.

Moreover, Cai'er also reported that the total number of magic beasts brought to the continent had numbered to 50 million. Such colossal numbers had arrived in the Ark Continent, the future seemed more worrying at this point.

Laura and the others also had a heavy heart as they stood by Zhao Hai's side. They didn't expect the Divine Race to send such numbers in one go.

After some time, Zhao Hai let out a long breath and said, "It looks like the Divine Race had really decided to destroy us. But this is also good. Now we can finally see the strength of the Divine Race. However, I think that these aren't the only troops that the Divine Race had. After all, the Divine Race still had enemies, and they need their troops in order to defend against them."

Laura was puzzled by Zhao Hai's statement, "Where did you get that from, Brother Hai? Why haven't I heard of that before?"

Zhao hai smiled faintly and said, "It's because the Divine Realm is much larger than the Ark Continent. Just as Iron Hammer said, the Divine Realm is divided into 13 different continents. It is possible that the one we are facing right now were the forces from one continent. The other continents still haven't arrived. Moreover, haven't you discovered that the Divine Race army has been made up of veteran troops? They are very different compared to those who only finished their training and hadn't been in the battlefield before. Otherwise, they wouldn't have their current temperament."

When they heard this, Laura and the others immediately turned their gazes towards the Divine Race army. And just like Zhao Hai said, most of these people seemed to be battle hardened veterans. Their temperament was very different compared to any greenhorn.

Then Zhao Hai said, "Since they had gone to the battlefield, then it meant that they had enemies. Because of this, I am fairly certain

that they had more troops than this. And from what I heard from Iron Hammer, it seems like their enemies were the Gods of the foreign races.”

Laura nodded and said, “Right, Brother Hai, since you have turned some Divine Race into undead, haven’t you asked them about the Divine Race? And did you ask them about the current power distribution in the Divine Realm?”

When he heard Laura, Zhao Hai couldn’t help but give a force smile and said, “I haven’t really done that, I was too focused on the current battle to turn them into Advanced level undead. But from the method of making low-level undead, I’m quite sure that they haven’t retained their memories. Even if we ask them right now, then we wouldn’t be able to get anything.”

Laura nodded and said, “And what now? What do we do?” Zhao Hai looked at the Divine Race at the monitor and said, “We do what we need to do. After all, things will happen even if we don’t do anything. Fortunately, we had made ample preparations in the past few days. We’ll still be using the Buddha Empire in order to deal with them.”

At this time, Lizzy gave a nod and asked, “That’s the only thing we can do. Big Brother Hai, I think that the Divine Race’s Heavy Cavalry aren’t able to fly. So they should only be able to do ground battles. However, from what I can see, I’m afraid that their might is something that the Ark Continent wouldn’t be able to contend with. Have you thought of ways in order to deal with them?”

Zhao Hai looked at the Divine Race cavalry, especially the Heavy cavalry. Although the Heavy Cavalry mounts looked very heavy, they actually weren’t that slow. Even if the Ark Continent had their own heavy cavalry, they still wouldn’t be able to contend with the Divine Race. After all, the mounts of the Divine Race were at least 8th ranks, one would be hard pressed to look for those kinds of mounts in the Ark Continent.

Moreover, having this cavalry unit wasn't only about their mount, their training would take a long time as well. There really wasn't any heavy cavalry unit in the Ark Continent that can directly confront the heavy cavalry of the Divine Race. The closest ones who can face them would probably be among the Beastmen. But even the Herculean Bulls wouldn't be able to face them head-on. Zhao Hai thought about it for quite some time before he turned to Lizzy and said, "It's really hard to deal with the heavy cavalry of the Divine Race, their charges would definitely be very strong. I've thought of something, we can ask the Dwarves to have their iron armor beasts deal with these guys. The Dwarven cavalry is mainly composed of their iron armor beast. Since the Divine Race's heavy cavalry can't fly, then we can just leave them to the Dwarves."

Lizzy thought about Zhao Hai's suggestion and nodded, "Having the Dwarves deal with them is indeed a good idea. How about their light cavalry? Will we have the Elves deal with them?"

Zhao Hai nodded and said, "It seems like the Elves are the only ones that can go against those light cavalry. There is no doubt that the winged horses of the Divine Race are able to fly. Moreover, although they are mainly equipped with spears, they also have bows and arrows equipped. With our Blood Hawks, the Elves should be able to have the capabilities to fight them."

Lizzy nodded, "It seems like we cannot just rely on our own power in order to deal with the Divine Race. They are just too strong, we can't stop them ourselves. We should adjust the armies of the continent and ask them to come over and help."

Zhao Hai agreed, "Right, we should have the Dwarves and the iron armor beasts, the Elves and the Blood Hawks, Rosen Empire's heavy infantry, and the Lyon Empire's magic beast cavalry move over. The Buddha Empire's heavy cavalry is just too slow, if we have them fight, then they would definitely suffer huge losses. We'll have the Rosen Empire's heavy infantry guard the walls of the city. At the same time, we should get some of the faster cavalry

units from the Beastmen and have them prepare for the battles in the Buddha Empire.”

Lizzy nodded, “Alright. Also, we should be on guard about their magic cannons. When the fight comes, we should do our best to snatch a couple of them. Then we’ll take them back and have them studied.”

Zhao Hai shook his head and said, “I’m afraid that would be difficult. Haven’t you noticed? The Divine Race are overly protective of their magic cannons. All of them are placed in the middle of a team of soldiers who are also in the middle of a large army. Dealing with those people wouldn’t be easy. However, moving those cannons should be very hard, so I’m not too worried about them at this point. What I’m worried about is another group of people.”

When Lizzy heard Zhao Hai, she recalled the newcomer groups, then her expression turned stern as she said, “Big Brother Hai, is it about those groups of mages?”



## Chapter 736 – Adjusting The Army

---

Zhao Hai nodded and said, “Iron Hammer said that once one reaches God-rank, then their magic and battle qi would transform into a new type of energy. The Divine Race calls this Origin Force. I don’t know if it is really called that, but I can confirm that this energy can be used in both magic and battle qi applications. So in this case, why would there be a division between mage and warrior? It is impossible for the Divine Race to overlook this aspect. However, there are people in Mage attire in the Divine Race army. Don’t you think that this is strange?”

When Lizzy and the others heard Zhao Hai, they couldn’t help but gawk before knitting their eyebrows. They haven’t been paying attention when Iron Hammer talked about Origin Force, so this was the first time that they had heard about it from Zhao Hai. If what Zhao Hai said was true, then the Mages in the Divine Army really did seem very strange.

Megan looked at Zhao Hai and said, “Elder Brother Hai, are you saying that these Mages have some special skill? And this was the thing that made you unsettled?”

Zhao Hai nodded, “Right. I suspect these Mages to have something special. Otherwise, the Divine Race wouldn’t have given them this much importance. However, what did they have that made them important? The Ark Continent only had magic and battle qi while origin force is just equal to an upgraded version of the two of them. If these mages were only capable of magic, then they wouldn’t have been this respected.’

Megan knit her brows and said, “Origin Force is a transformation of battle qi and magic, so there should be no need to have mage training. Right, Brother Hai, can origin force be used to summon creatures for battle?”

Zhao Hai couldn’t help but stare at Megan’s statement. He really

didn't know about this matter. All of his undead were taken care of by the Space, so there was no need for him to expend any energy. Because of this, he paid no attention to matters such as these.

Zhao Hai looked at Megan and said, "What you mean is, those people who look like Mages, are actually Summoners?"

Megan nodded, then said, "It's highly probable. You can look at the Demon Lich, they have their own special summoning spells for battle. These spells would surely be useful when one becomes God-rank. Although most Mages weren't into summoning magic, the Divine Race had fought for a long time, so they should be able to see the advantages of summons. Because of this, I reckoned that those people with Mage clothing were actually the Divine Race's special Summoners."

Zhao Hai nodded, he thinks that Megan's speculation held some ground. However, this was still a guess and wasn't proven, so he said, "That might be true. In any case, we'll find out about them in a battle or two. Right now, we need to spread the word to the leaders of the continent, tell them about the might of the Divine Race so that they can prepare in advance. Have the citizens enter the big cities with magical formations."

Lizzy and the other complied and then went on to do their job. At the same time, Zhao Hai continued to observe the movements of the Divine Race. After the new group arrived, they didn't move immediately. Instead, they occupied the surrounding cities, seemingly taking a break before beginning their conquest.

Zhao Hai wanted to see how they will be arranged. But unfortunately, the Divine Race were careful. Whenever they talk about important things, they would cast isolation magic to cover the place where they would discuss. Even with Zhao Hai's efforts, he still wasn't able to find out about anything.

Although he couldn't see anything significant, Zhao Hai was still paying careful attention towards the Divine Race. Even if he had

limited intel, he could still see when the Divine Race would attack.

But after looking at it for a while, Zhao Hai handed the task over to Cai'er. Then he went out of the villa and continued to load the magic cannons into the undead.

At this point, the magic cannons have become their main weapon against the Demons and the Divine Race. So naturally, these things needed to be carefully taken care of. These days Zhao Hai had been very busy.

Although the Divine Race reinforcement has arrived, they didn't immediately make a move. This caused Cai'er to continue her monitoring while Zhao Hai felt relief. The day after the Divine Race reinforcement arrived, Zhao Hai started to bring the Dwarf Iron Armor Beast Cavalry, the Elven Blood Hawk Cavalry, the Lyon Empire Beast Cavalry, the Beastman Race's Wolf, Dog, Cat, and Horse tribes into his current location. The Rose Empire Heavy Infantry has been brought over as well. The entire city has been transformed into a huge military barrack.

Fortunately, Zhao Hai's prestige was quite high with these groups. There was no chaos when those groups arrived in the city. Zhao Hai also allocated camps for each of them so that he wouldn't worry too much.

However, coordinating them for war has become an issue. The foreign races only listen to Zhao Hai, while the two people sent by the Rosen and Lyon Empire to lead the army both had the same status. None of the two wanted to listen to the other.

In the end, Zhao Hai sent Lizzy to have the job of commander for the unified army. This made people surprised, however, upon thinking of Lizzy's status, all of them agreed.

Lizzy was the Rosen Empire's princess, and she was also Zhao Hai's wife. These two titles aren't simple, especially her being Zhao Hai's wife. This made those present in the city behave.

The thing in the minds of these people was the same in the minds of the Lyon Empire nobles. The reason why Zhao Hai had Lizzy command the war was only for show, and Zhao Hai would still be the person being in command in the background. However, they didn't expect that Lizzy was actually more skilled in commanding a battle compared to Zhao hai.

Although this was the first time that Lizzy commanded a diverse army, she still had an experience in handling a huge army in the past. Moreover, Zhao Hai also had Megan add into the discussion and express her abilities in front of the people. With the Megan and Lizzy coordinating together, it didn't take too long before the whole city got into order.

Zhao Hai didn't dare to spoil the two of them. Although both Lizzy and Megan were beautiful women, they were truly skilled in command, they had a huge potential to become generals. In the past, they were lacking in terms of battle experience. However, after experiencing battles back in the sea as well as in the fight against the Demon Race, Zhao Hai was now assured of the two's ability.

It took two days for the armies to arrive. The reason for their quick travel was Zhao Hai's Space, every minute was crucial. Zhao Hai also wanted the soldiers to be familiar with the surrounding terrain, which would benefit them in the future battle.

Moreover, the Divine Race reinforcement had arrived, and it was possible for them to attack at any time. In this case, Zhao Hai couldn't afford to have the armies arrive in a slow rate.

Back in Demon City, Zhao Hai had the confidence to deal with the Demon Race. Even if he didn't attack on his own, he was still confident in his ability to defend.

However, when he saw the Divine Race Army, Zhao Hai knew that it was impossible to fight with them with his own strength. Average soldiers in the Divine Race army were 9th ranks. At the

same time, the numbers of God-ranks that the Divine Race had was much more than the God-ranks in Zhao Hai's side. If he wanted to defend against the Divine Race with his own strength, then he definitely wouldn't be able to defend for several days. All of the undead in his hands were not enough to block the attack of the Divine Race.

In this case, Zhao Hai had to let the other powers into the City to defend against the Divine Race together. This would also awaken the continent, making them aware about how serious the frontline has become.

Besides having them fight in the city, Zhao Hai also wanted to make the various parties see the situation with their own eyes. They needed to see how powerful the Divine Race were.

Ever since the Divine Race arrived in the continent, the powers of the continent haven't really had a proper battle with them. This made the groups of the Ark Continent ignorant to the real strength of the Divine Race. This time, Zhao Hai asked for troops in order to make them aware of the strength of the enemy.

The reason why Zhao Hai thought of this idea was because of his observations in the past few days. In the various territories in the continent, he discovered that although the countries were placed into a state of war, the people had actually turned idle, all of them were thinking that the war was too far from their own place. Because of this, their mindsets had taken a form of distance towards the frontline. Zhao Hai thought that this wasn't a great thing.

Such mentality cannot continue. Zhao Hai knew that if people were to think like this, then the upper powers would surely exhibit it sooner or later. If this was the case, then the future cooperation would slowly crumble.

Zhao Hai discovered that this issue was especially strong in the Rosen and Aksu Empires. The citizens weren't as anxious

compared to the residents of the Lyon and Buddha Empire. The citizens of the Buddha Empire were far away from their homes, so it was natural that they felt strong attachment towards this war, and this sentiment was carried over to the Lyon Empire citizens. However, this sense of crisis seemed to be lacking in both the Rosen and Aksu Empires.

Through this matter, Zhao Hai had found out that he was being overprotective towards the people of the Ark Continent. This caused them to forget about how cruel war could be. If they continue to think this way, then the consequences would be disastrous when the Divine Race decides to send small teams to wreak havoc in the backlines of the Ark Continent.

Because of this, Zhao Hai decided to invite large armies into Upper Bank City.

# Chapter 737 – The Fight Begins

---

Zhao Hai was currently standing on top of the city wall. The protective formation was already in place and the army were properly positioned. Everyone present here were looking at the direction of the Radiant Empire.

This wasn't a practice run, they were now in full preparation to resist the incoming army. Cai'er already told Zhao Hai that the Divine Race army had started to make their move. This time, the Divine Race placed both of their cavalries up front, supported by their infantry and Mage corps. They were preparing to rush straight into the city and break through it in one go.

It was because of this that Zhao Hai's side had started to behave like this. It has been three days since all of the Ark Continent's powers had sent their troops over to the city. To be honest, the Divine Race refraining from making their attack had made Zhao Hai quite worried. It was only now that they made their move did Zhao Hai felt relief.

If the Divine Race didn't attack, then it meant that they had a bigger plot in their hands. If they attacked, then it meant that there weren't any sneaky plans. It seems like the three days were used in pure recuperation.

In Zhao Hai's side was a Dwarf, an Elf, a heavily armored man, a cavalry soldier, some Beastmen, as well as Lizzy, Megan, Berry, and Shue.

These people were the city's management staff. Zhao Hai wanted them to see how fierce the Divine Race looked.

On the walls beside them were the Rosen Empire's heavy armor infantry. Although these troops were used generally for field battles, they were still able to defend a city comfortably. After all, they were Rosen Empire's elite. At this moment, magic cannons were strewn all around the city's walls. Zhao Hai didn't make the

undead control these cannons, instead, he handed them over to the heavy armor infantry.

Zhao Hai stood calmly on the city wall, although the army had yet to come, the whole city was full of anticipation. There was a sense of breathlessness emanating among the troops.

The Dwarf standing next to Zhao Hai muttered as he stared at the Radiant Empire's direction, "Why haven't they appeared yet? I can't wait all day."

Zhao Hai turned his head to look at the Dwarf. This Dwarf wasn't an elder, he was a General of the Dwarf Race, the commander of the Iron Beast cavalry. This time, the Dwarves had sent over a hundred thousand iron armor cavalry, this wasn't a small number.

Moreover, after arriving at the city, the Dwarves started to make their move. In the plains outside the city, they had made a lot of tunnels. These tunnels would allow ordinary troops to pass through safely without any issue. However, once the Divine Race's Heavy Cavalry walks on top of them, they would immediately collapse, and the Dwarves would be waiting underground to ambush them. As long as they go under, the Dwarves, in their natural habitat, would gain absolute advantage.

Zhao Hai smiled and said, "Baker, no need to be anxious. They will arrive soon."

The Dwarf Baker smiled faintly and said, "I'm quite anxious to see how formidable those Divine Race fellows really are. For me to be able to help the elder is a great blessing. You might not know, but when the clan voted me to be sent over, the other Generals almost fought with me over it."

Zhao Hai laughed and then replied, "Are you sure you won't regret it? You're going to battle right now, but I don't want you to die. Baker, remember to have safety as your utmost priority."

Baker nodded and said, "Elder, rest assured, we've already



prepared for it. The Dwarves wouldn't die so easily."

At this moment, a Beastmen inserted, "We aren't afraid of death as well. Prince, when will you send us out to attack?"

Zhao Hai gave a slight smile and said, "Don't worry, you will have the chance to fight. Even if the main actors this time are the Dwarves and Elves, you should still prepare yourselves for battle. All of you, remember to make ranged attacks as much as possible. Especially the Elves, the enemy's cavalry isn't weak."

Standing on the wall was a male Elf, he had a handsome but messy face. He always had a cold expression but when he heard Zhao Hai he gently nodded and said, "The elder can rest assured, the Elves aren't afraid of death as well."

Zhao Hai sighed and then said, "I know that you don't fear death. However, I didn't take you here to die. You could be said to be the continent's first batch of troops to fight against the Divine Race. As long as you survive, then you would understand the attack patterns of the Divine Race. Their tactics cannot be understood in just one or two days. You must keep on living and teach the others about how to resist against the Divine Race. I hope that we can repel the Demons and the Divine Race with as little losses to the continent as possible."

The group nodded, then Zhao Hai continued, "This war isn't going to good for our side. Both the Demon and the Divine Realm is much larger than the Ark Continent. And their residents are leagues stronger than us. Because of this, we cannot have the mentality of sacrificing ourselves in battles. It's not that I'm afraid of death, I just don't want unnecessary deaths. Do you understand?"

The group nodded once more. Although these people wouldn't generally listen to other race's words, it was a different matter when it came to Zhao Hai. Zhao Hai's influence had been spread out to all of them. At the same time, their groups were also grateful

to Zhao Hai. This was the reason why there were no problems when it came to him making the decisions.

At this time, sound of rumbling was suddenly heard in the distance while the earth shook at the same time. As long as one had experience, then they would surely know that this was due to the movement of Heavy Cavalry. The charge of a heavy cavalry unit was the most imposing thing that one can see in the battlefield. Their movements alone could make the earth shiver, if any other troop dared to clash with them at this state, then they would certainly get crushed.

Every person on the walls were attracted towards this rumbling noise. Before long, a silver film had started to fill the grounds in the distance. This silver film approached quite quickly, and their imposing aura could be felt as they kick up dust while they approach.

Zhao Hai turned his head to Baker and said, “Baker, you go. Remember, the number you kill doesn’t matter. Just make sure to protect your lives. It still isn’t time to go all out against the Divine Race.” Baker gave a nod before he turned back and entered the tunnels.

Then Zhao Hai turned to the Elf and said, “The Divine Race’s light cavalry should be arriving soon, you should prepare yourself as well. Remember, just like what I said to the Dwarves, the kills doesn’t matter. Just make sure to protect your lives. The Blood Hawks are fast, take good advantage of this.” The Elf gave a salute before he turned around and left the wall.

Then Zhao Hai turned his head towards the group of Beastmen and said, “You go prepare as well. Head outside the city using the back door. Coordinate with the Dwarves. Although the cavalry speed of the Divine Race isn’t slow, they still couldn’t catch up to your troops. Don’t think of going all out, just fight with the intention of finding out about their strength.”

The Beastmen nodded then they gave a short bow before leaving. Zhao Hai turned his head to Lizzy and Megan, "The undead command will be handed over to you. Cai'er, come out and help. Berry, Shue, let's go." Then Zhao Hai summoned his bone dragon as he flew out of the city. At this time, Cai'er appeared in Lizzy's shoulder. Cai'er waved her hand as a screen appeared in front of Lizzy and Megan. This will help them facilitate the battle more conveniently.

Lizzy and Megan looked at the projection and saw a group of green lights approaching. They were already aware that the green lights were the enemies while the red lights were their allies. Since they had yet to release the undead, the red lights this time were only composed of Zhao Hai's group as well as the Dwarves in the field.

Zhao Hai was also starting to see the other party's light cavalry. The horned pegasus were flapping their wings as they flew forwards. All of them flew with grace, but were not so fast. However, Zhao Hai didn't dare look down on them. These horned pegasus naturally weren't using their maximum speed. When the battle starts, their actions certainly wouldn't be like this.

However, Zhao Hai's main attention wasn't in these flying cavalry. Instead, he was focused on the Mage corps behind the light cavalry. Although Megan speculated them to be Summoners, nobody knew for sure whether this was correct. This compelled Zhao Hai to pay more attention to their group compared to the others.

When the horned pegasus were several kilometers away from Zhao Hai, a clump of red cloud suddenly appeared behind the city. Naturally, this red cloud was the Elven Race's Blood Hawk cavalry.

After the Blood Hawk cavalry flew out of the city, they immediately dashed towards the Divine Race's light cavalry. This made the horned pegasus cavalry stare. The Divine Race were aware of the races in the Ark Continent, therefore, they certainly

had some understanding regarding the Elves. However, they didn't know that the Elves had managed to have their own aerial troops.

To be honest, nobody could blame the Divine Race for this. After the Radiant Church suppressed the Elves, their understanding of the race had become too few. Although they had sent some spies towards the Elven Forest, their main purpose was to control the race and not to report back on their findings. Since this was the case, the spies didn't go out of their way to exit the forest. This also made it possible for the Elves to hide their aerial troops.

However, even if they were discovered, the Elven Race's original aerial troops were composed of soundless soundbirds. But the voiceless soundbirds had no fighting prowess, they were completely herbivorous. Because of their docile nature, it would be impossible for the Elves to teach them how to fight.

But now, the Elves had the Blood Hawks. These were phantasmal beasts that were made by Zhao Hai's Space. Their fighting strength were very strong. Even if the Divine Race were aware of the Elves' aerial cavalry, they still wouldn't be aware of the Blood Hawks.

However, the main reason why Zhao Hai was confident in sending the Elves to deal with the Divine Race's light cavalry was because he had given the Elves a secret weapon. As long as the Elves use this, then they would become much stronger than the Divine Race's light cavalry. Their light cavalry unit would surely suffer heavy losses in the Elves' hands.

# Chapter 738 – The Dwarves' First Accomplishment

---

Secret weapon, but in fact, it wasn't much of a secret. What Zhao Hai gave the Elves were actually blood lightning beads! The bow and arrow that the Elves use were generally based on shooting stone beads. Zhao Hai doesn't know how they do it, but not only could they shoot round objects, they can shoot them extremely accurately. It can be said that they are the most skilled archers in the entire Ark Continent.

Because of this skill, Zhao Hai prepared a lot of blood lightning beads for the Elves to use. The might of these beads, when used on a bow and arrow, certainly wouldn't be small.

The blood lightning bead that Tiger Huan had before definitely wouldn't work in this manner. His blood lightning beads needed to be activated using spiritual connection. On the other hand, Zhao Hai's blood lightning beads would produce an explosion on impact, which was more convenient to use.

The beads were the reason why Zhao Hai was confident in having the Elves face the Divine Race light cavalry. He didn't only give the beads to the Elves, he gave some of them to the Dwarves as well. However, because of the Dwarves' battlefield, Zhao Hai gave them instructions to not use the beads wantonly. If necessary, not use them at all.

Conversely, Zhao Hai gave the beastmen a big supply of blood lightning beads. The Beastmen were mounted warriors. Since they cannot use magic cannons, their second best choice would be the blood lightning beads.

Although Zhao Hai didn't stop upgrading the strengths of the major races, time was still quite limited. Therefore, the average strengths of the races still weren't up to par. To combat this disparity in strength, Zhao Hai can only provide them with blood

lightning beads.

One must say that Zhao Hai was really thankful towards Tiger Huan. If it weren't for his blood lightning bead, then Zhao Hai wouldn't have known about this magic. They were the most efficient things to have in dealing with the Divine Race.

The Elven Blood Hawk cavalry slowly approached the Divine Race. Naturally, horned pegasus cavalry also noticed the approaching enemies. They immediately separated a small group in order to meet the Elves. The Elven cavalry quickly performed a retreat, but not before sending a barrage towards the approaching horned pegasus group.

The Elven Race's beads were also special since they held a magic formation within itself. Although its strength was inferior to the blood lightning bead, their might was still formidable when fired towards the enemy.

However, it soon become obvious that those beads were ineffective towards the Divine Race. The horned pegasus cavalry immediately hoisted their spears as they held their shields in front of them, easily blocking the incoming attack. Zhao Hai paid attention to the shields and saw Divine Race formations engraved on them, no wonder they were defensively effective.

The Elves didn't use their blood lightning beads yet. Zhao Hai understood their decision, they wanted to wait until the Divine Race lowers their guard before they give them the full brunt of their attack.

Zhao Hai stopped thinking about these as he released large quantities of undead. At the same time, he moved the undead mobile cannons in front, meeting the Divine Race advance.

While waiting for the enemies to get closer, Zhao Hai turned his attention towards the heavy cavalry on the ground. These Divine Race heavy cavalry naturally weren't expecting an ambush. They were just simply and uncaringly charging towards the city.

Zhao Hai looked at the heavy cavalry and silently calculated their strength. When he came to it, Zhao Hai discovered that this heavy cavalry unit wasn't very strong. On average, they only had 8th rank strength. This made Zhao Hai surprised.

These heavy cavalry seemed to be the worst of the Divine Race army. At first, Zhao Hai didn't understand what was going on, but after looking into it and asking Cai'er, he finally understood.

These heavy cavalry weren't actually completely composed of the Divine Race. Them and the Divine Race had some differences in their appearance. It seems like this heavy cavalry were completely different people!

Their foreheads were low, their mouth was slightly protruding and looked like a monkey's mouth, completely unlike a human's. Their body hair was also very thick. However, their bodies were big and strong, it wouldn't be a good idea if one were to provoke them.

The weapon in their hands were also special. It was a weapon that Zhao Hai hadn't seen before, it looked like a long sword but was actually a hammer.

Each hammer looked like it wouldn't weigh less than fifty kilograms. Even average 8th ranks wouldn't use such weapons for battle. An 8th rank's battle qi would allow them to carry a 10 jin sword and fight for several hours. However, if they carry a 100 jin(50 kgs) hammer then they can carry them for an hour, at most. Aside from innately strong people, nobody would use such heavy weapons.

The Divine Race heavy cavalry seemed to be wild men. Each and every one of them were wearing heavy full body armor. They were brandishing their hammers as though they were light. One couldn't help but recognize their strength upon seeing such a display.

As the heavy cavalry were charging through, the ground under

them suddenly collapsed. Moreover, it wasn't a small hole, it was big enough to swallow about a thousand heavy cavalry soldiers.

Zhao Hai knew that this was the move of the Dwarves. One must say that when it came to digging, the Dwarves were the supreme masters of the art. The holes that they dug were enough to support a number of troops. But when that capacity reaches the target, then the ground would immediately collapse, eating up the unfortunate victims. This tactic had been effectively used by the Dwarves in their previous battles against mounted armies.

As the first batch heavy cavalry fell into the pit, there were also troops from behind who weren't able to stop in time, which also caused them to fall into the pit.

The hole was actually filled with numerous stone spikes. If these spikes were used normally, then they wouldn't have been very effective. But in this occasion, their lethality had increased by many folds. When the heavy infantry units fell into the hole, they were immediately killed by those spikes.

The Dwarves didn't even appear from beginning to end. When these cavalry soldiers died, they immediately vanished from the pit. Those who looked into the whole only saw bloodstains, nothing else.

The remaining heavy cavalry unit couldn't help but be surprised. But at this time, a shout can be heard behind them, compelling them to move around the pit and continued to charge forward, gradually approaching the city. However, as they went around the pit, they were once again met with a pit that was filled by stone spikes. But this time, aside from the careless ones, the hole had been rendered completely useless.

At the same time, a bunch of yellow light appeared in front of the cavalry unit, allowing them to step across the hole without falling into it.

Zhao Hai made Cai'er look into this situation. It seems like the



Divine Race had used earth element magic which was evidently better than the ones used by the Dwarves. At the same time this magic also killed about a hundred Dwarves while injuring dozens.

Zhao Hai frowned, it seems like the Divine Race were quite experienced about these types of arrangements. They were very efficient in their ways of countering the Dwarves. The fluidity in their action wasn't something that can be practiced in such a short time.

Then Zhao Hai changed his mind as he guessed the reason. The Divine Race surely had their enemies in the Divine Realm. Perhaps it was against foreign gods that used the same tactics as the Dwarves. Or perhaps they themselves were using such tactics. This explains why they were able to deal with it very quickly.

Zhao Hai didn't actually care about this. The heavy cavalry units wouldn't be a huge threat to the city. Additionally, with the Beastmen in coordination with the Dwarves, the situation should be placed under control soon.

Zhao Hai turned his focus to the other enemies in front of him, the horned pegasus cavalry and especially the Mage corps. He wanted to see what they would bring to the battlefield.

The horned pegasus cavalry were still gracefully flying towards Zhao Hai's direction. The light cavalry unit numbered in the hundreds of thousands, much greater than the about hundred thousand Elven cavalry. The horned pegasus cavalry didn't even chase the Elves. In their minds, sending a small team over should be enough to deal with them.

The Divine Race were really arrogant, but they would surely pay the price for this attitude. Zhao Hai coldly snorted, he had more than 1 million undead behind him, several hundred of which were equipped with magic cannons. Moreover, these several hundred undead didn't carry only one magic cannon, they had multiple inside of them. Their killing power wasn't something to be

underestimated.

It was quite obvious that this horned pegasus unit was much stronger than the heavy cavalry. Although they were composed of mostly 9th ranks, they also had God-ranks among them.

Before long, the horned pegasus cavalry stopped a kilometer away from Zhao Hai. They just stood in place as they looked at his direction. They didn't move and they didn't speak, it seems like they were waiting for something.

Zhao Hai didn't speak as well. He looked as the infantry behind the light cavalry arranged themselves. Then the Divine Race mages started to fly towards him.

Zhao Hai looked at these people, he didn't know what they wanted to do. However, Zhao Hai made up his mind and decided to cope with the events as they happen.

## Chapter 739 – Projection?

---

Before long, the Divine Race's magic cannons arrived at the forefront of the battlefield. At this time, the formation had changed. The light cavalry divided itself into two wings and went to both sides of the formation while the infantry took up the position of the center. It was a well-performed change to a winged formation.

Zhao Hai calmly looked at the other party's arrangements. He had already prepared his cube formation and was waiting for the enemy to come. But seeing that they didn't charge immediately, it seems like the other party wanted to exchange a few words.

And Zhao Hai's guess was right. The Divine Race's formation stopped in its tracks as a person wearing a mage's robe flew forward. Zhao Hai felt that this person was strange, however, he really didn't know why he felt this.

He was wearing a snow white robe while he held a nearly transparent magic staff. In the staff's head was actually a winged statue of a young girl. The statue emanated an angel's holiness. And under his feet were clouds, giving him a look of a holy saint.

Wait! Clouds? Are those clouds under his feet? Zao Hai thought about it and gawked. It was now that Zhao Hai understood the strangeness of this person. It was actually because of the clouds on his feet.

One must know that their current altitude wasn't high enough for clouds to appear. However, this person was actually stepping on a bunch of them, this was what made Zhao Hai feel strange.

But Zhao Hai was also quick to discover that the clouds on this person's feet weren't just decorations, they should be weapon themselves.

Although Zhao Hai can also make clouds appear as long as he uses

water magic, it would still be water vapor in the end. Being attractive and mystical wasn't something that a simple water spell could do.

The cloud that this person was stepping on was different. The clouds themselves look like they were their own entity. The clouds were soft, and whenever the person steps on them, they would even sink a bit.

Zhao Hai's eyes unconsciously narrowed. It seems like this Divine Race person wasn't so simple. Just his clouds were enough to surprise Zhao Hai, there was no need to say about the staff on his hand.

The Divine Race person was also sizing Zhao Hai up. He had an ordinary face, a black mage's robe, a blood red magic staff, and was standing on top of a bone dragon. It wouldn't take too long for one to see that he was a Dark Mage.

The Divine looked at Zhao Hai and then bowed, "Mister Zhao Hai? Thine is the Divine Race's High War General, Cloud Ying. I have finally seen ye." [1]

Zhao Hai didn't think that this person would be polite. He stared for a moment before he quickly gave his reply, "This is indeed Zhao Hai. I have seen War General Cloud Ying."

Cloud Ying looked at Zhao Hai and laughed. He didn't look like an enemy at all. He seemed more like a good friend, a very good friend.

When Zhao Hai saw Cloud Ying's action, his heart couldn't help but feel more vigilant. He knew that people like Silver Shuke weren't the true dangerous characters. Those who looked like Cloud Ying were the real monsters. This person was basically a smiling tiger, one who calls you brother while he stabs you in the chest.

Zhao Hai didn't make any noise as he continued to look at Cloud

Ying. This made Cloud Ying surprised, he didn't think that Zhao Hai would be in such a good condition, he wasn't angry at all. It was at this moment that Cloud Ying also placed Zhao Hai in his list of dangerous people. Cloud Ying knew that the situation cannot stay this stiff, so he said, "Doth hath heard of mister's name for a long time. Mister's name is as commons as the clouds whenever the Ark Continent gets discussed. This Cloud Ying had always admired mister, it is a great fortune for me and my party to be able to meet you today." [2]

Zhao Hai couldn't help but feel sour at this point. Although he liked to read ancient literature, opportunities to speak like them was too few. Cloud Ying's way of talking wasn't something that Zhao Hai was used to.

However, Zhao Hai still replied, "Mister is overpraising me. I am no more than an ordinary citizen of the Ark Continent. It should be me who needs to feel honored. The Divine Realm is very large and populous, for mister to have his current standing is something that is extremely laudable. This Zhao Hai is very honored to have met you."

While Zhao Hai's expression was calm, he was actually feeling quite sour inside. However, since the other side wanted to talk nonsense, then it was only good manners to reply with nonsense as well.

Zhao Hai's reply made Cloud Ying stare he didn't think that Zhao Hai would have this kind of response. He also felt disgusted, but he couldn't say anything. Cloud Ying was starting to feel that Zhao Hai was very hard to deal with.

However, Cloud Ying still replied to Zhao Hai, "It seems like mister also has some understanding with regards to the Divine Realm. Mister should know that the dream of the people in the Ark Continent's people was to enter the Divine Realm and become a member of the Divine Race. This time, our Divine Race went against the laws and broke the space to enter the Ark Continent. So

why would mister meet us with hostile intentions?”

Zhao Hai looked at Cloud Ying and then smiled faintly, “You’re right, the people in the Ark Continent really wanted to ascend to the Divine Realm and become a member of the Divine Race. However, why haven’t there been any ascensions in the past tens of thousands of years? Shouldn’t Mister Cloud Ying be aware of this reason? Since the Divine Realm doesn’t want us, then the Ark Continent naturally wouldn’t reach out for friendship. We decided to live our lives peacefully but we didn’t think that you would actually want to disrupt our lives. Now, tell me, why shouldn’t I meet you with hostility?”

Cloud Ying didn’t expect Zhao Hai to suddenly be impolite, his words suddenly turning sharp. Cloud Ying’s expression couldn’t help but sink as he said, “So mister is saying that my Divine Race had disrupted the life of the Ark Continent? The continent is a plane under the jurisdiction of the Divine Race, it belongs to us. This means that the residents of this plan is of a lower life form compared to the Divine Race. For us to open the space to the Ark Continent is akin to giving you face. But mister is actually ungrateful, isn’t this quite ironic?”

Zhao Hai couldn’t help but laugh out loud, “You Divine Race really are what I heard you to be. You actually think that your invasion of the Ark Continent is a sacred task. Hahaha. This Zhao Hai has seen shameless people in his life, but I haven’t seen people who are as shameless as you. You broke the Space? Then let me ask you, what did it take for you to break the space? You actually used the flesh and blood of my people, millions of them. It is a shameless crime to claim their sacrifice as your own merit. Let this Zhao Hai give you an advice. You want to rule the Ark Continent? Then make sure that you manage to kill every single one of us. Otherwise, I will lead the people of the Ark Continent towards the Divine Realm and slaughter the Divine Race!”

At the end of his speech, Zhao Hai’s killing aura had reached the

heavens. Cloud Ying couldn't help but change his expression as he saw Zhao Hai. Then his voice turned cold as he said, "Since mister doesn't want to hand the Ark Continent over. Then we shall identify it as a rebellion. Mister fighting with us will only bring ruin to the Ark Continent. However, we don't know if the other people in the continent shares this idea."

Zhao Hai looked at Cloud Ying and smiled faintly, "Mister doesn't need to worry about this matter. To be honest, I am very worried for mister. The Demons had also arrived in the Ark Continent. Have you taken them into account? If the Divine Race suffers heavy casualties in the Ark Continent, then are you still able to keep your territory in the Divine Realm?"

When Cloud Ying heard Zhao Hai, his complexion couldn't help but change. Zhao Hai's understanding of the Divine Realm was extremely good. This made him quite confused. The Radiant Church has rewritten the history of the Ark Continent. At this point, the Ark Continent shouldn't have any records pertaining to the matters of the Divine Realm. Where did Zhao Hai acquire such information?

Seeing Cloud Ying's change in complexion, Zhao Hai couldn't help but smile, "Talking here would be a waste of breath. What are you waiting for? I've been waiting here for a long time, I wanted to see how strong the people that the Divine Race had sent this time."

Cloud Ying gawked, when he saw Zhao Hai's smiling face, he couldn't help but coldly snort and said, "Do you really think that we couldn't deal with you? You think that your undead are able to stop the Divine Race? You are completely dreaming. Today, I shall let you witness the might of the Divine Race. I shall let you know that whoever blocks our path would die!"

The Cloud Ying waved his hand as the staffs of the Mages behind him shone. Then the Mages waved their staff and released a white light which combined with each other. It formed a huge light ball before it blasted out and made a rift in the sky. And then from that

rift, a shadow of a person suddenly came out.

When Zhao Hai saw this person, he couldn't help but stare. The person was wearing an ash gray close fitting gown. The hair on his head was very long but was tied by a silver headpiece. The person wore soft bottom leather shoes and was carrying a folding fan on his hand.

Zhao Hai couldn't help but be shocked with this image. This figure shouldn't appear in the Ark Continent, it shouldn't even appear in the Divine Realm. This was because the figure looked exactly like an ancient Chinese rich Young Master. This person had a faint yellow skin, black hair, black pupils and looked Chinese. What was going on?

However, Zhao Hai was quick to know that this person was only a phantom. Although Zhao Hai couldn't feel that the person wasn't there, he was certain that the figure wasn't a real person, but a projection instead.



## Chapter 740 – Immortal Cultivator?

---

Although Zhao Hai was certain that it was just a projection, he still didn't dare to underestimate it. This was because the figure was giving him a strong pressure, a pressure that Zhao Hai had felt for the first time. Zhao Hai was certain that this person was extremely strong.

As soon as the projection appeared, he turned around to look at the scene. Then he showed a look of disappointment on his face as he turned to Cloud Ying, "Why did you invite me over?" Zhao Hai noticed that this person was being impolite to Cloud Ying. He even addressed him by 'you'. At the same time, he also said 'invited', not called or found. It seems like this person's status was much higher than Cloud Ying.

Sure enough, Cloud Ying became subservient to this person as he replied, "I have seen the Deity. I came here to perform the Deity's work. But this person is obstructing us. I'm afraid we have to ask the Deity for help."

Then the person looked over to Zhao Hai and said, "It's just a puny Foundation Establishment brat. Why are you having troubles in dealing with him."

It seems like Cloud Ying was afraid of this person. He immediately lowered his head and said, "Replying to the Deity. Although the strength of this person is ordinary, he had all sorts of tricks that are very hard to deal with. Me and the others simply don't have the means to deal with him in such a short time. Therefore, we decided to ask the Deity for help." The person looked at Zhao Hai and said, "You and the others are handling matters for me, so it is natural that I would help. As long as you remember your jobs, then I shall deal with this person." Then he addressed Zhao Hai, "Boy, it looks like you had a few achievements despite being young. Its a pity that you shall fall to my hands."

Zhao Hai looked straight into this person and said, “Are you the one who taught the Divine Race how to change the laws?” The person didn’t think that Zhao Hai would ask this question, he became more curious towards Zhao Hai as he laughed, “You certainly aren’t ordinary. Hahaha. Right, it was I who taught them. Otherwise, they would waste materials on pointless methods. Boy, if it was any other occasion, then I might accept you to be my servant. But unfortunately, you will die today.”

Zhao Hai coldly replied, “I am not interested in being another person’s dog. If you want to kill me, then do it. Since you came to this plane, I’m fairly certain that you will have restrictions on yourself. You might even be reduced to a few steps down from your current strength. Moreover, I wonder how long you will be able to stay here.”

When this person heard Zhao Hai, he couldn’t help but gawk, he looked straight at Zhao Hai and said, “Boy, you’re quite smart. Correct, I cannot stay too long in this place and I cannot use my complete strength. However, dealing with you should be easy enough.”

Zhao Hai actually laughed and said, “You’re just a projection. Even if you are strong, you are still bound to a few steps down from your actual strength. Even if you are a Nascent Soul expert, you still aren’t enough to kill me!”

When this person heard Zhao Hai’s words, his expression couldn’t help but change. He looked coldly at Zhao Hai and said, “Who told you that? Nobody in this place should be able to know what a Nascent Soul expert is. Who are you?”

Zhao Hai calmed himself, he coldly looked at the person and said, “And why should I tell you?” Zhao Hai said the word ‘Nascent Soul’ as a probe. This was because he had heard ‘Foundation Establishment’ from before!

These words aren’t strange when it came to the novels back on

Earth. As long as one looks at a xianxia novel, then there will be a high chance that these stages of cultivation would appear. Because of this, Zhao Hai tried to use the word ‘Nascent Soul’ that he usually read about. If this person hadn’t heard of this, then he would have no response just like Cloud Ying and the others. It was clear that the Divine Race were completely clueless what these words were, which explains their lack of response.

‘Nascent Soul’ usually came after Foundation Establishment in xianxia novels. Therefore, Zhao Hai took this word out to test the person. He actually didn’t expect that he would take the bait this easily. This made Zhao Hai’s heart sink. He knew that Foundation Establishment was no more than an entry level stage in cultivation. In other words, he had just touched the boundary and had just become an Immortal Cultivator.

Although he didn’t know which realm this person was from, but it was evident that Foundation Establishment was the lowest stage in his realm. In this case, then there were even more mysterious people behind the Divine Race. It seems like the enemies that they will face had become much stronger.

The man was evidently irritated by Zhao Hai, the look on his eyes was proof enough. The man said, “Good, good. Nobody has dared talk to this Deity this way in many years. Boy, prepare to have your soul sucked out of your body and refined. You will neither be alive nor dead.”

Zhao Hai simply replied, “Try it if you can.”

The person didn’t waste any breath, he immediately shouted, “Mountain River Fan!” The waved his hand as his fan flew out. The fan became bigger and then a big river suddenly flowed out of it and went straight to Zhao Hai. When Zhao Hai saw this situation, he immediately made a retreat as he placed all of his undead, as well as Berry and Shue into the Space. Zhao Hai had no idea about how strong this man was. The only thing he knew was that this man had called him foundation establishment. And it

seems that this person was much stronger than Zhao Hai.

Zhao Hai's figure moved as he established his Domain. Then his Domain changed into a cube that had a whirlpool in the middle, directly welcoming the incoming river.

The river that the man released was very heavy, and its impact was quite strong. In a blink of an eye, the river clashed with Zhao Hai's Domain. The Domain was constantly shaking, and Zhao Hai's face started to get pale. The impact was really heavy.

The attack wasn't a joke, the river was nothing like the spells in the Ark Continent. The river itself was a weapon that held concealed energy. Although it stopped after hitting Zhao Hai's Domain, the river stayed mobile and attacked the Domain by waves. The first wave of impact brought enough energy that it deformed the Domain.

This was the first time that Zhao Hai had encountered an attack like this. Due to its strength, he couldn't help but cough up blood. Zhao Hai knew that the person had used a magic weapon, otherwise, the attack wouldn't have been very strong.

At this time, Zhao Hai suddenly felt that everything around him had turned dim. Then a huge mountain suddenly appeared overhead. Zhao Hai became startled. If he were to block this mountain, then he would become fully exhausted. Resisting the mountain was impossible.

With an intention, Zhao Hai moved his Domain and transformed it into a rotating sphere, negating the strong attacks of the river. However, the mountain still pressed on. Zhao Hai shouted as his Domain changed into a big hand. The hand grasped the mountain, slowing its descent down.

When the person saw Zhao Hai's performance, he couldn't help but be surprised. "I didn't think that a puny foundation establishment brat such as you would actually be able to block my mountain river fan. Although the mountain river fan is just a

projection, it could still exhibit a sixth of its strength. For you to block it is surely surprising. I thought that all of the cultivation methods of this plain are pure rubbish, it seems like I have to rethink my thoughts.” Zhao Hai didn’t have the leverage to answer right now. He made a small grunt as a blue water ball appeared in his hand. Then he threw this water ball towards the attacking river.

Although it looked like this, the water ball was actually Bubble. Bubble was said to be the source of myriad water, so Zhao Hai wanted to see if he could deal with this river with the use of Bubble. Therefore, he had Cai’er ask Bubble.

Bubble actually said yes. When Zhao Hai threw him, Bubble immediately changed his appearance into a small child made of water. Then he rotated in place as he pulled the river in. Before long, Bubble disappeared within a large spinning lake.

Then Bubble shrank his body as he returned to Zhao Hai’s Domain. Zhao Hai immediately made his move and took Bubble back to the Space. Zhao Hai felt that after Bubble absorbed the river, he had actually become unstable. Bubble would need some time before he would be able to digest it.

Although the process seemed slow, it actually happened quite fast. Zhao Hai taking Bubble out, absorbing the water, and then returning to the Space only took a blink of an eye.

When the man found out that something was wrong, Bubble had already sucked the river into his body and had returned to the Space. The man couldn’t help but get enraged. Although he only came with his projection, he would still need to expend some energy in order to maintain it, making this projection a type of avatar that once forcibly broken, then it would damage the main body. At the same time, his magical treasure also had their own treasure spirit. Their projection also held a piece of the spirit’s self. When this projection gets broken, then it would definitely cause some damage to the treasure, it might even fall a level.

One must know that for an immortal cultivator, magical treasures were very important. Each cultivator would do everything in their hands in order to upgrade their own treasures. A treasure being downgraded was the same as damaging the vitality of a cultivator, it would definitely have a direct effect in their fighting strength.

When the person saw that Zhao Hai took the river's projection away, he couldn't help but get startled as he shouted, "Brat, you dare!" One must know that the river was not made out of any ordinary river. It was actually made out of Profound Moon River, a water that was rich in yin force. It had an effect of strengthening Ghosts and held a corrosive effect towards other treasures. The man took great effort in order to refine this water for his own treasure. Who would've thought that its projection would actually be absorbed by Zhao Hai. The effect of this action towards the Mountain River Fan wasn't small. So how could he not be startled, how could he not be angry?

# Chapter 741 – Pressed to Defend

---

When Zhao Hai heard the person shout, he turned to look at his and sneered, “If you want to kill me, then you naturally need to pay a price.” Since Bubble had absorbed the river, the pressure on Zhao Hai had lessened. The only thing that he needed to deal with right now was the huge mountain.

Zhao Hai discovered that the Mountain River Fan’s mountain was inferior in attacking strength compared to the river. Although the mountain looked very formidable and had the ability to give strong pressure, that was its only attack. On the other hand, due to the dark energy inside the river, its attacks got more powerful as the waves continued to clash towards Zhao Hai’s domain.

And Zhao Hai didn’t guess wrong. The mountain and river were both part of the Mountain River Fan. However, the river was the more powerful one of the two. The water from the river was refined in the River of Nothingness. The water in that river was a treasure in their world, its power was enormous, which aided the attacking power of the river. On the other hand, the mountain was just an ordinary mountain. It was just used in order to fulfil the requirements in making the mountain river fan. Because of this, it was impossible for the mountain to be on par with the river.

The person’s face was pale as he looked at Zhao Hai and said, “Good, good. It seems like I had underestimated you. Still, you will have to die today.” Then he waved his hand as a sword came out of his ring.

The sword was three feet long and three inches wide. It was blood red and had quite a long hilt. The sword floated in the sky before the person pointed his finger to Zhao Hai and said, “Go!”

Then the scarlet sword flew straight straight towards its target. Just from its appearance, Zhao Hai knew that this sword wasn’t simple. However, he wasn’t afraid of it. He waved his hand as he

sent his blood ghost staff to meet the sword.

The person couldn't help but show a smile on his face. In his mind, Zhao Hai was simply courting death. How could something made in the Ark Continent contend with the treasures that he has. In his opinion, although Zhao Hai's staff was beautiful, it still wouldn't be able to defend against the flying sword.

However, the immortal cultivator was soon to discover his mistake. When the magic staff and the sword was about to clash, the magic staff suddenly extended a hand and went on to capture the sword, stopping it in its tracks.

The person couldn't help but be surprised. This was also because he felt that his control had been slowly diminishing. He immediately used his control method as he shouted once more, "Go!"

The sword fiercely vibrated, seemingly wanting to escape from the magic staff's grasp. But at this moment, another hand appeared in the magic staff, grabbing it once again. With two hands suppressing it, the sword found it impossible to break free.

This shook the man internally, he didn't think that his scarlet sword would actually be stopped by Zhao Hai. Zhao Hai already broken two of his treasures. At this point, the person didn't dare identify Zhao Hai as an ordinary foundation establishment cultivator anymore.

The man's expression was heavy, then he muttered a few words while his hand made some movements. The mountain that was pressing Zhao Hai was collected back into the mountain river fan. Then the person waved his hand, placing his fan into his ring while also withdrawing a black flag.

The black flag was quite large, and on its surface were drawings of horrific ghosts. The flag emanated a very gloomy aura.

The person waved the flag as numerous Evil Ghosts departed



from it. At the same time, the sunny sky was suddenly drowned out by dark clouds. As Zhao Hai looked at the black sky, the evil ghosts started to scream and rush towards him.

Zhao Hai quietly looked at these evil ghosts. He was thinking about methods to deal with these ghosts, but he didn't expect them to rush in an instant. It didn't take too long before ghosts started biting Zhao Hai's domain. Then Zhao Hai suddenly felt that his mind was going unstable. This gave Zhao Hai a surprised, he immediately released some undead to see whether they were able to deal with these ghosts.

The undead appeared outside the Domain and immediately threw themselves towards the evil ghosts. These ghosts were not physical beings, so they shouldn't be afraid of the undead. However, the undead suddenly opened their mouths and sucked in. The ghosts started to scream as they got swallowed by the undead. The undead seemed to benefit from this ordeal as the fire in their eyes started to get brighter. Then they went on to swallow another ghost.

When the man saw that the undead were eating the ghosts of this ten thousand ghost flag, he immediately became anxious. He knew that the ten thousand ghost flag wasn't easy to refine since it used the souls of countless people. In long term battles, these evil ghosts would worsen wounds and even corrode magic weapons. They were very powerful. But the man didn't expect that Zhao Hai's undead would actually be able to eat them up.

The evil ghosts were beings of yin, the undead were also beings of yin. However, the undead were much stronger compared to the ghosts. The yin qi present in the ghosts simply couldn't contend to those inside the undead. In the end, the ghosts can only become food for the undead.

Seeing that his ten thousand ghost flag was being eaten up, the man couldn't help but flare out in anger. He immediately took his flag away as his two eyes gave a blazing gaze towards Zhao hai,

“Good, good. I have greatly underestimated you, boy. I didn’t think that you would have real skill. It seems like a needed to use this.” Then he waved his hand, making a tiny pagoda appear. This tiny pagoda was black all over. Ghost images were ever present in its 9 storeys. Each level of the pagoda had eight sharp horns in it. In each horn were wind chimes, which were made out of skulls.

The person gently shook the pagoda, making the wind chimes give out a light sound. This sound was not clear, but one could still hear something akin to a wailing ghost. It had a direct impact on the mind of a person.

Zhao Hai was still inside his Domain, so he didn’t think that he would still be affected by this spiritual attack. He was pressed to defend as the attack slowly crawled into his mind. Zhao Hai couldn’t bear the pain on his head, he held his head with his hands as he gave a loud grunt.

Since Zhao Hai was affected by a spiritual attack, then it was natural for his Domain to be broken due to lack of control. The man had a wicked expression as he waved his hand and let go of the pagoda. The pagoda grew into a tower that was more than a hundred meters high as it covered Zhao hai.

Zhao Hai was currently recovering from the spiritual attack, so it was impossible for him to deal with this move. Seeing that Zhao Hai had been swallowed up by the pagoda, the man couldn’t help but laugh and said, “Boy, you have now been absorbed into this Deity’s Soul Eating Pagoda. You should be proud, I will make you into the Pagoda’s main soul!”

When Zhao Hai was taken into the soul eating pagoda, the tower immediately underwent a change. It rotated fast as a huge mouth appeared on its bottom and bit towards Zhao Hai. Since Zhao Hai was still resisting the spiritual attack, he didn’t have the capacity to evade it. His mind was still blank, it was impossible for him to evade the mouth of the pagoda.

But at this critical moment, a spatial rift suddenly appeared, taking Zhao Hai out of the pagoda and into the Space.

Upon entering the Space, Zhao Hai immediately felt more energetic, easing some the pain that he felt. Zhao Hai stared for a moment, and then knew that this was Cai'er's doing. At this time, Laura and the others ran over, they looked at Zhao Hai as Laura asked, "Brother Hai, are you alright? What just happened?"

Seeing the worry on their faces, Zhao Hai couldn't help but smile faintly and said, "I'm fine. But its fortunate that Caier' managed to pull me over. Otherwise, I would really be placed in a dangerous position. It seems like I had been negligent. Right, let me go and rest for a while."

Laura and the others nodded, and then stopped themselves from disturbing Zhao Hai. Zhao Hai proceeded to sit cross-legged, he endured the pain on his head as he controlled his divine sense towards his body.

He looked at the monster core in his lower dantian first, it was still doing well, it wasn't affected. Then he went towards the Dao Lotus, it was still good, nothing happened. Then Zhao Hai controlled his divine sense to probe his upper dantian. As soon as his divine sense entered the upper dantian, he immediately merged with the small figure. As soon as his divine sense came into contact with the small person, Zhao Hai immediately felt that his spirit had become better compared to before. His spirit seemed to become stronger as well.

Zhao Hai gawked, then he immediately understood. This must be because of the small man. Zhao Hai was in his present predicament because he had failed to make use of this small version of him. Otherwise, he wouldn't have been affected by the spiritual attack.

Zhao Hai's own divine power centered on this small man. Then the small man slowly opened his eyes. Zhao Hai immediately felt his body being washed over, he felt very good. Then his divine

sense spread outward, covering the Space and mapping all of it inside his mind.

Zhao Hai stared, then he suddenly had the urge to see if he could make this small man move his body. He couldn't help but think about moving its hand and feet.

Surprisingly, Zhao Hai discovered that his own body had actually stood up. It moved its hands and feet with just a mere thought. This feeling was very bizarre. Zhao Hai felt that he was controlling his own body while also being detached from it. He seemed like a puppet master, with his own body as the puppet.

Although the control was very fluid and Zhao Hai felt good about it. He still couldn't help but feel strange with all that just happened.

At this time, Zhao Hai suddenly felt that the uncomfortable feeling had slowly disappeared. The feeling of controlling a puppet also slowly vanished, he was now starting to feel like he was moving his own body. Zhao Hai became glad at this development. Then Zhao Hai started to feel the small man in his dantian, it was still there, it seems like nothing has changed. Then when Zhao Hai withdrew his divine sense, he discovered that he had recovered to full!

## Chapter 742 – Surrender

---

After a few more experimentations, Zhao Hai came to understand that the small man was where his spiritual force lied. Although this was brought through when he was promoted, he didn't actively make use of this small man, which was also his spiritual strength. Only when his body and spirit fully combined did his spiritual force gained sufficient strength.

Zhao Hai relaxed, and then he opened his eye. The painful sensation that he had felt before had completely vanished. Moreover, he can also feel unprecedented strength in his own spiritual force. It was time to deal with that immortal cultivator.

When Laura and the others saw that Zhao Hai had opened his eyes, they immediately went towards him. With a caring tone, Laura asked, "Brother Hai, how was it?"

Zhao Hai gave a faint smile and said, "I'm alright. I just became careless and allowed myself to be affected by the enemy's spiritual attack. But now I'm feeling good, I should be able to deal with him. However, its very strange, the magic treasure that he used this time didn't have the strength of a projection. This tiny pagoda actually had form, it was too bizarre."

Laura and the others didn't quite understand what Zhao Hai was saying. However, they can tell that the immortal cultivator was anything but simple just by looking at his powerful attacks. Additionally, although he was a person summoned by the Divine Race, the Divine Race were the ones who were subservient towards him. This was enough to explain how strong he was.

Because of this, Laura and the others were very worried as they watched Zhao Hai's battle. Laura said, "Brother Hai, you should just stay inside the Space. Just as you said, that person wouldn't be able to stay here for too long. Just wait for him to disappear, then we'll go and deal with the Divine Race."

Zhao Hai shook his head and said, “That won’t be ideal. I must deal with this person. I have settled on his tiny pagoda. I have an inkling that the pagoda would be helpful in upgrading the undead. Rest assured, I will be fine. I’m quite confident.” Then Zhao Hai’s figure disappeared and then appeared inside the pagoda once more.

The man was startled when he found out that Zhao Hai vanished from the pagoda. This tiny pagoda was a treasure that he still hasn’t refined. However, its attack was very strong, it can be seen in how Zhao Hai was affected in its spiritual attack.

As long as one gets covered by the pagoda, the pagoda will slowly refine the victim’s flesh and blood until it extracts a person’s soul and use it to power itself. The more souls gathered, the more powerful the pagoda would become. But the thing that the pagoda lacks the most right now was a main soul.

This tiny pagoda needed a soul in order to run by itself. As long as a main soul was provided, the pagoda’s power would be further improved. A main soul would also make it more convenient to use the pagoda in the future.

The man still hadn’t found an appropriate soul to act as the pagoda’s main spirit. But this time, he had settled on Zhao Hai. Although Zhao Hai wasn’t strong, the strength of his soul was quite formidable. It would be fitting to have him as the pagoda’s main soul.

However, just as Zhao Hai was about to be refined, he suddenly disappeared. The person moved his hand, making the pagoda return. Then with his divine sense, he scanned the insides of the tiny pagoda. When he confirmed that Zhao Hai did indeed vanish, his mind couldn’t help but feel muddled.

One must know that this pagoda was one of the man’s most important treasures. He came to the Ark Continent relying on the might of this treasure. Although the soul eating pagoda can

swallow souls, it can also protect the soul of its user. His soul possessed the tiny pagoda and then came to the Ark Continent. The other treasures that he used were all projections, only this tiny pagoda was the real one among them.

Just as the man was puzzled, Zhao Hai suddenly appeared back inside the pagoda. The man stared for a moment before he immediately controlled the pagoda to refine Zhao Hai.

However, he didn't think that just as Zhao Hai appeared inside the pagoda, he immediately used his crystallization ability in order to deal with physical attacks. Then, his mind delved deep inside his upper dantian and immediately used the small man to launch a spiritual attack!

When Zhao Hai's divine sense sunk into the small man, the small man immediately opened his eyes. His silvery hair fluttered around as it extended outwards.

The silvery hair became the same property as Berry's hair. It had turned into numerous filaments as it attached to various parts of the pagoda, then it proceeded its attack.

When the man who controlled the pagoda started to feel that his control was slipping, he couldn't help but gape in surprise. Then his expression changed, as he made seals using his hands and started to fight for control over the tiny pagoda.

He was very clear, his divine sense was attached to the tiny pagoda, if the tiny pagoda were to be broken through, then his divine sense would vanish, which in turn would cause his projection to disappear.

To be honest, his projection disappearing was nothing to him. He was more concerned about not losing the soul eating pagoda. Once he loses this treasure, then his losses would definitely be huge.

Although he was using his seals, the tiny pagoda was still not in his full control. This made the man anxious, his entire figure

disappeared as he entered the pagoda himself.

Zhao Hai was currently attacking the tiny pagoda. He felt that the pagoda was being controlled by a very powerful spiritual force. And now, he was contending for the pagoda's control with the other party.

Zhao Hai had studied Berry's attack methods. One must say that the Succubus clan's achievements when it came to spiritual attacks were extremely great. Spiritual attacks had been honed to almost perfection by them. Because of this, Zhao Hai felt that even if the enemy was strong, it was still possible to take control of this pagoda.

At this time, Zhao Hai felt a formidable spiritual force pouring into the pagoda. The spiritual force was very familiar, it was just like the man in the projection.

Zhao Hai was already on guard against him. So when the man entered the pagoda, Zhao Hai immediately took notice. But Zhao Hai didn't become anxious, he just continued to use his own spiritual force to fight that person for control.

Zhao Hai discovered that his own spiritual force wasn't any worse than the other party. But since this was the first time that he used his spiritual force, he wasn't able to use it in its peak form. For now, Zhao Hai can only fight a back and forth battle with this person.

As Zhao Hai became more comfortable in using his spiritual force, he slowly began to take the upper hand in the battle. Although the person was still resisting, Zhao Hai knew that it was only a matter of time before victory comes into his grasp. At this point, Zhao Hai was being very careful with this man. He was afraid that he would do the same thing as the Demons, self destruct.

And Zhao Hai wasn't wrong. When the man discovered that he wouldn't be able to resist Zhao Hai, he became even more worried



since he had already used all of his methods in order to secure victory. Because of this, the man couldn't help but think of his last ditch method and prepared to detonate his divine sense. He wanted to heavily injure Zhao Hai as well as leave a mark on his body. As long as Zhao Hai ascends to the higher realm, the man would immediately be able to sense him. When that time comes, he would go and deal with Zhao Hai.

He was currently a projection, and the strength that his divine sense could display was only a tenth of his true power. This was the reason why he can't gain victory in his battle with Zhao Hai. If he can exhibit 100 percent of his strength, then Zhao Hai's only choice would be to hide inside the Space. It would be impossible for Zhao Hai to go head to head with the man.

When the man was about to launch his attack, Zhao Hai suddenly went all out. He poured a huge amount of spiritual force into the pagoda and before the man could respond, Zhao Hai immediately opened a rift and took the pagoda into the Space.

Zhao Hai already wanted to take the pagoda to the Space long time ago. However, it was impossible to snatch the pagoda without having a great lead in controlling it. When his control reached an ample level, only then would Zhao Hai be able to take the pagoda over to the Space.

When he entered the Space, Zhao Hai immediately came out of the pagoda. It didn't take too long before the Space issued a prompt. "Hostile program detected by the Space. Fixing the program, program fixed."

"Discovered massive amounts of dark element energy inside the weapon. Weapon can be upgraded by the host using the Processing Machine. The upgrade would require ten thousand year ice, three days, and 100 thousand gold coins. Host can also add a program to your new weapon. Tip: It is best to fuse this program to the recently fixed program that is already installed in the weapon. This will make sure that the upgrade would go well."

Zhao Hai gawked, then a wave of happiness suddenly washed over him. He didn't expect the pagoda to be upgraded. Moreover, the tiny pagoda did indeed have some uses for him. And most importantly, the Space had subdued the man's divine sense. In the future, Zhao Hai can ask this divine sense about where he came from, among other information.

Zhao Hai immediately brought the tiny pagoda over to the Processing Machine. Then he turned his head to Bubble and said, "Bubble, take out some ten thousand-year old ice."

Bubble quickly complied, his body spun as he released massive amounts of ten thousand-year ice. Then Zhao Hai pressed the start button on the Processing Machine in order to begin the tiny pagoda's upgrade.

A white light beamed out of the processing machine as it covered the tiny pagoda as well as the ten thousand year old ice. Bubble released ten cubic meters of ice this time, which was more than enough for the Processing Machine to use. After absorbing five cubic meters, the tiny pagoda vanished.

Zhao Hai turned to look as the timer of the Processing Machine started to beat. Then he relaxed as he exited the Space. He was still in a war against the Divine Race, it wouldn't be great if he were to disappear for too long.

When Zhao Hai vanished along with the man, Cloud Ying couldn't help but be shocked. He didn't think that Zhao Hai would be this hard to deal with. With Zhao Hai and the Deity vanishing, Cloud Ying didn't know whether Zhao Hai had been dealt with or whether the Deity failed.

Cloud Ying was confident with the Deity, however, after seeing Zhao Hai's performance, his confidence couldn't help but suffer a blow. He had been made aware of how scary Zhao Hai would be. He was hoping that the Deity had eliminated Zhao Hai. Otherwise, Zhao Hai would become a huge threat to the Divine Race's

advance.

# Chapter 743 – Magic Beast Upgrade

---

When Cloud Ying saw Zhao Hai disappear together with the Deity, he immediately launched an attack. He commanded the light cavalry to go and overrun the city. No change happened in the city since Zhao Hai's disappearance and Lizzy and Megan were still inside. They knew that Zhao Hai was fine because of Cai'er, so they were relieved in fighting against the Divine Race.

As the horned pegasus cavalry slowly approached the city walls, Lizzy gave an order to begin firing the magic cannons. These horned pegasus cavalry knew about how formidable these magic cannons were from Silver Shuke. Therefore, they immediately made some evasive maneuvers.

However, the crystals that Zhao Hai used this time were of the fire element. Even if the opposing party avoided it, the explosion would still affect them. This explosion was quite lethal towards the light cavalry.

As the city wall continued their salvo, a distant explosion was suddenly heard. Lizzy and Megan turned to the direction of the sound and discovered that it was where the Elven aerial cavalry was. It seems like the Elves had used their blood lightning beads.

Cloud Ying and the others also heard the explosion. He had information from Silver Shuke that Zhao Hai was able to use blood lightning beads non-stop. It was clear that the explosion came from the beads. Cloud Ying's expression couldn't help but sink, it was possible that the routed light cavalry unit had met an unfortunate fate.

Although he was aware that Zhao Hai was able to use an unlimited amount of blood lightning beads, he didn't care much of it. He knew that even if these beads were strong, it also had a restriction, only its master was able use it, no other. Because of this, he became assured and didn't bother to think that the Elves

might have blood lightning beads. But now it seems like his thoughts were wrong. Zhao hai can actually hand the blood lightning beads over to other people. This was beyond his imagination, the horned pegasus cavalry has been placed in a dangerous position.

At this time, Zhao Hai suddenly appeared in the sky above the city. Upon seeing Zhao Hai, Cloud Ying's pupils couldn't help but shrink. Zhao Hai was present while the Deity was not, what did this mean? Has the Deity been eliminated by Zhao Hai? Was this possible?

Zhao Hai looked at Cloud Ying, but he didn't bother to spare a word. He immediately released a large amount of undead to join the fight. Among these undead were God-ranks, while others had magic cannons in their bodies. Once these undead join, the horned pegasus cavalry would surely suffer.

At this moment, Cloud Ying waved his hand towards the people behind him. After that, the Divine Race who wore mage robes immediately muttered their incantations. Before long, these mages held their staffs up as it flashed a white light. When the light vanished, large quantities of magic beasts appeared.

These magic beasts were all white, and each of their figures looked fierce. Most importantly, these magic beasts were floating in the air, signifying that they are 9th ranks and some were even possibly God-rank. Moreover, their numbers weren't small. Each God-rank expert had summoned at least 10 thousand beasts. There were even some of them that managed to summon more than a million.

When the magic beasts came out, they immediately threw themselves towards the city, planning to overrun the Beastmen cavalry in the process.

Zhao Hai saw that the enemy Mages were indeed summoners. After the magic beasts appeared, he immediately waved his hand,

releasing undead in order to meet the magic beasts. Some of them went down to support the Beastmen, while some went to the skies and fought.

The battle had officially started. The light cavalry was now putting their spears away and went on to grab their bows and arrows before sending a wave of arrows towards the city's magic formation. The arrows were very powerful, although the protective shield managed to block them, ripples were constantly produced all over its surface, it was possible for the formation to shatter at any time.

Zhao Hai didn't worry about it anymore after releasing the undead. He went on to establish his Domain as he threw himself towards Cloud Ying's group. Zhao Hai wanted to go and smash the heart of the enemy camp.

It didn't take too long before Cloud Ying managed to spot Zhao Hai's approach. To be honest, Cloud Ying was somewhat afraid of Zhao Hai. This was because Zhao Hai managed to defeat their invincible Deity. For Cloud Ying and his people, the significance of this action was very big.

Because of this, Cloud Ying didn't dare face Zhao Hai head on. He immediately directed the Divine Race infantry to form a wall in front of the Mages, not giving Zhao Hai a chance to approach.

Cloud Ying was also aware of Zhao Hai's space divergent ability. In order to make sure that Zhao Hai wouldn't use his ability to deal with him, Cloud Ying also arranged a few infantry units to surround himself.

Zhao Hai really wanted to deal with Cloud Ying by using the Space. But after seeing Cloud Ying's arrangements, he knew that it became very hard to accomplish it. Zhao Hai decided to stop pursuing Cloud Ying as he diverted his attention to the horned pegasus cavalry. At this time, Berry and Shue came out, and the three of them formed a triangle as they directly killed through the

mass of flying cavalry.

With Zhao Hai as the tip, Shue and Berry formed an arrow shape behind Zhao Hai. As Zhao Hai went on to his killing spree, Berry was not there, however, one could see people dying without reason from time to time. Naturally, all those kills counted towards Berry.

There was no need to say about Shue's fighting strength. The three's triangle formation acted like a sharp knife as it sliced through the light cavalry formation. Their advance was just like a hot knife through butter. It became quite easy for them to rip open a big rift in the middle of the light cavalry formation.

The light cavalry immediately split into groups of a thousand people each. They turned into a square formation as they avoided Zhao Hai's charge. Then they proceeded to launch attacks towards Zhao Hai.

Naturally, these light cavalry units were very familiar with regards to this way of fighting. Their battle formations were made with good coordination. The light cavalry units that Zhao Hai managed to kill got fewer as the pressure mounting on Zhao Hai's back got stronger and stronger.

After seeing the change in the light cavalry unit's formation, Zhao Hai immediately waved his hand, releasing more undead into the field. These undead divided themselves into squads as they proceeded to kill the light cavalry units.

The speed of the horned pegasus was very fast. Although they were fairly huge, they still held flexibility no worse than the blood hawks. No wonder the Divine Race chose them to be their mounts, they were very good.

Most importantly, these horned pegasus also had their own magic, and it was a type of rare lightning spell. The magic wasn't weak at all. Zhao Hai was very attracted to these mounts. So just as he killed the light cavalry units, he also absorbed a couple of horned pegasus in the Space, intending to raise them in the future.

The magic beasts in the battlefield didn't only compose of horned pegasus, there were also the magic beasts summoned by the Divine Race. And similarly, Zhao Hai also captured some of them for the Space. The fighting strength of these magic beasts weren't weak, so Zhao Hai was prepared to raise them. When Zhao Hai captured these magic beasts, the Space immediately issued a prompt, "Magic beasts in the Space has been upgraded. Most magic beasts in the Space have reached 8th rank. Common beasts such as argali and blue eyed rabbits are now 8th ranks, there are also other magic beasts that reached 9th rank."

This was good news for Zhao Hai. When he heard this information, he immediately released some of the 9th rank magic beast of the Space. This time, he released the most common cattle in the Space. Blue eyed rabbits, argali, and raging bulls were the prominent beasts in the Space. Since the argali and blue eyed rabbits were still eight ranks, they couldn't be used just yet. On the other hand, the raging bulls had become 9th ranks, so Zhao Hai decided to release them and had them go against the heavy rhinoceros cavalry on the ground.

At this moment, the heavy cavalry were slowly advancing towards the city. Although the Dwarves and the Beastmen were making attacks against them, the heavy cavalry's defensive capabilities were just too good. Moreover, their mounts were also capable of earth magic. With how strong the cavalry unit was as well as their mounts, there was little that the Dwarves and Beastmen could do in order to stop them.

The impact of the heavy cavalry was very strong. So although they couldn't fly up the wall, once they go under it and batter the defensive shield of the city, the protective shield would soon run out of energy to rely on. And once the protective formation gets broken, the casualties would then start to pile up. To combat this, Zhao Hai decided to release the raging bulls out into the field.

Although the raging bulls were now 9th rank, their strength still



wasn't that strong. After they reached 9th rank, they only became stronger in two points. First, their strength, and the other was their defense. Upon reaching 9th rank, the raging bulls had become bigger as their defensive capabilities soared up. But unfortunately, unlike the magic beasts in the continent, the raging bulls in the Space didn't manage to develop their own consciousness. However, Zhao Hai understood why this was the case. Think about it, once a magic beasts gains sentience, they would be able to communicate like a human being. This would be a terrible thing and would make Zhao Hai opt out from eating the magic beasts in the Space.

The quantity of magic beasts that Zhao Hai released was quite big. About a hundred thousand raging bulls suddenly came out of the city's backside as they went on and clashed with the heavy cavalry unit.

At this point, the horns of the raging bulls had become a meter long each. Their curved horns had become silver in color, each of them looked just like terrifying weapons. It was certain that their attacking strength wouldn't be weak.

The raging bulls' iron skins had also become cyan as their defenses got strengthened. Zhao Hai was currently thinking about killing a batch of raging bulls and then having the Dwarves make leather armor out of their skins. This would enhance the defense of the continent's soldiers, reducing casualties in the process. However, Zhao Hai was not anxious about executing this plan. After all, the raging bulls had just reached 9th rank.

# Chapter 744 – Repelled

---

Zhao Hai was not too satisfied with the raging bulls. On the other hand, wasn't aware about how startled Cloud Ying was.

The Divine Race held a lot of power because of their profession called Summoner. These were the people who wore mage robe behind Cloud Ying. The main attack of these people were their summons. And all of their summons were magic beasts who lived in the Divine Realm.

The magic beasts in the Divine Realm and the Ark Continent were different. The weakest magic beasts in the Divine Realm would be 7th ranks. Beasts that had 8th or 9th rank strengths weren't rare in the Divine Realm.

However, the Summoners in the Divine Realm aren't any different from the Summoners in the Ark Continent. The magic beasts that they summon also needed to be captured. After capturing their beasts, only then could they store it inside their own summon space. Their spaces were quite big and can accept a lot of magic beasts. Moreover, the more magic beasts they gain, the more space their space would have.

The status of these Summoners was very high among the Divine Race. This wasn't only because they were able to summon magic beasts, it was also because they were able to summon the Deity.

The Summoners that came along with Cloud Ying were expert Summoners of the Divine Race. Their beasts were mostly 9th or God rank, their fighting strength was extraordinary.

In Cloud Ying's mind, once the Summoners take their beasts out, then the Ark Continent would have certainly lost. After all, the Ark Continent didn't have any God-rank experts. Additionally, they only had 9th rank beasts, of which were very few in number. With such quality, how could the continent be able to contend with the Divine Race?

However, what Cloud Ying and the Divine Race didn't expect was Zhao Hai's existence. He single handedly broke their preconceptions about the Ark Continent. The undead that Zhao Hai summoned were even 9th rank. Moreover, the amount of undead that Zhao Hai could summon was enough to make a person's head hurt.

And now, Zhao Hai released a large amount of 9th rank magic beasts. This action made Cloud Ying speechless. Zhao Hai's methods were enough to shock people even if he was in the Divine Realm. Cloud Ying couldn't understand how the Ark Continent could possibly give birth to a monster such as Zhao Hai.

It didn't take too long before the raging bulls clashed with the heavy cavalry. It was at this moment that the Divine Race's cavalry fully demonstrated their might. Although the raging bulls were 9th rank, they still weren't able to resist the hammers of the heavy cavalry.

However, the raging bulls were still 9th rank, they still held great strength. At the same time, there were also a lot of heavy cavalry soldiers that had been knocked down from their mounts, and then proceeded to get mercilessly stamped.

Naturally, Zhao Hai wouldn't let these losses be a waste. Every single raging bull and Divine Race cavalry that died were all absorbed into the Space. His undead were the continent's main weapon against the Demons and the Divine Race, it would be good if their numbers were to be constantly supplemented.

This was because in the end, the undead in his hands weren't truly undying. They could still be destroyed by a powerful attack. From the start of the battle until now, Zhao Hai didn't stop to absorb every single dead enemy body in the battlefield.

After being faced with the raging bulls, the Divine Race heavy cavalry couldn't help but stop their charge. At this time, the Beastmen had also met with the magic beasts that the Divine Race

Summoners took out. Fortunately they had blood lightning beads in their hands. And in addition to their fast mounts, they were able to run away in order to save themselves from the magic beast attack.

This battle also demonstrated how mighty the Divine Race were. Only those who face the Divine Race understood how terrible it would be to fight against them. These people only faced a subpar heavy cavalry unit of the Divine Race. If they faced stronger Divine Race forces, then they could only be faced with a massacre.

What disappointed the Beastmen this time was the fact that their weapons were unable to be used against the Divine Race. If Zhao Hai hadn't given them some blood lightning beads, then it might have been very difficult for them to kill any heavy cavalry unit.

This did not mean that their weapons were vastly inferior to the Divine Race, this simply meant that they had inferior strength. It can be said that the heavy cavalry only had average strength. Without their charge, then they wouldn't have had many good points. However, even with their 8th rank strength, the heavy cavalry soldiers also held innate strength, something that even Beastmen were unable to compare with. This aspect allowed the Beastmen understand the Divine Race's strength.

Seeing with one's own eyes was truly different from hearing about it. The Beastmen now knew why Zhao Hai paid so much attention into the war with the Divine Race. At the same time, the Beastmen were now more convinced of Zhao Hai. They understood that they needed to pour all of their strength into the war, sparing nothing in order to gain victory.

As the fight continued, Cloud Ying began to discover that taking the city this day would be impossible. Zhao Hai had too many methods in order to deal with their advance. It seems like the war would need to be drawn out for a long time.

At this time, the Elves had returned to the battlefield. However,

there were no horned pegasus cavalry going after them, all of them killed, never to come back.

Cloud Ying started to count the losses on his side. He discovered that from the start to the present, they had losses that surpassed ten thousand people. One must know that it had only been a few hours since the fight started. Cloud Ying didn't expect that they would have this much loss.

In the past, Cloud Ying felt disdain towards Silver Shuke for being unable to take the city and even managed to take heavy casualties. He thought that Silver Shuke was very incompetent in his job. But as it turns out, it was actually because of the multitude of tricks that Zhao Hai had. Most importantly, Zhao Hai even managed to eliminate the Deity's projection, this was too big of an impact to their morale.

The heavy cavalry has been stopped, as well as the light cavalry. At this point, there was no way for them to proceed. This made Cloud Ying think, they had already lost ten thousand people, it wouldn't be great if this situation were to go on for much longer.

Cloud Ying looked at the battlefield. The infantry were yet to go forward, but the heavy and light cavalries were already stopped, they even managed to take huge losses. Additionally, the combat capabilities of Zhao Hai's undead wasn't any weak and were still quite numerous. Cloud Ying couldn't help but grit his teeth as he commanded, "Withdraw!"

Just as he said that, a messenger beside him immediately took out a small copper bell and proceeded to knock on it. Although the bronze bell was very small, it was very loud. The entire battlefield were able to hear the loud banging sound of the bell.

The Divine Race knew that this signal meant retreat. Therefore, they didn't dare to continue on. They made their formations and the proceeded to slowly retreat.

Zhao Hai saw this and didn't order his troops to pursue. The

army the Divine Race had sent out today wasn't a lot. Zhao Hai was afraid that if they pursue, then they might fall into an ambush. And even if there was no ambush, the Divine Race could just send their other troops to attack the city while Zhao Hai clashed with the retreating troops. After all, Zhao Hai was aware of the number of troops that were present in the Divine Race's camp.

Zhao Hai just stood there, looking at the Divine Race army as they slowly drew back. However, his mood was actually very heavy. Although they had managed to repel the Divine Race today, the methods that they showed made Zhao Hai feel quite terrible.

This was especially true for their method of summoning that immortal cultivator. This made Zhao Hai very vigilant. The opposite party's projection almost managed to kill him. If that was his main body, how strong could he be? If the Divine Race decided to summon a lot of immortal cultivators, then the Ark Continent's troubles would surely be big.

After the Divine Race retreated, Zhao Hai returned to the city's wall. When Lizzy saw Zhao Hai, she quickly said, "Big Brother Hai, are you alright? Did you get hurt?"

Zhao Hai smiled faintly and said, "I'm fine, don't worry. We've also managed to get some good harvests this time. Right, a lot of Dwarves and Beastmen managed to get injured this time. Prepare to have them cured as soon as possible."

Lizzy nodded, then she immediately gave orders to the people in the army. They also had the city's defensive formation taken down, allowing the three groups from outside to go in.

Before long, the three army divisions came back. Some of these people were injured, while some died. Zhao Hai didn't turn those who fell in battle into his undead, that method was only reserved for his enemies, he wouldn't do the same for his allies. Although this will make him lose a lot of potential undead, he knew that if he did this, the three races would get angry. Even if they didn't get

angry in front of him, it would still bring resentment, possibly making future cooperation very difficult.

Since Lizzy already made preparations ahead of time, the injured were immediately given treatment after they arrived. Zhao Hai also had his undead assist in giving aid. At the same time, Zhao Hai also called the various leaders over. They were to meet at the city lord's mansion's battle room.

After all of them arrived and had sat down, Zhao Hai immediately said, "The fight with the Divine Race, what do you think?"

The complexion of these people weren't very good. The Divine Race were more powerful than they imagined. If they didn't have the blood lightning beads and Zhao Hai, then it would be impossible for them to achieve today's result.

Seeing their expressions, Zhao Hai smiled faintly and said, "Can't speak? Think that they're too powerful? Haha. They are indeed strong, but as you can see, they were still repelled. Don't worry, my side has been working hard in order to produce potions that can promote your levels. When that time comes, you won't be too afraid of fighting with the Divine Race anymore."

Baker gave a nod and said, "The Divine Race are surely formidable. However, they aren't invincible beings. If our strengths improved, then we could surely fight them head to head."

The group nodded. They were also aware of the difference between them and the Divine Race. The most gleaming disparity was their strength. The weakest level soldier in the Divine Race army were 8th ranks. However, 8th ranks were already seen as strong people in the Ark Continent's side. This difference in perception was just too big.

# Chapter 745 – The Prophecy Must Be Fulfilled

---

The disparity of strength was obvious, but it also lead to a headache. Strength cannot be met with just a day of practice. And this issue was prevalent to all the armies in the Ark Continent.

Ordinary armies in the Ark Continent weren't very strong. At most, the soldiers in those armies have about 5th rank in strength. Even the elite troops of the continent had 7th and 8th ranks as their strongest members, and on average, have 6th rank soldiers.

If the Ark Continent went to war with the other countries using such armies, then there would be no problems. However, these kinds of armies were simply insufficient when it came to fighting the Demons and the Divine Race. There was no need to say about the army of the Divine Race, their weakest soldier had 8th rank strength. At the same time, the Demons were very strong as well, their weakest being 7th rank. If we factor in their environment and upbringing, the Demons would be no worse than the Divine Race. As the matter stands, there was a huge gap of strength between the residents of the Ark Continent and their two invaders.

Zhao Hai looked at the group present and then gave a smile, "The matter of strength is easy to deal with. Soon, I will bring in a batch of potions that would improve your strengths to at least 8th rank. When that time comes, you would have more capabilities to fight against the Divine Race."

Baker and the others nodded with a happy expression. For them, this was absolutely good news. If they didn't come to Upper Bank City, then they might not have known when they'll be able to drink Zhao Hai's potions. After all, the continent's population was just too large. Even if the plan to upgrade soldiers had begun, they wouldn't know which month or even year they would get their turn. Zhao Hai looked at them and said, "While we wait for the



potions, everyone should think of tactics in order to deal with the Divine Race. You have seen their capabilities in today's battle. They are quite strong, moreover, their formations were skillfully executed as well. If we want to defeat them, then we would need more than strength to do so."

The group nodded, then Zhao Hai continued, "You just need to wait for a bit before I arrange for the potions. Also, make sure to place those injured in the rear. I will deal with the other injured soldiers when I return. Take care of them, I'm sure the Divine Race wouldn't attack so soon. I am more worried about the Demons at this time. It wouldn't be great for us if they decide to move."

When the group heard Zhao Hai, their hearts couldn't help but tighten. In the past, they didn't have any feelings about this, but after going against the Divine Race, they truly understood the situation they were in. There was already a huge disparity between the Ark Continent and the Divine Race, and there were the Demons as well. They couldn't help but feel anxious while thinking about this.

When he saw everyone's expression, Zhao Hai said, "Alright, you should all get a rest. We just had a fight, everyone should be tired." Then everyone stood up and left after giving Zhao Hai a salute.

When the group left, Zhao Hai immediately brought Lizzy and the others back into the Space. Laura's group were quite busy inside the Space, taking care of the various commodities to be supplied to the continent. It can be said that Laura and Ruyen were the most busy among the people inside.

Zhao Hai greeted everyone before they all sat down. Then Zhao Hai said, "In today's battle, the Divine Race summoned a person. He was called Deity by the Divine Race. From this title, one could say that he is a higher level existence compared to the Divine Race. And he was really powerful, only a mere projection from him managed to show such great strength. If it weren't for Cai'er, I might have been in grave danger. If the Divine Race can summon a

person like that, then it might be possible for them to summon another one. It would be a big problem if several of those people appeared simultaneously.”

Laura and the others knew about the degree of danger that this entailed, therefore, they couldn't help but frown. Lizzy replied, “What is Big Brother Hai planning to do with it?”

Zhao Hai said, “We'll just need to prepare for it. If the Divine Race could really summon a lot of people just like that, then we need to get ready to transfer the people of the continent into the Space in the shortest period of time. What do all of you think?”

Laura nodded and said, “It looks like this is the only way. The Demons and the Divine Race are already our limit. If those higher level people appear, then we could only evacuate the entire continent's population into the Space.”

Lizzy looked at Zhao Hai and said, “Big Brother Hai, do we need to tell the Patriarchs about this matter? Making them prepare for it in advance?”

Zhao Hai shook his head and said, “Let's withhold this information for now lest we cause unnecessary panic. Let's wait first and hope that our speculations aren't true.”

At this time, Zhao Hai's expression suddenly changed. He waved his hand and took out a messenger fish. This messenger fish was paired up with the Elf Queen's own messenger fish. What matter did the Elf Queen have this time? Did an accident happen in the Elven Forest?

Zhao Hai immediately talked into the messenger fish, “Your Majesty, what's the problem?” Then he looked towards the monitor as Cai'er displayed the Queen's room.

Currently, the Elf Queen looked very anxious. Her complexion was somewhat pale, it seems like something terrible has happened.

When the Queen heard Zhao Hai's voice, she immediately

replied, “Mister, something happened. Our Elven Race’s Divine treasure, the Tree of Life, is withering. Mister, please come over and see it.”

Zhao Hai gawked, then he immediately thought of the Dwarf Race’s prophecy. In that prophecy, the Elves’ Tree of Life would wither.

The Elves had always regarded the Tree of Life as their Deity. They had always thought that it was a gift from the Goddess of Life to the Elves. And the Tree of Life did indeed give benefits to the Elven Race. Not only did it allow the Elves to understand life magic better, its liquid of life was also a good medicine for healing and cultivation. The first version of Spatial Water was another form of the liquid of life.

The Tree of Life had grown for many years without withering. Even with Zhao Hai’s status, the Elves still wouldn’t allow him from seeing it. Once could see how well-regarded the tree was to the Elves. However, they didn’t expect the tree to actually start to wither. To the Elves, this was an extremely important matter.

When Zhao Hai heard the Elf Queen, he couldn’t help but get anxious as well, he quickly replied, “When did you find out? Tell me what happened.” The Queen’s expression stayed tense as she replied, “Just today. I always go to the Tree of Life everyday in order to offer my worship. While I was praying, I found out that there was a hint of withering to the Tree of Life. I knew that this matter has been mentioned in the prophecy of the Dwarves, therefore, I decided to approach Mister to ask if you have any way of healing it.”

Zhao Hai immediately said, “First, block this news from going out. Don’t let other people know about it. I will be coming over there soon.”

Zhao Hai was very clear, if the Elves were to know that their Tree of Life was withering, then there was no doubt that they would go

absolutely crazy. Its significance would trump the threat that the Demons and the Divine Race had caused.

The Queen agreed, then Zhao Hai immediately stored his messenger fish before his figure disappeared from the Space before it reappeared inside the Even Race's city. Then he directly soared towards the Royal Palace.

Zhao Hai's status was now an Elder of the Elven Race, and in addition to the times being hectic, the guarding Elves only thought that something had happened in the frontline. Therefore, they didn't mind Zhao Hai's presence too much and just opened the doors to the Royal Palace.

The Queen was very uneasy as she repeatedly walked around the room and then took a seat and then took a walk again. So when she heard the notification that Zhao Hai had arrived, she immediately said, "Invite Mister over, quickly!"

After Zhao Hai entered the Great Hall, the Queen turned to the guards and said, "Go and leave the hall. Make sure to close the door and don't allow anybody else to enter." The two guards nodded before they turned around and left the Great Hall.

After the guards left, Zhao Hai turned to the Queen and said, "Your Majesty, why did the Tree of Life wither? Do you have any ideas about it?"

The Queen shook her head and said, "I really don't know. I just discovered that the leaves of the tree had begun to wilt. This case never happened before. Mister, come with me." Then Zhao Hai gave a nod before the Queen turned around and led Zhao Hai behind the Great Hall.

Behind the Great Hall was a small courtyard. In this courtyard were two voiceless soundbirds. The Queen sat on one of them as Zhao Hai rode the other. Then the voiceless soundbirds flapped their wings and proceeded to fly upwards and towards an area above the city.

The city was very high, Zhao Hai didn't even know how much, he hadn't gone this high up before. Therefore, he had no idea about where they were going.

The voiceless soundbirds were almost flying in a vertical fashion. They flew non-stop for about a couple of hours before they stopped on a branch. This branch was not very thick, only able to accommodate one person walking on top of it. Not too far from where they landed was a hole, it was dark inside making it hard to see what was going on.

The Queen dismounted from the voiceless soundbird as she proceeded to walk towards that hole. While she walked over, she said, "For many years, mister will be the first outsider to come to this place."

Zhao Hai stared blankly at the Queen. He didn't understand what the Queen was saying. He thought that they were currently on the massive Tree of Life, it grew for all these years to become this big and tall. Zhao Hai thought that the Tree of Life was this giant tree, now it looks like this wasn't the case.

Before long, Zhao Hai had entered the hole with the Queen. Upon entering the hole, they took a turn before taking yet another turn. This explained why the hole looked dark from the outside. At this time, Zhao Hai noticed a hint of green light shining in front of him. Then he slowly felt a strong wave of energy coming from that direction.

The Queen didn't speak as she unconsciously made light footsteps. Zhao Hai had a faint understanding of where they were going to, so he also did the same.

The green light up front got brighter and brighter. Zhao Hai can also feel the energy getting stronger and stronger. Although this energy was very strong, it actually gave people a type of gentle feeling, just like warm sunlight, just like a mother's hand, gently stroking your skin, making you feel warm. Zhao Hai's mind

couldn't help but turn tranquil.

# Chapter 746 – Method to Upgrade the Undead

---

After entering a small arched entrance, Zhao Hai and the Queen got into a fairly big room. All in all, this room had more than 100 square meters. In the middle of this room was a pool, and in the middle of the pool was a short and small tree.

The tree was very unusual. Its whole body was green but it was almost transparent. It looked more like a crystal than an actual tree.

What made Zhao Hai feel strange was that this tree only had nine twigs, and each twig only had a single leaf. Each leaf also looked like a crystal, but their veins were of deeper color, they looked very beautiful.

However, among these nine leaves, one of them had started to turn yellowish. It looks like the leaf was slowly dying.

On the side of the pool were several mats. One could see that these mats were very clean, evidence that it was used quite frequently.

The Queen arrived on a mat and gently knelt, paying obedience towards the small tree in the middle of the pond. Then she stood up and turned to Zhao Hai and said, “Mister, this is the Divine treasure of our Race, the Tree of Life. In the past, all of the leaves of this tree are green. But today, I have discovered that one had turned yellow. This reminded me of the prophecy of the Dwarves. So I immediately asked mister over in order to see it.”

Zhao Hai nodded, then he arrived by the pool. The pool wasn't very big, but it was completely filled with water. He examined the liquid of life inside the pool, it seems like this one was of a higher quality compare to what the Space had before.

The Tree of Life lived on this pool. There wasn't even a single

particle of soil inside the pool, making it seem like the Tree of Life was being a parasite on the giant tree.

Zhao Hai frowned, to be honest, he didn't know if the Space was able to save this tree. It would be great if the Space did, however, if it can't, then the Elf Race would be in big trouble.

The Queen looked at Zhao Hai's expression, her heart couldn't help but sink. She thought that Zhao Hai didn't have the means to save the Tree of Life. However, she still asked, "Does Mister have any ways of saving the tree?"

Zhao Hai turned his head to the Queen and replied, "I have a solution in mind, however, I'm not sure if it could work. Moreover, I cannot treat it here, I need to bring the tree to another place in order to cure it. If Your Majesty agrees, then I can try. If you don't, then I have no other methods in mind."

As soon as she heard Zhao Hai, the Queen couldn't help but stare for a moment before she knit her brows and said, "Mister, the Tree of Life is too important for the Elves. I alone don't have the authority to immediately decide on this matter. I need to discuss this with the elders before giving you a concrete answer."

Zhao Hai nodded and said, "Alright, but Your Majesty should know about the effect of this matter more than I do, so I will not say any more. I just hope that you keep this a secret, we can't afford to have panic among the Elves at this time. Just know that if you decide to let me cure the tree, then I am confident that I have an 80 percent chance of succeeding. Also, it wouldn't take too long."

The Queen stared for a moment before she gave a nod and said, "Alright, Mister can rest assured. I shall handle this matter with care." Then she led Zhao Hai out of the hole.

After exiting, Zhao Hai didn't ride the voiceless soundbird, instead, she turned to the Queen and said, "Your Majesty, I won't be staying here for long. My presence is heavily needed in the



frontlines. If you agree to my arrangement, then you can just inform me through the messenger fish.”

The Queen nodded and said, “Alright, then I’ll have to trouble Mister when the time comes.” Then Zhao Hai gave a bow before his figure vanished. After Zhao Hai vanished, the Queen silently rode her voiceless soundbird and then proceeded to return to the Royal Palace.

Zhao Hai didn’t return to Upper Bank City, but instead entered the Space. He had assigned Cai’er to look after the city for him.

Since nothing happened in the city, Zhao Hai decided to count his gains from today. Currently, the magic beasts of the Space had been promoted. Unfortunately, the majority of them only reached 9th rank, nobody reached God-rank. Moreover, of the undead that he had absorbed, very few of them were God-rank. Most of them were 9th rank or were promoted to 9th rank by the Space.

There was no other explanation for this, most of their kills today were from the Divine Race’s heavy and light cavalry. These two units weren’t that high in the Divine Race’s hierarchy, so their strengths were very limited.

Moreover, Zhao Hai discovered that the Space’s hurdle to God-rank wasn’t as easy as before where he only needed to wait for specific conditions to be filled before the undead gets promoted. Take the light element undead, after acquiring the three divine artifacts, this made them God-rank. As for the undead assassins, they only managed to get promoted by having absorbed Shiyang. And lastly, the fire element undead were only promoted after absorbing Tiger Huan along with more God-rank fire element experts.

Zhao Hai guessed the reason why this was the case, it was because of the number of the undead. At this time, the largest number of undead that he had were all from the water element while the least number came from the light element. This was the

reason why it only took three divine artifacts before all the light element undead got promoted to God-rank. The energy needed to upgrade all of those undead was only small. This was the same case for the dark element undead, they only needed Shiying's energy in order to be promoted. This case was also proven when we think about the time where Tiger Huan's death didn't immediately upgrade the fire element undead. Only after absorbing more fire element God-ranks did the fire element undead get promoted to God-rank.

At this point, it seems like upgrading the undead in the Space wouldn't be very easy. It would need a lot of energy before all of the undead were to become God-rank.

Although they had killed a lot of Divine Race soldiers today, a large part of them weren't God-rank, some haven't even reached 9th rank. Because of this, the undead in the Space didn't level up. On the other hand, Zhao Hai managed to get living magic beasts into the Space, which in turn promoted the magic beasts in the Space.

Although all of these were just guesses, Zhao Hai felt that his speculation wasn't wrong. Still, he wanted to confirm, so he called Cai'er over and asked about the Space's condition of promoting the undead.

Sure enough, the explanation that Zhao Hai got from Cai'er was similar to his guess. If he wanted to promote the undead into God-rank, then he would need energy that was the same as their attribute. Moreover, the energy needed to be related to death. As for the Divine Artifacts, they weren't living beings in the end, so the energy inside them can be considered as dead. It was completely unlike the living energy inside trees and grasses as well as living beings. All of those living energies were useless to the undead.

The reason why Shiying and Tiger Huan managed to upgrade the undead was because they were killed. After being killed, their

energies became dead, allowing them to benefit the undead.

Upon hearing Cai'er, Zhao Hai understood. This was the reason why the undead didn't level up after Bubble entered the Space. Although Bubble didn't seem like a living being, he actually had consciousness, this was akin to being a living creature. The energy in Bubble's body was living, therefore cannot be used by the undead.

Zhao Hai became impatient about this condition. It seems like if he wanted to upgrade the undead in the future, then he would need to kill God-ranks with the same attributes as them. Only in this way could the undead have enough energy to level up.

Zhao Hai sighed and then let go of this matter. Then he looked at Cai'er and said, "Cai'er, can you analyze the state of the Tree of Life? Why would it suddenly wither like that?" Cai'er shook her head and said, "Young Master, unless the Tree of Life goes inside the Space, there is no way that I can analyze its state." Zhao Hai knit his brows and replied, "Then do you think that the Space can cure the Tree of Life?" Cai'er smiled and said, "There's no issue about that. Young Master, don't forget, the Space could even resurrect plants that are dead for over one month. Curing the Tree of Life wouldn't be a problem. Moreover, seeing how formidable the Tree of Life was, it is highly probable that it could make the Space level up."

Zhao Hai smiled bitterly and said, "Let's hope so."

Then Zhao Hai opened the monitor to see the situation at Rising Sun City. He wanted to see the current development of the Demon Race. Although there weren't any actions coming from the Demon side, their numbers of God-ranks had kept increasing. At this moment, their God-rank experts had reached ten thousand. This made Zhao Hai's expression uglier. The Demons and the Divine Race were very strong. Now that the Demon numbers had increased, Zhao Hai alone wouldn't be able to stop them even if he went to Rising Sun City. But fortunately for him he had sent some

crystals and magic cannons over to the city. This would allow them to withstand for a while, but not for long. At that time, Zhao Hai can only make use of the Space to rescue the people there.

The main issue for them at this time was the possibility that the Demons and the Divine Race would simultaneously attack. This will make Zhao Hai unable to focus on one without abandoning the other. With him being unable to split his head into two, true trouble would come.

Zhao Hai didn't have any good ideas to deal with this situation. Although he held good things in his hands, these weren't even enough to deal with one of them, much less two.

At this moment, the main weapon in Zhao Hai's hand were his undead. All of these undead would be able to resist one of them but were not enough to block both. Splitting the undead would only lead to them being killed off by the Demons and the Divine Race, causing losses on both fronts. Once the undead gets killed off, then Zhao Hai's might would diminish as well. When that time comes, it would be extremely difficult for him to find ways in order to resist the Demons and the Divine Race.

# Chapter 747 – Anxious Elves

---

Zhao Hai was calmly walking on the Space's grassland. After the Space absorbed the wind bead, a breeze would blow here once in a while. This made the Space much more comfortable to be in, allowing Zhao Hai to relax more.

The Divine Race and the Demon Race were two colossal mountains that weighed down on Zhao Hai's shoulders. Majority of his time was consumed in thinking about how to fight the two. This thought tightened his heart, not allowing him time to relax, making him feel very tired.

As he slowly walked around, Zhao Hai had unexpectedly arrived by the Processing machine. While looking at the timer, Zhao Hai couldn't help but sigh. He was very happy about acquiring a treasure, but behind such a treasure was a powerful enemy. This gave Zhao Hai an even bigger headache, much bigger compared to the Divine Race.

Zhao Hai gently rubbed his temples, everything was quite rocky at this point. Things kept coming one after the other, it's very exhausting.

However, these matters needed to be dealt with, no matter how troublesome they were. Zhao Hai couldn't help but give out another sigh as he looked back at the beating timer. In less than two days, the soul eating pagoda would have been finished in its upgrade.

To be honest, Zhao Hai liked the ability of the pagoda. As long as the tiny pagoda levels up, then perhaps he might be able to get a better method in upgrading the undead. Moreover, through this tiny pagoda, Zhao Hai would be able to understand more about the immortal cultivator, this would allow him ample materials to prepare for.

After having a walk on the surroundings, Zhao Hai managed to

relax his mood quite a bit, then he proceeded to return to the villa's living room. Laura and the others were also done with their chores and were now currently sitting in the living room, looking at the monitor. The monitor was currently showing the Radiant Empire. At this moment, the Divine Race had already seized the whole Empire. Moreover, they had also established protective shields in the various major cities while building military barracks inside them.

After seeing these barracks, Zhao Hai finally understood why the Divine Race decided to bring such bulky magic cannons. The cannons were already placed on the city walls, manned by several soldiers. It seems like the cannons were to be used as the city's defensive weapons.

After noticing that Zhao Hai had come back, Laura and the others quickly stood up. Laura looked at Zhao Hai and said, "Brother Hai, you're back."

Zhao Hai smiled faintly and said, "I just went on a short stroll to relax. Are done? How was it?"

Laura nodded and said, "The transportation is on track. The nations already knew how to coordinate, so we're quite relaxed this time."

Zhao Hai smiled and said, "That's good, don't tire yourself too much. Now we're waiting for the Elves to finish their discussion. If they decide to allow the Tree of Life into the Space, then the Space might level up. Let's just see where their decision takes us."

Laura gave a faint smile and said, "Of course they'll agree. If they don't then they could only helplessly look at the Tree of Life as it slowly dies. The Elves couldn't bear such a sight."

Zhao Hai nodded, then he turned to the Divine Race barracks, he sighed and said, "I'm afraid that this is only a part of the Divine Race army. I have a feeling that there'll be more of them coming. If our strengths aren't promoted when that time comes, then I'm

afraid we won't be able to stop the Divine Race's attack."

When they heard Zhao Hai, Laura and the others couldn't help but turn silent. The attacks made by the Divine Race in the past two confrontations could be said to be fairly non-violent, and the number of attackers wasn't that large. It seems like the Divine Race were still focused on their barracks. From what Zhao Hai could see, although the barracks has been set-up, they also look completely empty, they weren't filled up. This might not be strange, after all, the Radiant Empire had about 100 million citizens while the Divine Race army only numbered 10 million.

However, seeing that they can't fill the cities, the Divine Race still decided to construct their barracks. The only explanation to this was that they were preparing for the arrival of more armies in the future.

In this regard, one could say that the Divine Race were stronger than the Demons. Although the Demons had prepared to invade the Ark Continent for a long time, they were quite behind in preparation compared to the Divine Race. The Divine Race had the Radiant Church to aid them, and also the Radiant Empire for sacrifices, allowing them to change the laws of the Ark Continent. Now, the Divine Race already had their own place to settle in, unlike the Demons who needed to construct their own city.

Lizzy turned to Zhao Hai and said, "Big Brother Hai, if the Divine Race and Demons decided to attack at the same time, what do we do?"

Zhao Hai knit his eyebrows and said, "Then we can only retreat and fall back to the Accra Mountains. There, we would be able to block both the Demons and the Divine Race. As long as we stop them for quite some time, I believe that their cooperation would start to crumble."

Laura nodded and said, "This was our previous plan, however, we still underestimated the Divine Race and the Demons. We

originally wanted to have the fight happen in the Buddha Empire, but now it seem like that won't be the case."

Zhao Hai nodded and said, "If the Demons and the Divine Race keep on increasing their numbers, then we could only fall back to the Accra Mountains and defend on both fronts. However, we must drag the current situation for as long as we can. The Accra Mountain needs to have more time to prepare."

Laura nodded, then she said, "Brother Hai, how about we give some blood lightning beads to father? Maybe he can find ways in order to improve it."

Zhao Hai shook his head, "No, the blood lightning bead is extremely dangerous, it wouldn't be good if father gets injured. Having the blood lightning beads in the hands of the Elves is enough. What we need to do is to promote their strength as soon as possible. Speaking of which, I need to bring some spatial water out into the city. We'll strengthen the soldiers first."

Laura and the others nodded, then Zhao Hai looked at the situation back in the city. Everything was very normal, after all, a fight just happened. Everyone was very tired and has been resting.

Lizzy turned her head to Zhao Hai and said, "Big Brother Hai, you should take a rest as well. You can go out after you wake up. This would also allow the soldiers to have proper rest."

After seeing the situation of the soldiers, Zhao Hai nodded and said, "Alright, everyone should also get some rest. I'm afraid the Divine Race would make another move in the following days."

Laura and the others were also quite tired in the past few days. Battles were happening one after another. Although Laura's group weren't involved in the fighting, their logistics work was more troublesome and exhausting. They haven't rested well for a long time, so they needed this time to recover.

The next morning, Zhao Hai got up early and prepared a massive



amount of spatial water before going out of the Space. At this time, the entire mountain was much livelier than before.

After the battle, the people were extremely tired. But at the same time, they also felt excitement they never felt before. They were too tired yesterday, so they immediately went to rest. Now that they had recovered, their vigor flared up, excited conversations began to bubble up in every part of the city.

After arriving at the city lord's mansion, Zhao Hai immediately called the leaders of the various groups and gave them some spatial water. Moreover, he also told them that in the next two days, they wouldn't need to fight, they needed to focus on improving their strength.

Naturally, the leaders of the groups became very happy. They had been waiting for this day. Even if they were the most elite troops of their respective armies, 8th ranks were still quite rare among them. Having this opportunity to reach that rank would make anyone very happy.

After having distributed the spatial water, Zhao Hai received a message from the Elf Queen. They had agreed to Zhao Hai's conditions.

This made Zhao Hai stare, he didn't think that the Elves would reach a decision in such a short time. However, he still made his way to the Elves' Royal palace. After arriving at the palace, Zhao Hai discovered that the atmosphere was not quite right. Although the ordinary guards didn't know about the problem, the 9th rank supreme elders of the race were all inside the palace. This made the atmosphere inside the Great Hall very hard to breath in.

Zhao Hai stared at this development before going inside the Great Hall. Inside, the Queen wasn't on her throne, instead, she stood right by the 9th rank Elders of the Elven Race. Zhao Hai hasn't seen these people before, it seems like they were the strong and elderly people in the race. What made Zhao Hai quite happy about

these people was that some of them were very close to breaking through to God-rank.

However, Zhao Hai also discovered that the mood of these people were quite gloomy, their expressions pale. They were actually very anxious, it can be seen from their faces how much they valued the Tree of Life.

Zhao Hai couldn't help but frown, if these elders maintained this kind of mindset, then they would find it impossible to break through to God-rank. It looks like the matter of the Tree of Life needed to be solved as soon as possible.

Upon seeing Zhao Hai arrive, the Queen immediately welcomed him. With an anxious expression she said, "Mister, you came. We agree to Mister's request. Mister, please follow me quickly, please save the Tree of Life."

Zhao Hai looked at the Queen, he couldn't help but be curious as he asked, "Your Majesty, did something drastic happen?"

The Queen looked at Zhao Hai and sighed, "Mister, just this morning, two of the tree's leaves have withered. Time doesn't allow us to wait."

Zhao Hai gawked, in just two days, two of the leaves had wilted. If they couldn't cure the tree in the following days, then it might certainly die. Losing the Tree of Life would be an extremely huge hit towards the Elven Race.

Zhao Hai immediately replied, "Alright, please take me over there. I'll cure the Tree of Life as soon as possible."

The Queen nodded, then she walked towards the Palace's back courtyard and sat on a voiceless soundbird before flying up. Today, she didn't prepare a mount for Zhao Hai. She knew that with Zhao Hai's strength, there would be no need for him to ride a mount. Moreover, Zhao Hai wasn't the only one who wouldn't need a mount. The 9th rank Elders were also going with them so see the

tree.

# Chapter 748 – Unlocked, Magic Background

---

When Zhao Hai arrived by the Tree of Life, he could clearly see how worse it had become. Yesterday, only a single leaf had turned yellow. But now, there were two leaves. Although they had yet to fall from the tree, one could see that they were already dead, without any life.

Zhao Hai slowly walked over to the Tree of Life, carefully investigating it. The tree wasn't showing any defects, it was still beautiful. However, the two dead leaves had taken away some of the tree's elegance.

The Queen and the elders were nervously looking at Zhao Hai. They were afraid that Zhao Hai wouldn't be able to cure the tree. If that were the case, then the Elven Race would be in deep trouble.

Actually, Zhao Hai wanted to see how long the roots of the Tree of Life were. He wanted to collect the tree without damaging the roots. After watching for a while, Zhao Hai discovered something special. Zhao Hai thought that the Tree of Life was being parasitic towards the large tree. Now that he had taken a closer look, this didn't seem to be the case at all. The tree of life was actually growing inside the small pond, there was no connection between it and the large tree. It can be said that the Tree of Life was floating on water.

This discovery made Zhao Hai surprised. He didn't think that this would be the case. But this also made him more relaxed in gathering the tree.

Zhao Hai turned to the Queen and said, "Your Majesty, I'll be taking the Tree of Life. I will have information by tomorrow. Does Your Majesty agree?"

The Elf Queen turned to look at the 9th rank elders who proceeded to nod their heads. The Tree of Life was just too important to the Elven Race, and Zhao Hai was their final hope. If

Zhao Hai couldn't treat the tree, then nobody in the continent could.

The reason why these people had confidence in Zhao Hai was because he already managed to help them fix their Divine Artifact, the Elven Bow. For the Elves, the Elven Bow and the Tree of Life held the same importance. It was because of this that the Elves decided to trust Zhao Hai.

Seeing the elders nod, the Queen turned her head to Zhao Hai and said, "Mister, please continue. We agree."

Zhao Hai nodded, then he waved his hand, making a spatial rift appear and cover the Tree of Life. The Elves looked with worry at the appearance of the spatial rift. They were afraid that the rift would wound the Tree of Life.

Fortunately, Zhao Hai was now very skillful in controlling his spatial rifts. The rift slowly slid down the sides of the pool, never touching the Tree of Life. The rift also brought the water from the pool into the Space.

After transporting the Tree of Life as well as the liquid of life over to the Space, Zhao Hai let out a long breath. Then he turned his head to the Queen and said, "Your Majesty, I will surely find a way to cure the Tree of Life. I'll see you at the Palace tomorrow." Then Zhao Hai's figure vanished as he returned to the Space.

After arriving at the Space, Zhao Hai immediately took the Tree of Life out of the warehouse and placed it in the space's pool. Just as the Tree of Life appeared, the Space immediately issued a prompt. "Pollution detected in item full of wood element. Treatment of the lifeform would need 1 million gold coins from the host."

When Zhao Hai heard the prompt, he immediately became happy before he was met with grief. He was glad that the Tree of Life can be cured, and was sad because he would need to fork out a million gold coins in order to do so.

However, Zhao Hai still didn't delay as he said, "Immediately start the treatment."

A white light suddenly shone from the Space and covered the Tree of Life. The previous yellow leaves of the tree started to turn back into green. Moreover, the leaves have become more vibrant compared to before.

Before long, the white light vanished as the Tree of Life went back to its healthy state. Moreover, it looked more healthy compared to before. Zhao Hai couldn't help but let out a long breath after seeing the result.

At this time, another prompt came from the Space, "Discovered massive amounts of dark energy from the lifeform. Increasing its resistance to dark energy. Dark energy has been withdrawn, may be used by the Processing Machine in order to upgrade itself. Wood element energy inside the Space has been increased. Five element requirement has been met. Host may use the power of the five elements in order to upgrade his Life Treasure Dao Lotus."

Since this was a good thing, Zhao Hai quickly said, "Upgrade it immediately."

Then another prompt came, "Upgrading Processing Machine, time required, 12 hours. Upgrade to host's treasure can be done immediately, gold coins are not needed."

Zhao Hai gave an affirmative nod and said, "Do it." Then just as his voice fell, a five colored light suddenly fell into his body. Zhao Hai could vaguely feel the five colored light penetrate his body. After going around his body two times, the light entered his middle dantian and into the lotus. After the lotus absorbed the light, it looked even more beautiful. Zhao Hai knew that its beauty and delicateness was an illusion. The strength of the Dao Lotus right now was equal to the tiny pagoda, it might even be stronger.

What made Zhao Hai most surprised was the core in his lower dantian. It seems like it had also benefited from the five elements.

It became golden yellow and had gotten bigger. On its top was a golden dragon. This wasn't the same dragon as the ones in the Ark Continent, instead, it was a Chinese dragon. The small dragon was on top of the core, eyes closed, as if it was sleeping.

On the other hand, the small man on Zhao Hai's dantian had become more solidified. This startled Zhao Hai since he can also feel his spiritual strength increase. Moreover, his sense of the heavens and the earth had become more distinct.

Zhao Hai turned his head to look at the Processing Machine. It seems like there wasn't much change aside from the timer that counted down from 12 hours.

At this time, Laura and the others arrived outside of the villa, curiously looking at the Tree of Life. Cai'er has also flown to Zhao Hai's side. At this time, Zhao Hai discovered that Cai'er's height had doubled. She was now as tall as a grown man's arm.

Zhao Hai looked at Cai'er and said, "Cai'er, did the Tree of Life give you this much benefit?"

Cai'er smiled and said, "Young Master, I gained so much. Not only did it benefit me, the Tree of Life also influenced the plants in the Space. If the Tree of Life stays inside the Space, then it can slowly upgrade the plants inside, giving it consciousness. When that time comes, they would be no different to the Flower Demons."

Zhao Hai stared, then he immediately said, "Then can the Tree of Life develop sentience?"

Cai'er shook her head and said, "It can't. The Tree of Life is just like an energy converter. It can convert all types of energy into wood element energy. If it lives inside the Space, not only could it let the plants grow better, it can also produce wood element crystal stones. In the past, the Tree of Life couldn't convert dark energy, but after going through the Space, it would be able to. Young Master, I suspect that your tiny pagoda and Dao Lotus has the same

ability.”

Zhao Hai looked at the Tree of Life and couldn't help but smile bitterly, “It's a pity that we need to return the Tree of Life back to the Elves. We can't keep it in the Space.”

Cai'er smiled and said, “Young Master, did you forget? The Tree of Life can now be purchased in the Space's shop. You can buy a sapling and then wait for it to grow up.”

Zhao Hai forced a smile and said, “But we would need to wait for many years. This Tree of Life that the Elves grew took many years in order to reach this state. I'm afraid that by the time it grows up, I may have been dead for way too long.”

Cai'er smiled and said, “Young Master, you don't know this but the Tree of Life is just unsuitable to be grown in the Elves' forest. The land there didn't have the requirements to grow a healthy Tree of Life. Because of this, their Tree of Life can only be considered as an extremely malnourished plant. This explains why it is this small. On the other hand, the Space is very suitable for growing the tree. This will cut a huge chunk of time for it to grow. Moreover, it would be much healthier compared to this one.’

Zhao Hai couldn't help but laugh in glee, “Then we'll wait. Immediately buy two saplings. Where do you think we'll plant them? Do we need to grow them on the Farming Ground?”

Cai'er gave a smile, “There's no need. Placing them on both sides of the Villa would be fine. The Tree of Life is not only an energy converter, it can also keep the energies stable. It will make the five elements in the Space more balanced.”

After she said that, Cai'er planted two Tree of Life saplings by the side of the villa. Zhao Hai was happy after seeing the two saplings. These two saplings weren't any smaller than the Elves' Tree of Life. It seems like the Elves' Tree of Life was indeed undernourished.



After buying the two seedlings, the Space suddenly issued a prompt, “Energy stabilizing plants detected. Introduction of the plant has fulfilled the upgrade condition. Space has been upgraded to level 70. Host can now buy ten more backgrounds. Ample magic energy detected in the Space, unlocked a new type of background. Magic type background can now be purchased.”

“Hint: There are a lot of special environments in Magic-type backgrounds. In these environments, the host can cultivate more exotic magical plants and animals.”

Zhao Hai couldn't help but stare blankly after listening to the Space. This was the first time that he had heard of this type prompt. He didn't understand what was happening, so he turned to Cai'er and said, “Cai'er, what's happening?”

Cai'er smiled and said, “Congratulations, Young Master. You've gained a lot this time. The Space has unlocked the Magic backgrounds for our use. In other words, the Young Master can now purchase backgrounds commonly seen in magical worlds. For example, floating islands, mystical mountains, and some extreme terrains. These places would supply the proper environment for special plants and animals to grow in.”

# Chapter 749 – The Usage of the Magic Background

---

Upon hearing Cai'er, Zhao Hai understood. When Zhao Hai was still back on Earth, he had read some magic novels. Therefore, he knew that in these types of special environments treasures would thrive.

Although there were a lot of plants and animals in the Space, they weren't that special. As for the treasures in the Ark Continent, there really weren't much to begin with.

Compounding potions in the Space needed special materials. Ginseng, fo-ti, and other materials needed special environments in order to be grown efficiently. It was because of these limitations that the God-rank potion took a long time to make.

Just as what the prompt said, Zhao Hai can now purchase magic world backgrounds. For example, he can now buy a volcanic environment, a very hot place, but will be safe enough that the volcano would never erupt. In this place, herbs would be infused with fire element constantly, becoming treasures as time passes.

Moreover, these backgrounds can also be used to rear magic beasts. If a snake were to be placed in an environment with the same conditions as the Carrion Swamp, then that snake would eventually produce deadly poisons.

In the past, there was no such environment in the Space. Now that the magic backgrounds were unlocked, plants and animals can now be placed in special environments for controlled growth. In the future, herbs would be more readily available in the Space, this was also true for magic beasts. This will in turn cause potions to be more abundant.

After thinking about this, Zhao Hai couldn't help but laugh. He couldn't stop himself from grabbing Cai'er and kissing her on her

small tender face.

Zhao Hai's action made Cai'er turn red, causing her to hide her reddened face from Laura and the others in embarrassment. Although Laura and the others couldn't understand why Zhao Hai became overwhelmingly glad, Zhao Hai being in this state also made them happy. They couldn't help but chuckle while looking at Zhao Hai's actions.

After some time, Zhao Hai calmed down, then he turned to Cai'er and said, "Cai'er, are these backgrounds expensive? If they aren't, then immediately buy ten. Just remember to pick the environments properly according to our needs."

Cai'er's face was still flushed, but when she heard Zhao Hai, she quickly replied, "Young Master, feel relieved, they aren't very expensive. Our gold coins are enough to buy ten of them. I'll arrange it immediately."

Zhao Hai nodded, "That's great. I'll hand this matter over to you. If we have these backgrounds, will our production of God-rank potions increase?"

Cai'er nodded and said, "Yes, Young Master. As long as we have magic beasts and plants in these backgrounds, we should be able to make God-rank potions more frequently."

Zhao Hai nodded, but suddenly he frowned as he said, "These backgrounds don't have Farming Grounds that can shorten growth time. This is quite problematic."

Cai'er smiled and said, "It won't be. Young Master, now that the Space has levelled up to 70, you can now turn red clay into fertile soil. Not only could it increase yield, it can also make growth faster. And in those backgrounds, you can select some specific places where you can cultivate some plants. The land that can be transformed is limited to 1 percent of the total land area, however, I think that should still suffice."

Zhao Hai became happy with this news, “Good, good. Then I’ll leave it to you to pick the spots, I don’t want to pick them myself. However, I’m certain that these would cost some money. Cai’er, look into our gold coins, if its not enough, then look at the things inside the Space that we won’t need in the near future and then sell them. These upgrades are more important to us, the rest are relatively worthless.”

Cai’er nodded. Zhao Hai’s choice to give this task to Cai’er was the right decision. This was because Cai’er was linked to the Space, so she knew every single change that happened inside it. And with the Space’s speed of calculation, Cai’er would be the most fit person to handle this task.

After arranging these, Zhao Hai felt relieved. Then he turned to look at the Tree of Life that had been healed and the Tree of Life saplings that looked healthier. Then he turned to the others and said, “I’ll have to send this back to the Elves. In any case, we already have our own inside the Space.”

Laura smiled and said, “Wait for some time, it hasn’t been too long. Let the Elves wait, hehe, its great looking at their worried faces.”

Zhao Hai laughed, “Alright, then let’s return to the living room and rest for a while. We gained greatly today. Let’s a;sp take a look at the magic world backgrounds that Cai’er had bought.”

After the group returned to the living room and sat down, Cai’er opened the store page and showed a decorated display. The difference from before was that the magic world column was now unlocked.

Cai’er picked ten designs, some of them beautiful while there was one with a gloomy and terrible aura. Then Cai’er turned to Zhao Hai and said, “Young Master, at this point, these ten backgrounds are the most suited to our cause.”

Zhao Hai looked at the backgrounds, the volcanic environment

that he had thought of before was among them. There was also an environment filled with ice and snow, among other unique environments. Zhao Hai was quite satisfied with the choices. What Zhao Hai didn't understand was the gloomy environment. You can even see skeletons, zombies, and other ghosts inside it. Moreover, there was no sun, the only thing on the sky was a round blood red moon. One could describe hell and this would be what they would show.

Zhao Hai looked at Cai'er and said, "Cai'er, why choose this background? It looks quite terrible."

Cai'er smiled and said, "Young Master, this background is actually a replica of the Demon Realm. But this isn't really the Demon Realm, this background is called Hell. It has strong dark energy inside, something very helpful for the undead. Young Master should remember that our undead aren't too strong. If we can place them in this background, then it is possible for them to be promoted. Moreover, there are also plants that thrive in this kind of place, and they are of great value. These are the reasons why I chose to get this background."

Zhao Hai nodded and said, "You've been very careful, good, I'll trust your decision. Do what you need to do. Even the possibility of promoting the undead is a great investment to make."

Cai'er nodded with a smile, then she waved her hand as she bought all of the backgrounds. Zhao Hai didn't give much care as he saw the amount of his gold coins drop drastically. He thinks that these gold coins were placed in worthwhile investments.

After Cai'er bought the backgrounds, Zhao Hai went on and explored them. Every background was visited, he looked like a tourist strolling a new place.

On the other hand, Cai'er was busy placing plants and magic beasts in each of the backgrounds. She didn't only plant herbal ingredients, she cultivated some agricultural crops as well. Cai'er

decided to plant them in the backgrounds to see how they would develop.

At the same time, Cai'er also planted a Tree of Life on each background. Although the Trees of Life can balance energies, its capabilities weren't that omnipotent. In the background named Hell, for example, the Tree of Life couldn't just absorb every dark energy inside and transform the background into a normal one. Instead, the Tree of Life would only convert some dark energy into wood energy in order to aid the growth of the plants inside.

Zhao Hai didn't bother Cai'er with her job, he was fully confident in her capabilities. It can be said that the one who knew the most about Zhao Hai wasn't Laura, but Cai'er instead. Cai'er was combined with the Space while Zhao Hai was the host, one could say that Cai'er was Zhao Hai's version of Artificial Intelligence that some novel protagonists would have. Since the Space was inside his mind, and Cai'er was connected to it, Cai'er was able to know what Zhao Hai needed.

After exploring the backgrounds, Zhao Hai returned to the Villa. To be honest, even if the backgrounds were beautiful, they still weren't great places to live in. Think about it, do you want to live next to a volcano? Obviously that would be impossible.

It was still early, so Zhao Hai wasn't anxious in returning to the Elves. Instead, he turned the monitor on and looked at the situation back in Upper Bank City.

The present situation of the city was quite good. There were plenty of 6 and 7th ranks that rose to 8th rank. Some still had low levels and were working hard. Those who had become 8th rank were now sporting happy expressions while they were getting familiar with their newly gained strength.

Zhao Hai likes to see this situation, but he still needed to wait before everyone gets to 8th rank before he begins to distribute the 9th rank potion. He wanted to promote them in batches, so even if

the Divine Race attacks, there would still be people who'll be available for battle.

It was wartime, anything was possible. Therefore, Zhao Hai wanted to be prepared for anything.

For the Divine Race to not make any further moves only meant that they were waiting. When their larger army arrives, then they would proceed to deal with Zhao Hai in one fell swoop. At this point, they have nearly 10 million troops. However, not all of them were God-ranks, 9th and 8th ranks still account for the majority. On the other hand, Zhao Hai had nearly 20 million undead, and majority of them were 9th ranks. If these two clash this instant, then it wouldn't be good for the Divine Race. Therefore, they decided to wait for reinforcements before they attack once more.

# Chapter 750 – Another Prophecy

---

Zhao Hai calmly walked into the Elves' Royal Palace. Upon reaching the palace, the guards couldn't help but look at him in confusion. This was the third time in two days that Zhao Hai came to see the Elves. They didn't understand why Zhao Hai would come here this frequently. If a huge incident happened in the frontlines, then they should have already heard about it. However, there was no news, they couldn't help but be puzzled by this.

But they still didn't dare to ask. This was because the Queen already gave an order to let Zhao Hai in if he ever came. Therefore, the guards politely guided Zhao Hai towards the Great Hall.

The Queen and the Supreme Elders were currently waiting for any news from Zhao Hai. At this time, it would be impossible for the Supreme Elders to resume their cultivation. Their minds wouldn't be able to calm down as long as the problem with the Tree of Life still persists.

At this time, an elder opened his eyes and said, "He's here."

The people in the Great Hall immediately stood up, anxiously looking at the doors of the Great Hall. Before long, Zhao Hai walked in. The Queen immediately waved her hand, making the guards exit the hall while she and the Elders went forward to welcome Zhao Hai. All of them were looking at him with hopeful expression.

After seeing their expressions, Zhao Hai smiled faintly and said, "Fortunately, I didn't embarrass myself."

Upon hearing Zhao Hai, the Queen and the Supreme Elders couldn't help but cheer. This matter has been weighing down on their minds the entire time.

The Queen and the others immediately bowed to Zhao Hai. After seeing this, Zhao Hai immediately reacted, "Your Majesty, Elders,



you are too polite. We're allies, your problems are my problems. There's no need for such gestures."

The Queen and the Elders immediately straightened themselves up. The Queen looked at Zhao Hai and said, "Mister, although what you said is true. This gesture is something that you needed to receive. Mister doesn't understand how important the Tree of Life is to the Elven Race. Mister's help in reviving the Tree of Life is equal to saving our entire race. We would be impolite if we don't express our gratitude."

Although the Elders didn't say anything, each one of them were still looking at Zhao Hai with a grateful expression. Zhao Hai smiled faintly and said, "Your Majesty, Elders, let's head to the Tree of Life's dwelling immediately. I can't stay here for too long."

The Queen immediately replied, "Alright. Mister, follow me." Then she led Zhao Hai and the Elders to the back of the Great Hall before she rode on a voiceless soundbird and flew directly to the Tree of Life's cave.

After arriving inside the cave, Zhao Hai didn't hesitate as he placed the Tree of Life directly into the pool. Upon seeing that the tree was healthier than before, the Elves couldn't help but cheer once more.

Zhao Hai smiled and then turned to the Queen, "Your Majesty, the Tree of Life wasn't sick, but instead it was invaded by a massive amount of dark energy, causing it to slowly wither. I have used a secret method to remove the dark energies. I also used a potion to allow the Tree of Life to be immune to the damages caused by dark energy. However, you still need to pay attention. The Elf Forest isn't something that would have that much dark element energy. This matter is very strange."

After the Queen and the Elders heard Zhao Hai, they couldn't help but freeze. Then all of them looked at Zhao Hai as the Queen asked, "Mister, are you telling the truth? Was the Tree of Life

really invaded by dark energy?”

Zhao Hai nodded and said, “Right. I wouldn’t dare hide this information to Your Majesty. The Tree of Life was really invaded by dark energy, I’m quite assured of this point.”

The Queen looked at the Elders while the Elders looked at one Elder. Then that Elder gave out a long breath as she said, “I didn’t think that this day would come.”

Zhao Hai couldn’t help but stare at the Elders. Seeing Zhao Hai’s confused expression, the Queen gave some context, “Mister, you don’t know this, but the Elves also had our own prophecy. However, our prophecy is different from the Dwarves. This prophecy was written during the time when the first page of our history was being made. However, this prophecy was sealed. Only during a certain encounter would it unlock itself.”

Zhao Hai stared blankly, he didn’t expect that the Elves would have their own prophecy. As soon as he heard the Queen, he had a faint understanding of the matter. He turned to the Queen and said, “Your Majesty, you mean...?”

The Elf Queen nodded, “Right, only when the Tree of Life gets invaded by dark energy would the prophecy unseal itself.”

Zhao Hai knit his brows and said, “But if I didn’t treat the Tree of Life, then how would you know that it has been invaded by Dark Energy?”

The Queen replied, “It can still be found out, but it would take a longer time. When the nine leaves of the Tree of Life turn yellow and it starts to turn black, then it would mean that it has been invaded by dark energy. However, we didn’t manage to think about this line since we were too anxious when the leaves of the tree started to turn yellow. Fortunately, Mister has reminded us. Otherwise, we wouldn’t have found out that the dark energy inside the Tree of Life.”

Zhao Hai nodded and said, “Can Your Majesty allow me to take a look at the prophecy?”

The Queen turned to the Elders, all of them gave a nod. Then the Queen turned to Zhao Hai and said, “Mister, come with me.” Then the group went out of the Tree of Life’s cave and then returned to the Great Hall.

After arriving at the Great Hall, the Queen asked Zhao Hai to take a seat and wait for a moment. Then she went to a room and took out a small wooden box.

The Queen placed the box on a table then gently opened it. What surprised Zhao Hai was the fact that there were no seals nor locks on this box. It looked very ordinary and was very easily opened.

On the other hand, when the Elders saw how easily the Queen opened the box, their complexion couldn’t help but change.

After seeing the expressions on the Elders’ face, Zhao Hai knew that something was going on. He looked at the similarly shocked Queen who quickly calmed herself as she looked at Zhao Hai, “Mister, in the past, this box wouldn’t open. We have thought of numerous methods for many years, but we haven’t succeeded. We just wanted to take a look at what the prophecy says. This is because the Tree of Life is just too important for our race. Even the previous God-ranked Elves were unable to open this box. And for generations, the Elf Queens would come over each month and try to open the box.”

Zhao Hai nodded, then the Queen turned to the Elders and said, “I tried to open it two days ago, but was still unable to do so. I didn’t expect that it would open now.”

Then the Queen carefully opened the box under the stare of everyone in the Great Hall. Since the box still had a huge space inside it, everyone thought that it was empty. However, upon looking closely, everyone became relieved to see a piece of paper on the bottom of the box.

There wasn't anything wrong with the paper, there was no damage. One should know that this box has been with the Elves since time immemorial. If it was any other paper, it would have rotten a long time ago. However, this paper seemed flawless, it looked as good as new.

The Queen gently took the paper out, revealing the green characters written inside. The Queen looked at the characters and couldn't help but frown, then she handed the paper over to the closest Supreme Elder.

That Supreme Elder received the paper and slowly read the characters. He couldn't help but knit his brows as he read it out loud, "When the darkness and light become our enemies, when skeleton and steel fights, and when the heavens and the earth merged, the only person who could save the world will be the one who holds the pure land!"

This prophecy was very short and not as straightforward as the Dwarves, making everyone frown. But when Zhao Hai heard the prophecy, his entire body couldn't help but tremble. He couldn't help but admire the person who left the prophecies to the Dwarves and the Elves.

The Elves might not understand the entire prophecy, but Zhao Hai did. In this prophecy, the darkness should refer to the Demons while the light to the Divine Race. In other words, it was when the Demons and the Divine Race became the enemy of the continent. The skeleton and steel should pertain to the undead and the magic cannons. The merging of the heaven and earth should refer to the changing of the laws made by the Divine Race when they descended into the continent. At this time, the only person that can save them would be the one who holds the pure land.

Zhao Hai doesn't need to think about the last part. The pure land can only mean one thing, the Space!

Aside from the Space, Zhao Hai couldn't think of any other place

that can be called a pure land. Zhao Hai sighed and said, “I think this prophecy is describing the current situation in the Ark Continent. The darkness and light should be the Demons and the Divine Race. The skeletons and steel, to the undead and the magic cannons. But as for the pure land, I am still left unclear.”

As soon as the Queen heard Zhao Hai, her eyes shone as she said, “Mister is too modest, I think the pure land can only refer to the Black Wasteland. At this time, the wasteland has become the safest place in the entire continent. It should fit the title of pure land. It seems like the prophecy is similar to the Dwarves. In other words, mister will be the continent’s savior!”

Zhao Hai stared, he didn’t think that the Queen would connect the Black Wasteland with the pure land. But it wasn’t that strange, after all, the Queen and the others were clueless about the Space. The only thing they were aware of was Zhao Hai’s ownership of the Black Wasteland.

The Black Wasteland has become a shelter for everyone. Moreover, the Black Wasteland has given favorable conditions everybody no matter what race one was. For the Elves, the Black Wasteland can be titled as a pure land.

However, was the prophecy this simple?

# Chapter 751 – Favoring Two Races

---

Zhao Hai was currently sitting inside the Space along with Laura and the others. They were outside the villa facing a small table arranged on a meadow. On the table was a pot of tea, and not far from then were two Trees of Life. If it weren't for the Demons and the Divine Race, then their lives would have been peacefully beautiful.

However, Zhao Hai wasn't in the mood to enjoy life. In fact, he was thinking deeply into the prophecy of the Elves. After he returned to the Space, the more he ruminated on the prophecy, the more he felt that it wasn't that simple.

He can understand that the darkness and light referred to the Demons and the Divine Race. However, does the skeleton and steel really refer to the undead and the magic cannons? Zhao Hai thought that this wasn't the case.

In the end, Zhao Hai was left with no way to find out, so he shook his head and sighed. At this time, Laura looked at Zhao Hai and said, "Brother Hai, don't think too much about it. Right, the people in Upper Bank City have already reached 8th rank. Do we proceed to the next step of the plan?"

Zhao Hai was taken out of his stupor. He looked at Laura and nodded, "Yes, we should proceed. Who do you think we should upgrade to 9th rank first?"

Laura thought for a moment and said, "If I were to choose, then it should be the Elves." Lizzy and Megan agreed to this idea. Zhao Hai looked at the three and said, "Why?"

Laura explained, "The Elves are the best in using the blood lightning beads. Their harp archers can display its might far more than the other races could. And since the Divine Race won't be attacking quite soon, it would be the opportune time to promote the Elves. This way, when the Divine Race did attack, the Elves

would be ready to receive them.”

Lizzy and Megan nodded, then Lizzy added, “The weapons we can use against the Divine Race aren’t a lot. Needless to say, the magic cannons are best used by us Humans. As for the blood lightning beads, the Beastmen can only throw them out, which wouldn’t go far, which will affect its power. The Dwarves are similar, they were more suitable for just straight up battle. On the other hand, the Elves were specialists in ranged attacks, especially their harp archers. The blood lightning beads would become deadly weapons in their hands. Continuous ranged attacks while charging and retreating was not something that any ordinary archer could do.”

Zhao Hai nodded, then said, “Alright, then that’s settled. We’ll promote the Elves first, I’ll give them the potion so that they can be promoted as soon as possible. Right, when I went to the Elves, I also told the Queen to refrain from disturbing the Supreme Elders in their cultivation. There are a lot of 9th rank elves, and most of them are in the verge of breaking through to God-rank. Relay this instruction to the other powers as well, making their 9th ranks go all out in cultivation. On the other hand, the 9th ranks that had taken potions needed to be prepared to fight. Only through battle would they be able to get accustomed to their 9th rank strength, and gain a chance of entering God-rank.”

Laura and the others nodded. There were currently plenty of 9th ranks in the continent. However, majority of them were promoted using Zhao Hai’s Space, not through their own effort. Because of this, it would be difficult for them to reach God-rank.

They haven’t experienced the toil of improving slowly, so their mentality still couldn’t catch up to the genuine 9th ranks. If they wanted to break through to God-rank, then there would be two ways. First was to use the Space’s God-rank potion, and the other was to fully adapt to their 9th rank strength through plenty of battles. At that time, they would slowly get accustomed to their

strength and begin to gain progress in becoming God-rank. However, the latter method won't be that easy.

Zhao Hai had some preference on which races he wanted to promote to God-rank first. They were the Elves and the Fishmen. The Beatmen had fairly the same numerical strength to the Humans while the Dwarves were just innately strong. Because of this, Zhao Hai wasn't too anxious in promoting their ranks.

The Beastmen, Dwarves, and Humans held a similar weakness, their lives were too short. But this also came with an advantage, this meant that the three races would find that their cultivations were quicker compared to the Elves and the Fishmen.

The lifespan of the Elves and the Fishmen was much higher compared to the other three. This allowed them to accumulate 9th ranks across multiple generations despite the lack in cultivation speed. Although their 9th ranks weren't as numerous as the Beastmen, Dwarves, and Humans, their experts occupied the top spots in terms of cultivation experience. This caused the two races to have a lot of 9th ranks that were on the verge of becoming God-rank.

On the other hand, although the Beastmen, Dwarves, and Humans had a lot of 9th ranks, they weren't advanced enough to get to God-rank. Because of this, Zhao Hai settled on the Elves and the Fishmen.

Although it can be said that the first genuine God-rank expert in the continent was humanity's Origin Sword Saint, one shouldn't forget that the Origin Sword Saint has been at the peak of the continent for a long time. At the same time, he had also received benefits from the Space. Even if he wasn't artificially promoted, he still underwent nourishing from the Space's abundant energy, something that was completely lacking in the Ark Continent. The Origin Sword Saint, although a genuine God-rank, was just lucky to encounter the Space.



On the other hand, the Elves and the Fishmen didn't cultivate in the Space, but they still held strength comparable to the Origin Sword Saint.

At this point, turning average people in the continent into 9th ranks wasn't that difficult for Zhao Hai. The reason that he wanted to limit the number of 9th ranks was because he didn't want them to think that obtaining the rank was too easy. Easily obtainable things aren't seen as valuable.

Moreover, he didn't want to use human-wave tactics in dealing with the Demons and the Divine Race. If they use this method, then nobody would be left in the continent after expelling the Demons and the Divine Race.

Therefore, Zhao Hai can only make God-ranks en masse at this point. Only through numerous God-ranks can the Ark Continent have the qualification of waging war with the Divine and the Demon Realms.

After discussing the matter with Laura and the others, Zhao Hai went out of the Space. In his hand was a big red bottle containing Blood Pond water. This bottle was to be given to the Elves so that they can reach 9th rank at the shortest period of time. After Zhao Hai arrived at the city, he immediately summoned the various leaders to the mansion. The people in the city were already accustomed to Zhao Hai's appearance and disappearance. Because of this, they weren't very disgruntled about sudden summons. They knew that Zhao Hai was busy, a lot busier compared to them.

After the group arrived at the battle room, Zhao Hai had them sit down before he said, "You're now 8th rank experts. And as long as you take this potion, then you would reach 9th rank." Then Zhao Hai gestured towards the blood red bottle on the table, causing the eyes of the group to shine.

After looking at their expressions, Zhao Hai continued, "I know that you all wanted to reach 9th rank. However, you cannot take

this potion at the same time.” Upon hearing Zhao Hai, the people in the room couldn’t help but gawk. However, they quickly understood the reason. The Divine Race would make their move soon. If all of them were to cultivate simultaneously at this time, then there would be nobody left to defend when the attack came. Because of this, the group immediately gave an understanding nod.

Seeing that the group understood, Zhao Hai felt relief, then he said, “Once you take this potion to become 9th rank, becoming a God-rank expert would become much more difficult. Relying on this potion to become 9th rank will make it hard to adjust one’s own strength. Only after plenty of battles will you start to see the road to God-rank. Can all of you understand?”

The group nodded, if they can sit in this room, then this meant that they weren’t fools. They knew how the slow cultivations was, even cultivating from 6th to 7th rank was difficult. There was needless to say about 9th rank to God-rank.

Then Zhao Hai continued, “In the present situation, I can only provide 9th rank potions. When my research on God-rank potions are done, then I will proceed to help you.” The group lightly chuckled, they didn’t believe that Zhao Hai could research God-rank potions so easily. In their minds, this was close to impossible.

Zhao Hai didn’t mind their laughter, then he said, “I brought this 9th rank potion in order to make the Elves rank up first. What do all of you think?” The people in the room stared, then turned their head to the handsome but cold-faced Elf. As soon as the Elf heard Zhao Hai, his ice-cold expression couldn’t help but freeze.

After seeing their reaction, Zhao Hai didn’t wait for them to ask. He immediately said, “I decided to give the potions to the Elves first because they are the most efficient in using the blood lightning beads. Everyone should know about how powerful the beads were. Normal archers simply aren’t able to fire this bead, only the Elves are able to. Once the Elves reach 9th rank, then their strengths would undergo a qualitative leap, which would

supplement the blood lightning beads even more. Even when faced with the Divine Race, they would still be able to hold on.”

When they heard Zhao Hai, the group couldn't help but think. It didn't take too long before everyone agreed. In the hands of the Elves, the blood lightning beads were indeed extremely lethal. If they wanted to utilize the blood lightning beads as much as possible, then promoting the Elves first would be a good choice.

# Chapter 752 – Change in the Demon Race

---

If they hadn't been in battle with the Divine Race, then the groups might have something to say. But now that they had experience, they knew that Zhao Hai made the right choice.

All of them understood that choosing the Elves would be the best choice when it came to resisting the Divine Race advance.

After seeing that nobody was in opposition, Zhao Hai turned to the Elf leader and said, "Noah, bring this potion back to your camp. Upgrade your strengths as soon as possible."

Noah nodded, then he took the potion bottle before giving Zhao Hai a bow and leaving. Noah knew that the most important thing right now was to make the Elves break through, other things are irrelevant in comparison.

After Noah left the room, Zhao Hai looked at the others and said, "After the Elves get promoted, the Dwarves will go next. Having the Dwarves get to 9th rank would provide us with more diversity in the battlefield. After the Dwarves would be the Beastmen and then the Humans after that. Don't worry, I can assure all of you that there's enough potions for everyone."

The group nodded, then Zhao Hai continued, "Although the Divine Race has yet to attack, everyone still needs to be careful, especially the Dwarves. We'll leave it up to you to make the ground under the city into a huge battlefield."

Baker nodded, then Zhao Hai turned his head to the Beastmen representatives and said, "Have your mounted scouts investigate the surroundings as well. We wouldn't want the Divine Race to know about our situation and decide to make a pre-emptive attack."

The Beastmen nodded, then Zhao Hai looked at the Human commander and said, "You're humanity's most elite soldiers."

Before you reach 9th rank, you can man the magic cannons for me. You should know that the magic cannons have limited uses, the same goes for the crystals as well. So you need to know when to fire. Behind you, there are 9th ranks working hard on charging the crystals. I want you to find ways to use the magic cannons in the most efficient way possible.”

The Human commander nodded. He was someone from the Rosen Empire, so he held great respect to Zhao Hai. He knew about Zhao Hai’s status inside the Rosen Emperor’s heart.

After discussing these things, Zhao Hai said, “If there’s anything you need, tell me, there’s no need to be polite. Baker, make your men drink less liquor, otherwise if you get drunk, then I’ll personally beat you up.”

Baker embarrassingly smiled and said, “Elder’s liquor is just too delicious. The Elder can feel relieved, we’ll control our drinking in the future.”

Zhao Hai nodded, then he turned to the Beastmen and said, “Beastman Brothers, I know that you’ve taken a liking to eating green vegetables. But you cannot eat too much of it, or else you’ll get weak. I won’t stop giving you vegetables, but you should eat meat as well, understand?”

The beastmen bitterly smiled as they scratched their head and they nodded. Zhao Hai couldn’t blame these Beastmen, green vegetables were very rare to them. Before coming to the city, all of them were yearning of eating some. Now, it seems like these people had turned into Elves, exclusively eating green vegetables every day, causing many soldiers to suffer from diarrhea. Zhao Hai was just giving them warning.

After the taking care of all his matters, Zhao Hai concluded, “Alright, all of you head back, today’s matters end here. Make sure to explain our decision well, unity is very important for us.” The group nodded before they stood up and left.

Zhao Hai let out a long breath and then sat back on the chair. Shue stood by Zhao Hai and said, “Young Master, will sending Beastman scouts really be useful?”

Zhao Hai sighed and said, “Not really, but you must think about balance. Only after the Beastmen reach 9th rank can they display their strength. If we don’t have them do anything, they might think that they’re useless. That wouldn’t be great for their morale. We need to keep them satisfied before they reach 9th ranks and show their usefulness.”

Shue nodded and didn’t speak anymore. He understood firsthand how Zhao Hai was very busy. Not only did he need to think about the Demons and the Divine Race, he needed to keep the balance on all races as well. This would ensure that the Continent would keep its peace, this wasn’t an easy matter.

Zhao Hai turned his head to Shue and said, “The dead raging bulls, have they been handed over to the Beastmen?”

In the previous battle, Zhao Hai released large quantities of raging bulls to deal with the Divine Race’s heavy cavalry. This caused raging bull losses that numbered in the hundred thousands. Zhao Hai didn’t turn these raging bulls into undead, instead, he gave them to the Beastmen to process. Although the raging bull meat couldn’t compare to potions, they can still improve the strength and defense to those who ate it. Moreover, their skins can also be turned into leather armor, providing additional defense. At the same time, their bones can become long distance weapons for the beastmen. Not only were the bones hard, they were quite heavy as well. In the hands of the Beastmen, they would definitely turned into great weapons.

One could say that when it came to using iron to make weapons and armor, the Dwarves would come on top. On the other hand, when it came to leather armor, the Dwarves were actually inferior to the Beastmen. Almost every Beastman wore leather armor, and these were all made from beast skins. Leather armor made by the

Beastmen weren't only defensively strong, they were quite comfortable to wear as well.

Shue nodded and said, "Young Master can feel relieved, it has been handed over to the Beast King. He would definitely be able to process them properly."

Zhao Hai nodded, "Give some blood lightning beads to the Beast King as well. Have them make weapons that can launch these beads for a long distance. This way, we can provide more blood lightning beads to the Beastmen."

Shue nodded. He knew that Zhao Hai would tell these matters to Laura, the only reason he was told about it was because Zhao Hai needed help. If Zhao Hai forgot about this, then Shue can remind him.

At this moment, Berry looked at Zhao Hai and said, "Brother Hai, you must help the Dwarves develop these kinds of weapons as well. The Dwarves' long range abilities are just too weak."

Zhao Hai nodded, he was aware of this issue. He had always wanted the Dwarves to be able to effectively use the blood lightning beads, he just couldn't think of any way.

He thought for a while, he really couldn't think of any material that was able to accomplish it, so he couldn't help but stop his thoughts and turned to Shue, "Shue, after heading back, tell Patriarch Billy about this situation, make them try to find a solution. Right, tell them that the blood lightning beads are quite unstable, they couldn't undergo strong impacts and vibrations."

Shue nodded, then Zhao Hai looked at the skies outside the city lord's mansion before they returned to the Space. After arriving, Shue immediately processed the things that he needed to do. At the same time, Berry and Zhao Hai went to the Processing Machine to take a look, then they returned to the villa.

In less than two days, the tiny pagoda would finish its upgrade.

Zhao Hai didn't know what would happen after the tiny pagoda gets upgraded, but he was certain that it wouldn't be weak.

At this point, the potion materials in the Space can be produced fast enough to make God-ranked potions nonstop. When these potions gets made, Zhao Hai would make Shun use it first. After Shun reaches God-rank, Zhao Hai would then proceed to promote others.

Zhao Hai was now hoping that the materials in the ten magic backgrounds become produced as soon as possible. When that happens, Zhao Hai would be able to bring up a lot of God-rank Experts. As long as they have an army of God-ranks, then even if the Ark Continent couldn't expel the Demons and the Divine Race, they could still manage defend the continent with no problems.

While sitting inside the Space, Zhao Hai turned the monitor on, looking at the Divine Race and the Demons. The two parties were also busily making their barracks and city.

The Divine Race had turned the cities of the Radiant Empire into military barracks. Magic cannons were arranged on the city walls, patrols could even be seen from time to time.

At this time, Laura and the others walked over. They just came back from dealing with Zhao Hai's matters. At this time, those who were extremely wounded and disabled in the city have been sent away. Having these people return to the continent would also make a great impact.

The various groups had dispatched their elite, but they were still hard pressed to defend against the Divine Race and have been injured to this level. If Zhao Hai was not present, then they might not have survived.

The people in the continent were now looking at the Divine Race in horror, but Zhao Hai didn't mind it. The Demons and the Divine Race were truly horrible, however, the people in the continent have never truly realized to what extent. Zhao Hai also didn't want



them to have any misconceptions.

This misconception was about Zhao Hai's capabilities. Since he could block both the Divine Race and the Demons almost single handedly, people might think that the threat was no big deal. If Zhao Hai didn't show them, then they might not know how strong Zhao Hai was.

Now that the injured soldiers had returned, they were able to tell the others about how fierce Zhao Hai was. Zhao Hai had shown strength capable of toppling any Empire and race in the continent. This kind of strength was simply unimaginable in the past.

At the same time, since the injured soldiers weren't a lot, their testimonies wouldn't raise too much disturbance in the continent.

Zhao Hai wasn't in the mood to pay attention to any of these right now. There was a change on the Demon side. Their army had now reached 20 million, moreover, their God-rank experts had numbered to thirty thousand. And since they didn't have enough space like the Divine Race, they were now covetously eyeing Rising Sun City.

# Chapter 753 – Talents Needed To Be Kept

---

Zhao Hai was currently standing on the wall of Rising Sun City, listening to Besmir's report. Besmir wasn't doing anything in the city right now. Currently, outside the city was a huge underground area dug out by the Dwarves. Retreat tunnels had also been dug for easy escape whenever things go wrong.

Naturally, Zhao Hai wasn't stingy when it came to Rising Sun City. At this point, all of the troops in the city, whether they be Humans or not, had become 9th rank experts. Even the Elephant Beastmen were turned into 9th ranks. After all, Zhao Hai took care of this city much earlier compared to Upper Bank City.

During the start of Zhao Hai's large scale promotion, he also took care of prioritizing the people in Rising Sun City. This was because the Demons were the bigger threat at that time, and Rising Sun City was at the forefront of the battle. Therefore, Zhao Hai attached great importance to the defenders.

And Besmir didn't disappoint him, the preparations in Rising Sun City was more developed compared to Upper Bank City. This made Zhao Hai satisfied with the result.

After Besmir relayed his report and seeing Zhao Hai's satisfied expression, he relaxed his heart as he said, "Mister, did you come just to inspect the defense?"

Zhao Hai smiled bitterly before he shook his head and said, "Not just this, I came here this time mainly because of the development in Demon City. It seems like the Demons will make their move soon."

Upon hearing Zhao Hai, Besmir stared, then his expression changed and said, "If Mister is here, then what about Upper Bank City?"

Zhao Hai shook his head and said, "Presently, the Divine Race

aren't making any sounds. They seem to be waiting for reinforcements. On the other hand, the Demon Army has now surpassed 20 million. With the increasing troops in Demons City, I believe that they would make their attack quite soon."

Besmir knit his eyebrows and said, "With the current strength of the Demons, we wouldn't be able to stop them by relying on Rising Sun City alone. The defensive line behind us has already been arranged. However, most of the people there haven't been promoted, they're still unfit to fight with the Demons."

Zhao Hai agreed "This is truly hard to deal with. However, the thing we need to do right now is to delay the enemy as long as possible, allowing Accra Mountain more time to prepare. As soon as our Accra Mountain fortress finishes its preparations, then we would have a proper place to ambush the Demon and the Divine Race armies."

Besmir nodded and said, "Alright, I understand. We'll certainly delay the enemy. However, I'm afraid that also means that we'll waste a lot of magic cannons, crystals, and blood lightning beads."

Zhao Hai nodded, "Rest assured, I will provide you with enough supplies. If Upper Bank City gets attacked, I'm afraid I won't be here to assist you. When that time comes, I'll need your help in promoting the levels of the other cities, providing them with strength to deal with the Demons."

Besmir nodded and said, "Mister, feel relieved, we'll definitely be able to stop the Demon Race."

Zhao Hai nodded, "I'll leave some God-rank undead as well. However, it would be impossible for these undead to win against the Demons. So you still need to be careful. As long as the Divine Race hasn't attacked Upper Bank City, then I will definitely come and help you. However, if Upper Bank City is under attack, then I'll have to leave everything in your hands."

Besmir gave a firm nod as he felt the weight on his shoulders

increase, but he was still very happy.

Besmir didn't know who Zhao Hai really was before meeting him. At that time, he only heard that Zhao Hai was very overbearing and was short-tempered. But now that they had been in touch multiple times, he knew that Zhao Hai was actually a selfless person. He was running around the continent, taking all of his goods for support while leading the frontlines at the same time. It was at that point that Besmir started to see Zhao Hai as his idol, the one he looked up to. Because of this, when Zhao Hai gave him this heavy task, he couldn't help but feel very happy. At the same time, he can also feel the pressure, he was afraid of disappointing Zhao Hai if ever he failed.

Seeing Besmir's tense expression, Zhao Hai smiled faintly and said, "It's going to be fine, there's no need to be nervous. Actually, Accra Mountain is almost ready, you only need to stall for a short amount of time. The Demons can easily defeat our people, so what we need to do right now is to keep our people safe. Those who have fought with the Demons before will be great weapons in dealing with the Demons in the future. You're a general, so you should know about the difference between veterans and recruits. What we need in this war are veterans, make sure to preserve them as much as possible. Understand?"

Besmir stared, he really wanted to use Rising Sun City in order to stop the Demons. In any case, he was even prepared to fight to the end just to stop the Demons from advancing. But now that Zhao Hai said so, he nodded and said, "Yes, sir, I understand."

Zhao Hai patted Besmir's shoulder and said, "You can do it. I'll be honest with you, a lot of people in the continent weren't taking the Demons and the Divine Race seriously. I can block them myself, however, this wouldn't make their current mentality change. So the only thing that I can do right now is to depend on the frontline soldiers. At the same time, I can also use this opportunity to gather more undead, but only the enemies, I won't do that to my allies.

Because of this, I need every single soldier in the battlefield, I need people like you.”

Besmir’s eyes turned moist, he was just a soldier, so he didn’t know much about the complicated matters of the continent. However, seeing Zhao Hai express his grievance, he couldn’t help but resent the people of the continent. At the same time, he was also moved by Zhao Hai’s statement.

Besmir’s voice almost fluttered as he replied, “Sir, what are we going to do? We’re using our lives to protect the continent, but the population seems to take it lightly. Are we really that important?”

Zhao Hai looked straight into Besmir’s eyes and said, “Besmir, there’s no need to doubt it. Who are you? A soldier. And what do soldiers do? They protect homes and defend the country. This is your main responsibility. This in itself is an evidence to how important you people are. Even the most successful Merchant cannot do this. We are resisting against the Demons and the Divine Race because we wanted our children to have a great life in the future. We will not be slaves to the Divine Race nor will be die to the Demons, understand?”

Besmir made an effort to wipe a tear on his eye, he nodded and said, “Yes, sir, I understand.”

Zhao Hai nodded, then he said, “Besmir, your family, where are they right now? I’ll get them sent to the Black Wasteland, making sure that they are safe from harm.”

When he heard Zhao Hai, Besmir couldn’t help but get excited. He can understand what Zhao Hai wanted to say, Zhao Hai wanted to recruit him over to his side. So he immediately told Zhao Hai about his address. Zhao Hai nodded and said, “The Demons are yet to attack, but you must still be ready. I’ll go back and handle some things first. When the Demons come, I’ll return.”

Besmir nodded, then Zhao Hai turned around to leave. Before long, Zhao Hai had Shue get Besmir’s family and had them sent to

the Black Wasteland. This action was equal to having Besmir as his own person.

Zhao Hai already discovered Besmir's talent in command. He needed talented people right now, so he gave special treatment to Besmir.

Lizzy and the others were paying attention the Demons. It can be said that the Demons were more prepared than the Divine Race when it came to making their move. They had already stockpiled massive amounts of military supplies in Demon City. Moreover, their logistics weren't slow as well.

Lizzy was currently frowning as she was observing the Demons, she didn't even manage to notice Zhao Hai. Seeing Lizzy so serious, Zhao Hai couldn't help but smile and said, "What happened? Are the Demons really that hard to deal with?"

Lizzy recovered, then she looked at Zhao Hai and said, "Very difficult. Brother Hai, as you can see, they are quite used to these things. Although they are in their territory, they didn't have any point of relaxation. Most importantly, their coordination is very fluid. Their army composition can deal with anything thrown at them. It can be said that in a frontal battle, the Demons are more powerful than the Divine Race.

Zhao Hai bitterly smiled, "That's natural if you think about the matters of the Demon Realm. All year round, wars happen in every corner of the plane. Therefore, it wouldn't be strange for the Demons to be this formidable. Don't worry too much about it, thinking about possibilities at this time is useless. Just wait for the real battle and then form conclusions then. Make sure to conserve your energy, we still have the Divine Race to attend to. You can leave the matters here for Besmir to take care of."

Lizzy shook her head and said, "I just want to see how the Demons conduct their war preparation. However, I still haven't thought about a good way to deal with them. Forget it, I'll just turn

my attention to the Divine Race. I'm afraid their reinforcements would arrive in the next few days. It seems like we will have to fight in two fronts. Brother Hai, are we prepared for this?"

Zhao Hai forced a smile, "We already did all we could. The Divine Race seems to be anxious while the Demons wanted to take it slow. I can still deal with the Divine Race, but we could only delay the Demons. In any case, as long as Accra Mountain completes its preparations, we can just proceed to slowly retreat and hand the Buddha Empire over to the enemy. I don't believe that the Demons and the Divine Race would get into an agreement to divide the Empire by half."

# Chapter 754 – Dark Mist In The Icefield

---

In the Northern Polar Icefield at this time, the icefield was not so frozen like before. After all, the source of the ice has been taken away. However, due to its relation with the sun, the icefield was still one of the coldest place in the Ark Continent.

After Zhao Hai acquired the wind bead as well as Bubble, he didn't go and explore the place anymore. This was because Zhao Hai's main purpose at that time was to retrieve the Beast God's Spear. So when he found the spear, he immediately thought nothing about the Northern Icefield.

To be honest, nothing really did happen inside the Icefield. But now, it was different. Just as Zhao Hai was having a headache about the Demons and the Divine Race, an unknown change suddenly happened in the Icefield.

In the icefield, no matter day or night, the landscape had always been white. One almost couldn't see any other color except white. Now, this white has been tainted by a little black spot.

But even if it was just a dark spot, its area was still quite bit. The spot was a black mist of over a hundred meters in diameter. In the white icefield, this black spot looked just like an ink blot on a sheet of paper.

This change happened without anyone's notice. If Zhao Hai were to discover this black spot, then he might be able to calculate that it appeared just as the Elves' Tree of Life started withering.

However, Zhao Hai didn't have the time to pay attention to the icefield. The Demons and the Divine Race were already giving him headaches, he wasn't so relaxed to turn his gaze towards the barren icefield.

As time passed, the dark mist became thicker and thicker as the area it took increased. After becoming about ten thousand meters



in diameter, the center of the dark mist was already as black as ink.

Then inside that ink black mist, white smog started to bellow. But this white smog wasn't anything normal, it can actually corrode everything it touched. This corrosive smog appeared more and more.

But this dark mist was nothing more than just a screen. Two days later, a black circular hole has been corroded by the white smog. Then from that hole, more and more dark mists started appearing, making the existing dark spot bigger and bigger.

The suddenly, a bony hand extended from that round hole before a skeleton walked out. He was fully bone white with a slippery bald head. It started to look around the place in puzzlement as it randomly walked around.

Shortly after the skeleton walked out, another skeleton appeared. This skeleton made the same action as the first one, then a third skeleton came.

More and more skeletons appeared from that hole and had started to walk in all directions. It might seem like they weren't doing anything, but in fact they were actually fanning the area around the dark hole.

After an uncountable number of skeletons appeared, a giant bony claw suddenly extended out of the hole, making it bigger in the process. Then a huge magic beast appeared. This beast looked like a wingless skeletal version of the Demon Realm's dragon. It was actually smaller than a dragon and it even had a few bones missing. The skeletal dragon looked like it had been ravaged by battle.

After this undead dragon came out of the hole, it immediately made a large roar. Although it was only a skeleton, the roar that it made was actually very loud. With this roar, the undead close to it started to group up before standing still. It seems like the undead were listening to the orders of this undead dragon.

As the loud roar spread, the skeletons in all directions suddenly proceeded to walk, slowly leaving the dark mist and walking further and further.

After this undead beast appeared, more undead started to appear from the hole. Then after a moment, a zombie with green hair started to climb up.

After these green haired zombies walked out, blue-haired zombies started to appear. Then behind those zombies were an uncountable amount of dark creatures. These creatures did the same as the skeletons before them, looking around before proceeding to walk.

At this time, Zhao Hai was actually worried about the Demons. The Demons were still camped up inside Demons City, this made Zhao Hai quite impatient. Moreover, the Demons have also started to send scouts.

Zhao Hai had always been thinking about the Demons. And now that they had started to send scouts, Zhao Hai began to worry.

For the other party to send scouts, then this meant that they were already prepared to attack. Yesterday, Zhao Hai and the others had discovered that the Demons have increased in Demon City. And now that they had sent scouts, then it seems like the Demons have decided to make their move.

After looking at the scouts, Zhao Hai let out a sigh before turning to Lizzy and said, “Lizzy, should we send some Elves to deal with these Demon scouts?”

Lizzy looked at the Demon scouts and then said, “Brother Hai, to be honest, dealing with those scouts would be a good idea. However, you also need to think that the Demons are pretty strict about their methods. These scouts should have their own methods. And even if we eliminate them, then this will definitely attract the Demons’ attention.”

Zhao Hai nodded, but he replied, “We still have to send the Elves to deal with them. In any case, they would still attack. If we don’t make a move, the Demons might think that we are cowering in fear. Eliminate those scouts, let’s see how the Demons respond.”

Lizzy hesitated for a bit, but she still transmitted the orders without saying anything. Although the people in Rising Sun City weren’t afraid in facing the Demons, they still kept from sending scouts outside. Zhao Hai’s sudden order actually made them surprised.

However, Besmir immediately obeyed Zhao Hai’s order. He believed that there must be a reason for Zhao Hai to make it. Zhao Hai’s understanding of the Demons and their methods were much stronger compared to him. Therefore, he didn’t say anything about the order as he quickly dispatched some Elves to deal with the enemy scouts.

Zhao Hai looked at the Elves’ movements on the monitor. The Elves in Rising Sun City had already reached 9th rank. Moreover, they also provided with a lot of blood lightning beads. One can say that this motion was made to examine how powerful the beads could be in the hands of 9th rank Elves.

Before long, Zhao Hai saw the Elves group up into a hundred people per squad. All of them were advancing in the direction of the Demon Race’s forces.

These Elves were the elites of the Elven Race. And now that they had been supplied with blood lightning beads, it can be said that they were now the strongest combat unit in the continent. If they cannot defeat these Demons, then Zhao Hai’s investment would go to waste.

However, the Elves didn’t disappoint Zhao Hai. After the Elves departed, it didn’t take them too long before they found the Demon Race’s scouts. One must know that the scouts held the most versatile soldiers in an army. Naturally, this would also apply

to the Demon race, their scouts were some of the elite forces of their respective armies. But after coming to the Ark Continent, these Demon scouts were yet to face the Elves. This made them look down on the approaching opponent.

Naturally, the Elves didn't become polite as they immediately shot some stone beads. They didn't use their blood lightning beads yet, they wanted to see the capabilities of these Demons first.

Finally, the stone beads had revealed how formidable the Demons were. One should know that these Demons weren't 8th or 9th, they weren't that high ranked. Therefore, the stone beads should be enough to cause them some damage.

However, the facts had shown that the Elves' stone beads were unable to damage these Demons at all. This meant that without the blood lightning beads, the Elves would be useless in the battlefield.

If this was the case, the Elves could only deal with the Demons while in mid-air. The blood hawks were much faster than the Demons, so the Elves weren't worried about them catching up.

At this moment, the Elves suddenly decided to fire their blood lightning beads. One must say that Zhao Hai's blood lightning beads were quite lethal. A blood lightning bead was able to cause injury in a 20 meter circle within the opposite party. And with multiple of them fired at the same time, this would cause a chain reaction that enabled the beads to become much more deadly than before.

Firing on mounts was the best way to utilize the Elves. The scout troop that the Demons sent wasn't large. But after seeing that the Elves were unable to cause them damage using their stone beads, the Demons started to think that the Elves can do nothing to them, that they had the strength to deal with the Elves easily. This caused the Demons to go and pursue the Elves.

It was at this time that the Elves started to use their blood lightning beads. These beads were things that even the Divine Race

started to dread. Not to say 8th ranks, even the 9th rank Demons have exploded after being subjected to the might of the beads. They weren't able to use self-destruct, even their formidable life force was unable to resist the explosion caused by the blood lightning beads. Almost instantly, the group of Demons vanished from mid-air, completely eradicated by the blood lightning beads.

# Chapter 755 – Dreaded By The Demon Race

---

There was a long distance between Demon City and Rising Sun City, so it would be impossible for the Demons to see what happened in Rising Sun City. It was also because of this that Besmir was unable to know what the Demons were doing unless he sent out scouts himself. He only managed to get information because of Zhao Hai.

One must say the Besmir really wanted to constrain the Demons, however, he was inferior to Zhao Hai when it came to commanding the other races. Because of this, he thought that unless it was Zhao Hai, it would be impossible for the city to work together in repelling the Demon Race.

This matter can be seen in Rising Sun City. In the city, the most suitable scouts would be the Elves. However, Besmir didn't have the authority to command the Elves. This essentially meant that the city had no scouts to use.

The Elves only accepted Besmir as their commander because they were giving Zhao Hai face. However, this didn't mean that they would listen to him.

But this time, the orders that Besmir sent out came from Zhao Hai. The Elves might not give Besmir any face, but they couldn't just disregard Zhao Hai. Zhao Hai had always been fair in his treatment to other races. If they were punished by Zhao Hai, then not only would their races do nothing, they might even get more punishment instead.

Because of this, the Elves immediately went out to deal with the Demon scouts, and with an overwhelming victory at that. Although they were smaller, they still managed to eliminate the group of Demons. Even if this was a small achievement, this was still a huge morale boost for the people in Rising Sun City.

Seeing the actions of the Elves, Zhao Hai couldn't help but feel

delight. It seems like his decision with the Elves was correct. Most importantly, he also gained a metric about how strong 9th rank Elves could be. In the future, they would be able to understand how to utilize the Elves to their full potential.

The Demons wouldn't know about what happened to their scouts, but as Lizzy said, the Demons have reached a state of complete mastery when it came to troop management. If their scouts don't come back in a few hours, then it meant that they had an accident. Otherwise, the scouts would be punished if they came back late.

Because of this, when the Demons discovered that their scouts hadn't returned, they immediately knew that something happened. They quickly sent a battalion in order to seek those scouts, but in the end, they were unable to find anything.

The Demons also understood that if nothing was found, then the only possibility was that they had been eliminated by the Humans. The Demons knew that there won't be anything left once the scouts were defeated. This was because Zhao Hai was present, and he always turned his enemies into undead.

Because of this knowledge, the Demons decided to send a large unit to find the scouts. And even if a battalion was sent, they still didn't dare to approach Rising Sun City.

It was clear that the Demons were dreading Zhao Hai. They wouldn't dare face him before they had completed their preparations.

Zhao Hai looked at the actions of the Demons in the monitor. When he saw that they didn't attack immediately, he couldn't help but sigh in relief. This time, Zhao Hai sent the Elves out because first, he wanted to see how powerful the Elves were, and second, because he wanted the Demons to dread him even more, making sure that they would hesitate in making a move.

However, this situation held its advantages and disadvantages.

They Demons might hesitate to make their attack, but when they do, then one could be assured that the Demons will be giving it their all. At that time, even if Zhao Hai personally went out, he would still be unable to stop their advance.

But the most fear that Zhao Hai had was the fact that he might not even be able to come out when the time comes. Although the Divine Race reinforcements were yet to arrive, there were all sorts of signals showing that they were on their way.

The Divine Race armies were very busy in the military barracks all the time. They had cleaned up every city in the Radiant Empire, this was a clear sign that the reinforcements would arrive.

After seeing the Divine Race, Zhao Hai couldn't help but sigh. He really couldn't understand why the Divine Race would want to obtain the Ark Continent. The Divine Realm was a plane that was a level above the continent. Properly speaking, there was nothing in the Ark Continent that was worth their effort. But they still decided to come, was this because the Divine Race had an inborn desire of conquest?

One could say that it would be unjustified if one were to compare the people in the Divine Realm and the Ark Continent. In the Divine Realm, children were born as 8th ranks, become 9th ranks through adulthood, and God-rank after some practice. In this case, why would they look into the Ark Continent? Even reaching 9th rank would be difficult for the people in the continent.

However, Zhao Hai suddenly changed his mind when he thought about the Divine Race's heavy cavalry. They seem to not be part of the Divine Race. Each and every heavy cavalry rider looked very much like wild men. It was impossible for the Divine Race to have those kinds of people among them. This could only point to the fact that the heavy cavalry units were the Divine Race's slaves. It might be possible for Iron Hammer and the others to be unaware of this fact.



This kind of situation was not impossible. Iron Hammer and the others hadn't been to the Divine Realm in tens of thousands of years. A lot of things can happen in those years and it was impossible to know about the actions of the Divine Race during that time.

If those heavy cavalry soldiers were really slaves of the Divine Race, then Zhao Hai could understand their motives. They wanted to do to the Ark Continent what they did to the heavy cavalry soldiers.

To be honest, Zhao Hai also held belief that the light cavalry soldiers were slaves of the Divine Race as well. It would be impossible for the Divine Race to send 9th ranks of their own people to the frontlines. One should know that no matter how formidable, light cavalry losses were also quite high.

If the light cavalry and the heavy cavalry were slaves of the Divine Race, then the Divine Race had become scarier. This was because it was possible that they had subdued this people not in the Divine Realm, but on other planes instead.

Zhao Hai's speculation was not based on nothing. The Ark Continent only had a written history of less than 10 thousand years. And the matters that Iron Hammer told Zhao Hai was only a few years before that. At that time, the Ark Continent still had people ascend towards the Divine Realm. This meant that, at that time, the people in the Ark Continent were quite strong.

Moreover, Iron Hammer's tale had told them that the ascendants of the Ark Continent had waged war with the Divine Race. There were the gods of the other races as well as some human gods that had fought with them. This might look simple, but when one looks at it carefully, they could see that the Ark Continent held enough talent that their ascendants were able to form a force that can fight with the Divine Race.

If this was the case, then this meant that the Ark Continent had

been sending God-ranks for more than tens of thousands of years ago. This showed the longevity and strength of the Divine Realm.

And through all these time, the Divine Race had managed to stay formidable. If they can use their power to invade the Ark Continent, then why can't they use it on other planes? If the Divine Race used this method on other planes, then this would explain the existence of the light and heavy cavalry units.

This would also explain the reason why the Divine Race decided to invade the Ark Continent. They wanted to make a colony while at the same time, take revenge against the ascended God-ranks from the continent.

Zhao Hai thought about all of this while he was staring at the monitor. As the Divine Race got busy, the worries in Zhao Hai's heart increased. The military barracks that had been set up can accommodate at least several tens of millions of troops. However, the overall number of troops that the Ark Continent had not reach that number.

Lizzy looked at Zhao Hai's expression and consoled him, "Big Brother Hai, don't worry about it. At the very least, we know that the Divine Race and the Demons aren't allies. As long as they don't group up, then we would have our opportunity."

Zhao Hai nodded, then he held Lizzy's hand as he replied, "I'll be fine. After all, even if they become allies, we can just abandon the Ark Continent."

Lizzy nodded. The without notice, a day passed by. Just as Zhao Hai got up, Cai'er flew over to him and said, "Young Master, good news. The materials have matured enough to provide for one God-rank potion and I've already started its production. Also, in a few minutes, the tiny pagoda would be finish. Young Master should head over there and see."

Zhao Hai nodded and said, "Alright, I'll go. Just wait a minute." Then he went back to his room and cleaned himself up before he

went towards the Processing Machine.

Laura and the others had also got up by now. They had also received the information before they quickly took care of themselves.

Laura and the others were different from other women in the continent, those that would need to do their makeup in half an hour, sometimes even over an hour. At this point, they had already abolished that custom. First reason was because they simply don't have the time to do so.

The second reason was because there was no need. In the past, they would apply makeup in order to make themselves more attractive. But there was no need to do that right now. They had been drinking spatial water everyday and also ate the things in the Space. This allowed their skin and complexion to be as delicate as a baby's skin. In this case, they would only ruin their face if they decided to put makeup on.

Because of these two reasons, Laura and the others didn't bother to do their makeup as they immediately went towards the Processing Machine. They just adjusted their hair and wore some decent clothes.

# Chapter 756 – Immortal Cultivators Really Exist

---

Zhao Hai's group were currently in front of the Processing Machine. The tiny pagoda's upgrade would be finished in two minutes. On the other hand, the God-rank potion nearby had just started being processed.

After looking at the Processing Machine, Zhao Hai couldn't help but frown as he looked at Cai'er and said, "Cai'er, do we have enough money in the Space? Even if we use the materials in the magic backgrounds, we would still use gold coins to make God-rank potions. When that time comes, our expenses surely wouldn't be small."

Cai'er smiled and said, "Young Master, you don't need to worry. After the Space leveled up to 70, using the materials grown in the magic backgrounds would reduce the price of making God-ranked potions by about half. Moreover, in addition to the materials for the potion, I've also planted some highly prized crops in the magic backgrounds. Those things would definitely sell well in the Space, allowing us to be self sufficient in making the potions. Additionally, the materials in the magic backgrounds also reduced the time to make God-rank potions. Originally, the potions would take 48 hours, but now, they will be prepared in eight."

Zhao Hai felt relief after he heard this. He didn't think that the magic background would actually have this much benefits.

Laura turned to Cai'er and said, "Cai'er, keep some potions for us. I heard that after becoming God-rank, one's skin would improve. Moreover, one could also reach immortality."

Zhao Hai couldn't help but wipe a cold sweat on his forehead as he turned to Laura and said, "Laura, your skins are already soft. If you become God-rank, then I'm afraid I'd slip whenever I embrace you."

The faces of the women couldn't help but turn red, Laura slapped Zhao Hai's shoulder and said, "Talk less nonsense."

Cai'er smiled and said, "Young Master has a point. Actually, the God-rank potion mainly restores the energy of the body, making every cell of a person more energetic. This allowed the person to look as though they are young. By staying in the Space daily, all of you had already achieved this point. So there really is no need for you to use the God-rank potion."

Laura stared, then her face lit up as she replied, "Really? Then as long as we don't leave the Space, then we would live longer than people outside?"

Cai'er smiled and said, "Correct. However, because the Space's level is still quite low, people couldn't achieve immortality inside it. If we can obtain more plants and items, making the Space level up, then the lives of the people would get longer. Even if it cannot make you immortal, at the very least it won't make you age."

All of the women were now looking at Cai'er with shining eyes. Then they turned their heads to Zhao Hai. Seeing their blazing gazes, Zhao Hai couldn't help but put his arm up as he said, "What do you want? If you want to push me down against my wishes, then I will definitely resist."

Looking at Zhao Hai's expression, the women didn't know whether to laugh or get angry. All of them reached out to Zhao Hai's waist at the same time and twisted it so hard it even made Zhao Hai scream.

After pinching Zhao Hai, Laura snorted and said, "Why do you always talk nonsense? Brother Hai, if we go to the Demon Realm and the Divine Realm, then we must get some rare plants and magic beasts in order to upgrade the Space as soon as possible."

Zhao Hai was currently holding his own waist, he smiled bitterly and said, "When the time comes, we'll do just that. Right, the tiny pagoda is almost complete. Let's see what it looks like right now."

Just as Zhao Hai said that, the Processing Machine let out a white light before the tiny pagoda appeared in front of Zhao Hai. The pagoda was totally different compared to its past appearance. Originally, the tiny pagoda was black all over. But now, the pagoda looks almost transparent, it looked like it was made out of ten thousand year old ice.

Laura and the others were also looking curiously at the tiny pagoda. Apart from the translucent white appearance, the tiny pagoda had also become eight sided. Wind chimes were still present on each corner of the pagoda, but these chimes were now white, blue, black, red, and yellow.

Zhao Hai understood that these five colors represented the five elements. And these colors were actually arranged according to the eight trigrams position. They were divided into two whites, two yellows, two blues, one red, and one black. These eight represented the five attributes that the eight trigrams were representing. The water and fire elements correspond to their own trigram. The trigrams for heaven(天) and lake(澤) correspond to the gold/metal element. The trigrams for thunder(雷) and wind(風) belong to the wood element. And lastly, the trigrams for mountain(山) and earth/soil(地) corresponds to the earth element. This explains why the eight wind chimes had five different colors.

On the top of the pagoda was a small yin yang pattern. This pattern was always turning, making the pagoda look mystical.

Zhao Hai extended his hand as the tiny pagoda flew over. The pagoda revolved around Zhao Hai's hand as the wind chimes ringed. It sounded delightful, it was as soothing as a child's laughter.

Zhao Hai was somewhat attracted to this tiny pagoda. It was too attractive, Zhao Hai couldn't help but stroke it with his hand. This action surprised Zhao Hai since the tiny pagoda acted just like a child. It gently rocked back and forth as it rubbed his hand. It was the same as a child rubbing its small head on the arm of his father.

Zhao Hai couldn't help but smile as he made his divine sense sink slowly into the pagoda. When his divine sense entered, a surge of information suddenly came to his mind. Zhao Hai stared blankly as he comprehended the information. It didn't take too long before he was able to discover how to use the pagoda as well as its innate abilities.

The pagoda was quite strong. It can attack and defend, it can also utilize the power of the eight trigrams, five elements, and the yin-yang. It had a handy sound attack that can affect the minds of the enemy. However, its defense was more formidable. The tiny pagoda can emit a shield that can protect Zhao Hai. The shield can block physical, spiritual, and magic attacks. It was a very extraordinary defensive skill.

Most importantly, the tiny pagoda had also kept its swallowing attack. As long as the enemy gets swallowed by the pagoda, it can turn that enemy's flesh, bones, and soul into energy. As long as this person is within the realm of the eight trigrams and the five elements, then that person would be unable to escape.

And this didn't even count the fact that the tiny pagoda can use the five elements and transform them into dark energy, providing useful resource to dark creatures. At the same time, it can also transform dark energy into five element energy, allowing it to nourish the world. This property alone made the pagoda an extraordinary item of the world.

After knowing the abilities of the pagoda, Zhao Hai couldn't help but laugh. He never expected the pagoda to reach this height.

Upon withdrawing his divine sense, Zhao Hai immediately called, "Artifact Spirit, come out."

Just as Zhao Hai's voice fell, a figure appeared on the tiny pagoda. This person wasn't the one who fought with Zhao Hai, instead, it was a small child who had a yin-yang belly band. It had a round head with black hair that was tied up with two small five

colored ropes.

When Zhao Hai saw this artifact spirit, he couldn't help but stare. His complexion changed as he said, "You're the artifact spirit? What happened to the original one?"

The artifact spirit immediately replied, "Answering to the Master. The original artifact spirit has been turned into pure energy and has been absorbed by me. However, master can feel relieved, I had inherited the memories of the past artifact spirit. If master wanted to know something, then I can provide you with an answer."

Zhao Hai became relieved, he nodded and said, "Just call me young master. Tell me the background of the pagoda's original master. Tell me the realm where he came from."

The small child gave a nod and replied, "Yes, young master. The pagoda's original master is from a world of cultivators. In that world, cultivators rule over countless planes. The Ark Continent is just one of the smaller planes among those."

Zhao Hai stared, he couldn't help but frown, "If they rule this plane, then why can't they directly come here, but instead chose to send a projection?"

The small child quickly replied, "Answering the young master. They rule thousands of planes, but they aren't running them directly. Instead, they would compel powerful people in those planes to worship them and regard them as gods. This would provide the immortal cultivators with faith power."

Zhao Hai frowned, "Tell me about the stages of cultivation in that plane. And then tell me what this faith power is."

The small child replied, "The stages of cultivation are divided into eight parts. The first and second stage had 12 levels each while the 3rd to 8th stages only had nine. The first stage is called Body Tempering, it was a stage where the focus lied on strengthening



the body of the practitioner. This would prepare them for immortal cultivation as well as make them able to study immortal arts. The second stage is called Qi Refining. This stage mainly tackles a person's breath. This stage would adjust the shortcomings of one's body as well as fix the damages caused by Body Tempering.

The third stage is the Foundation Establishment stage. Reaching this rank would allow a person to be a true Immortal Cultivator. Their breath would transform along with their bodies. This stage is said to be the starting point of immortal cultivation.

The fourth stage is called the Gold Core stage. People of this rank can reach lifespans of 2000 to 3000 years. They can form a golden dan in their body which can help them absorb energy from the surroundings more efficiently. Their rate of absorption is said to be ten times faster than those in Foundation Establishment.

The fifth stage is the Nascent Soul stage. Immortal cultivators of this rank would crush their gold cores to form a nascent soul inside their bodies. This nascent soul would be like another personification of the immortal cultivator, helping them cultivate and absorb energy. People in this stage can also use advanced level immortal arts. They can attach their divine sense on objects and turn them into incarnations. And even if their bodies were destroyed, as long as their nascent soul escapes, then they can seize a body from another being. The immortal cultivator that the Young Master had fought with is a Nascent Soul Expert.

The sixth stage is the Spirit Severing stage. Immortal cultivators of this rank can separate their divine sense. This separation is completely different to those in Nascent Soul. Nascent Soul Experts needed magic treasures to attach their souls into. Moreover, the strengths that these incarnations have would only amount to about a tenth of the expert's true strength. However, for those in Spirit Severing stage, their Divine Sense can exist independently to form incarnations. These incarnations would

have about a sixth to a fifth of the Spirit Severing expert's true cultivation. They could also attach their souls to magic weapons in order to increase its strength.

The seventh stage is called Transcending Tribulation stage. Upon reaching this rank, the Immortal Cultivator would enter the peak powers in the realm. They can have as many incarnations as they can. And each incarnation would have nine-tenths of their true body's cultivation. Their main bodies were also allowed to study the Heavenly Dao of time as they prepare to face their tribulation. This is the reason why this stage is called Transcending Tribulation.

And the eight stage is the True Immortal stage. After reaching this stage, an Immortal Cultivator would live as long as the heavens and the earth. The heavens and the earth could no longer control their fate, thus they are called True Immortals!"

After speaking up to here, the small child caught his own breath, then he continued, "Faith power is a type of ability that Immortal Cultivators possess. However, average cultivators are unable to use it, even feel it. Only upon reaching Nascent Soul would one start to discover this ability. Faith power not only helps a person cultivate, but it can also improve an immortal cultivator's magic treasures. Because of this, as long as an immortal cultivator is from a great sect, they would be allowed to have access to several planes in order to gather faith energy. These planes are inferior planes where the most powerful people are Foundation Establishment experts."

Zhao Hai couldn't help but frown, "So is it impossible for immortal cultivators to descend on a plane?"

The small child nodded and said, "It is impossible. Cultivators below Nascent Soul would find it difficult to break the Space by themselves. Only if one were to ascend to a higher plane would this be allowed. Nascent Soul Experts are also too powerful to descend, this is the same for Spirit Severing Experts and Transcending

Tribulation Experts. On the other hand ,Immortal Stage cultivators can achieve this. But even if they did, they still needed to merge with the heavens and the earth in order to break the space between two planes. And this would be a violation of the laws”

Upon hearing this, Zhao Hai’s frown couldn’t help but turn tighter. He said, “But the Divine Race just destroyed the laws of the Ark Continent. Isn’t this a violation to the heaven and earth?”

The small child shook his head and said, “What I was saying before refers to what the Immortal Cultivators describe to be major planes. These major planes have small planes under them, this included the Ark Continent, Divine Realm, and the Demon Realm along with countless other planes. These major planes are all managed by Nascent Soul Experts. These major planes have their own laws of the heavens and the earth. And if one were to look at the entire universe, the number of these major planes were also countless. So a change in a small plane like the Ark Continent wouldn’t have a huge impact to the entirety of the universe. This meant that even if the Divine Race had broken the laws, it was still the law of a major plane, not the universe itself.”

# Chapter 757 – Five Gates Sect

---

Zhao Hai nodded. He had understood so much from what the small child had said. He looked at the artifact spirit and said, “What is the name of the cultivator that fought with me? What sect did he belong to?”

The small child replied, “Young Master, that person is called Lu Wei, an immortal cultivator of the Five Gates Sect. A Nascent Soul Elder.”

Zhao Hai couldn't help but frown as he asked, “What sect is this Five Gates Sect?”

The child replied, “Five Gate Sect is created by a person know as Five Gates immortal. He was a talented person ever since childhood. But because his family was poor, he lived on as a monk. Later on, when it was discovered that his root was extraordinary, he was immediately selected to become an outer disciple in a famous sect called the Golden Light Temple. However, nobody thought that his talent would surpass what everybody expected. In just three years, he managed to breeze through the 12 levels of Body Tempering, going on to become an official disciple. And then in five years, he would break through to Foundation Establishment, becoming an inner disciple. Then ten years after that, he had managed to form his gold core, becoming a Golden Core cultivator, propping him into a position of a core disciple. This is also the stage that divided disciples from each other. If one's root is good, then they can become an official disciple, if it wasn't, then one can only do chores. If a disciple can reach level 9 or more in Body Tempering within five years, then they would be promoted to being a formal disciple. If he can reach Qi Refining within ten years, then he can become an inner disciple. And within 100 years of entering the temple, if one were to reach Gold Core stage, then he would become a core disciple, a genius within the temple.”

The small child stopped for a moment here to look at Zhao Hai's expression. Seeing that nothing has changed, he continued, "But afterwards, when Five Gates immortal went out to do a mission, he was ambushed by someone, causing him serious injuries. Although he has been able to protect his life, his cultivation has been lost. The person who ordered his ambush was suspected to be from a very high background within the temple. In the end, he was expelled out of the sect."

Zhao Hai gave a nod. Being heartless was a common trait of immortal cultivators.

Seeing how Zhao Hai was interested, the small child went back to his story, "But who would've thought that when Five Gates immortal got kicked out of the temple, he would actually meet a famous person. This person was titled Five Resolves Daoist. Five Resolve Daoist was a rogue cultivator that had become famous among the immortal cultivators. His cultivation method is known as the Five Resolves Art. To practice this art, one needed to achieve five goals in their emotions: absolute kinship, absolute love, absolute morality, absolute friendship, and absolute justice. It can be said that one needed to be resolved to be righteous in order to practice this art. After Five Gates immortal met Five Resolves Daoist, nobody knew what Five Resolves Daoist did or used, but he actually managed to restore Five Gates immortal's cultivation. Moreover, it seems like his cultivation had shot up to more than what he had before. After Five Resolves Daoist died, Five Gates immortal began to spread his name to the world. With his talent, he managed to use the Five Resolves Art in order to reach Transcending Cultivation stage. Afterwards, he created Five Gates sect and became the Sect Master. This was something that even Five Resolves Daoist haven't done."

Zhao Hai nodded, it seems like this Five Gates immortal was truly formidable. After thinking for a moment, Zhao Hai turned to the small child and said, "Where is this Five Gates immortal now?"

How strong is the Five Gates Sect? What status did Lu Wei have inside the sect?" The small child replied, "Nobody knows where Five Gates immortal is since he hadn't appeared for a long time. Some people said that he had survived his great tribulation and had become a True Immortal. Some said that he had lost his life during his closed-door cultivation. However, all of these are rumors, nobody knew exactly where and what happened to the immortal. As for Young Master's second question, although Five Gates Sect can't compare to the extremely powerful sects, it can still be considered to be first rate. As for Lu Wei's status in the sect, it isn't that high. He only became an elder because of his cultivation level."

Zhao Hai nodded. Although he looked quite calm, his heart actually turned heavy. He wasn't worried about Lu Wei, instead, he was worried about the Five Gates Sect. If they become enemies with this sect, then their futures wouldn't be very good.

Laura and the others were currently standing by Zhao Hai's side as the small child answered the questions. Although they couldn't understand the conversation, they still knew that immortal cultivators were extremely terrifying people. In the eyes of immortal cultivators, they might just be like ants.

Zhao Hai looked at the small child. The child's face was adorably plump, looking just like China's olympic games mascot. Zhao Hai couldn't help but smile and said, "You'll be called Fuwa from now on. Tell me more about this plane where the immortal cultivators reside." Fuwa immediately replied, "Yes, Young Master. The immortal realm is incomparable large. Nobody knew how many planes it had but these planes are connected with transmission formations. At the same time, there are also major planes larger than the Ark Continent and Divine Realm. In these planes, there would be a constant number of people who will ascend to the immortal realm. But to accomplish that, one needed to have cultivated up to Gold Core stage. Upon ascending, the best result

that one could come up to is becoming a disciple to a big sect.”

Zhao Hai nodded, just as he thought, the immortal realm was much stronger than the Ark Continent. Lu Wei also said that when Zhao Hai ascends into the higher planes, he would then deal with him. People with a high enough cultivation would indeed ascend to a higher realm, much like how God-ranks of the Ark Continent ascend to the Divine Realm.

When Fuwa saw that Zhao Hai was listening intently, he said, “Young Master, there are also many large sects in the Immortal Realm. In addition to Five Gates sect and Golden Light Temple, there are also the 180 Buddhist Temples, 81 Supreme Dao Sects, 36 Demonic Sects, and 72 Earth Fiend Sects. These are the most famous sects in the realm.”

Zhao Hai frowned as he said, “What is going on with this 180 Temples? Do they belong to one group or are they separate sects?”

Fuwa answered, “Young Master, one could say that they belong to different sects. Golden Light Temple is actually one of them. The 180 temples is just a collective name for the sects that cultivate in the way of Buddhism. The 81 Daoist sects are the same. However, one couldn’t say that they are an alliance. Some of these sects are quite hostile to each other. The 30 Demon Sects and 70 Earth Fiend Sects also follow the same description. These sects can be said to be the actual rulers of the Immortal Realm. After them are the powerful cultivation families and then the different Rogue alliances. However, their overall strength is far worse than the big sects, so they don’t have much say in the decisions of the Realm.”

Zhao Hai nodded, then he looked at Fuwa and said, “Alright, we’ll talk more about these things later. What I want you to do now is to improve the undead. Can you do it?”

Fuwa nodded and said, “Young master, that is not a problem. Although Young Master’s undead aren’t that strong, it is still not easy to upgrade them. I can only upgrade 81 undead at one time

and it would take nine days to do so.” Zhao Hai nodded, then he sighed, “Alright. However, can you still fight while you are improving the undead?”

Fuwa nodded, “I am, however, it would slow down the progress of the upgrade.”

Zhao Hai nodded, “Alright, then upgrade these 81 first.” Then he waved his hand as 81 undead appeared around him, these undead were dragons. The fighting strength of the Dragon race was much stronger than the Humans. Although the undead had the same rank of 9th rank, the dragons still held an edge compared to the other undead. Because of this, Zhao Hai decided to upgrade the dragons first.

At this point, Zhao Hai had placed his undead in the Hell background to upgrade them as soon as possible. But although the background was useful to the undead, its effects couldn't manifest in a short time.

Fuwa didn't say any words as he received the undead inside the tiny pagoda. Then he proceeded to stare at Zhao Hai, looking quite adorable while doing it.

Zhao Hai had no reaction to this stare. On the other hand, the eyes of Laura and the others were shining. Laura couldn't help but stretch her hand out and touch Fuwa. Fuwa seems to know about Zhao Hai's relationship with the women, so he didn't hide. However, even if he didn't, Laura still couldn't touch his body. Fuwa was just an artifact spirit, he didn't have a corporeal body, only the tiny pagoda. Because of this, Laura's hand just went through Fuwa's body.

Laura stared, she couldn't help but look disappointed at Fuwa. Zhao Hai smiled faintly and then said, “Don't worry, as long as Fuwa gets upgraded, then he will slowly turn into a genuine child.”

Fuwa nodded at Zhao Hai's words and said, “Indeed” Laura smiled when she heard this, then she turned to Fuwa and said,



“How can you be upgraded?”

Zhao Hai smiled faintly and said, “That would have to depend on me. The stronger I get, the more benefits he would have.” Then after that, the tiny pagoda entered his mouth and settled in his lower dantian, where it was nourished by Zhao Hai’s body.

Since the tiny pagoda has been received by Zhao Hai, Fuwa naturally disappeared. But at this time, Laura and the others were staring at Zhao Hai. Laura couldn’t help but say in surprise, “Brother Hai, did, did you just eat Fuwa?”

# Chapter 758 – Slaves of the Divine Race

---

When Zhao Hai heard Laura, he almost lost himself and fainted. He looked at Laura and said, “Why would I eat him? I just placed the tiny pagoda inside my body, nourishing it with my energy. Only through this can Fuwa slowly improve.”

Suddenly, Laura seemed to have found something out, “So it’s actually that. So after nourishing him, he would become a true child? Then Brother Hai, wouldn’t that be the same as you being pregnant with Fuwa?”

Zhao Hai’s jaw slammed into the ground. As he looked at the laughing women, he couldn’t help but shout, “You actually dared to tease me! Let’s see how I’ll deal with you all!” Then he went on to chase the women who were still laughing with glee.

After having fun for a while, the group returned to the villa with Zhao Hai’s mind becoming very relaxed. After entering the living room, Zhao Hai immediately turned on the monitor to see the situation back in the Demon Race’s camp.

The Demons were still calm despite having their scouts killed. However, starting from then, they began to send large scouting parties. Due to their numbers, it would be impossible for the Dwarves to kill them all.

It seems like the Demons had already decided to have a steady approach in their attack. This made Zhao Hai frown, this was because the more the Demons prepared, the less flaws their plans would have. It was just like how a worried farmer would double check every single piece of land, making sure that everything was plowed properly. This fastidiousness would allow the farmer to see which parts of his land was plowed quite shallow. On the other hand, a farmer that was in a hurry would never find any problems with his job.

The Demons were just like worried farmers right now. They were

considering every more they make before taking a step forward. As long as they find no problems, they would proceed. Although their crops were slow, they can be assured that their harvests would be good.

Zhao Hai frowned as he lightly sighed and said, “I really am not sure if these people are Demons anymore. Aren’t the Demons quite known for being aggressive fighters? But from what we see, it seems like they are taking things quite slow. It should be really hard for them to endure this long.”

Laura was also frowning, “The behaviour of the Demons are really unusual. It can be seen that their commander is quite the patient fellow. This calm advance could only mean bad things for us.”

Zhao Hai nodded, then he turned the monitor to look at the Divine Race. The Divine Race had already made good with their military barracks and had already started to send troops to the Buddha Empire’s border. They already had the Radiant Empire under their full control.

What surprised Zhao Hai the most were the people that came from the Divine Realm today. Although these people came from the Divine Realm, Zhao Hai can clearly see that they weren’t natives.

These people were short and small, similar to the Dwarves. However, they didn’t have the strong bodies of the Dwarves, instead, they were quite thin and looked weak. Additionally, they had green skins, two sharp ears like the Elves, and big black eyes. They didn’t have any shred of fur on their skin. They looked very strange, quite the opposite of cute.

At this moment, these small creatures were being driven forward by a Divine Race person using a whip. These little creatures were almost naked, only wearing a pair of shorts. A lot of them had injuries on their bodies, and their skins were almost sticking to

their bones. They looked just like the starved slaves of the Ark Continent.

Upon seeing these people, Zhao Hai immediately knew that they were slaves of the Divine Race. But he didn't know where these slaves were taken from.

Laura and the others couldn't help but feel sympathy towards these creatures. Laura turned her head to Zhao Hai and said, "Brother Hai, do you know who these little creatures are? Why haven't I heard about them from Iron Hammer?"

Zhao Hai shook his head and said, "I don't know. Iron Hammer hadn't mentioned these people as well. I reckon these creatures were captured by the Divine Race in the past ten thousand years. This might explain why Iron Hammer and the others weren't aware of them. They seem to have the same nature as the heavy cavalry units.

Laura nodded, then she continued to look at the small people and said, "Why would the Divine Race send them here? Are they here to help build more military barracks?"

Zhao Hai sneered and said, "Not to build. Look, you can see that they had brought grain along with them. At this point, bringing supplies from the Divine Race to here would be an inconvenience, it would cost them too much. And although the Radiant Empire is the smallest Empire in the continent, there is still quite a large arabel area inside its territory. If they use these lands for farming, then it would be possible to help supply the Divine Race army. It seems like the Divine Race had already decided to have a long and drawn out war."

Laura nodded, "That seems to be the case. If we didn't have the Space, then transporting food and supplies would truly be very costly. And the Divine Race didn't want it to be this way."

Zhao Hai sighed, "I'm afraid that with this move of farming inside the Radiant Empire, the Divine Race had started to take root

in the continent. Later on, if we want to drive them away, the resistance would be more intense, it wouldn't be easy for us."

Lizzy knit her brows and said, "Brother Hai, do you think that the Divine Race has already conquered other small planes? Did Fuwa ever say any of these? We are in a major plane composed of smaller planes. If the Divine Race decided to deal with the Ark Continent, then its possible that they had done it to other planes. The heavy cavalry and their other slaves should have come from those smaller planes."

Zhao Hai had already thought about this, so he said, "Correct, that is highly probable. If this is really the case, then things would become quite troublesome. No wonder the Divine Race started to move in after occupying the Radiant Empire. It seems like this isn't their first time doing it."

Lizzy gave a nod, "The Divine Race are truly formidable, they're as difficult to deal with as the Demons. It seems like these two races would become great headaches in the future. I hope that when the time comes, they would get into a conflict with themselves. Otherwise, our burdens would only increase."

Zhao Hai can understand Lizzy's thoughts. Lizzy was referring to the time when they have already retreated to the Accra Mountains. They would block both parties there and then hope that they would fight each other. In this way, they would be catching fish without the help of a fisherman.

Zhao Hai gave out a sigh, he knew how cunning the Demons and the Divine Race were. If they want the two of them to fight, then Zhao Hai's side needed to have the capability to do so. Only when the two parties were unable to capture the Accra Mountain would they possibly fight. Otherwise, they would deal with the Ark Continent's residents first, fighting each other wouldn't be too late after the residents have been taken care of.

And just as what Zhao Hai thought, the slaves that the Divine

Race brought had started to cultivate the ground. From their skillful actions, one could see that they were already used to this lifestyle.

Zhao Hai sighed, the Divine Race was truly determined to get the Ark Continent. With these slaves, they wouldn't need to care about the getting slaves from the Ark Continent. It seems like they would be more ruthless from now on.

After some time, Zhao Hai let out a loud breath before he stood up. Then he turned to Laura and the others and said, "From now on, we'll prepare a lot of spatial water in order to promote every single person in the continent. At this point, its is either the Demons and the Divine Race perishing, or us. We couldn't just wait here to be slaughtered, we need to take the fight to them."

Laura nodded, with a firm expression she added, "Alright. I agree with Brother Hai. Even if we can't make them God-ranks, as long as we have 9th ranks, we can deal with the attacks of the two races. Additionally, we also have our 9th rank magic beasts."

Megan gave a nod as well. "There are a lot of troops in the continent. But since their strengths are too low, they couldn't provide that much help. As soon as they get stronger, the average strength of the continent would rise. This would make it more convenient for us to deal with the Demons and the Divine Race."

Zhao Hai looked at their expressions and couldn't help but bitterly sigh, "However, if we do this, the secret of the Space will be exposed. Forget it, this is the only way forward. If we don't resist, then there would be no hope for the future. When that time comes, what will be the use of the Space? Laura, immediately contact the Rulers and Patriarchs of the various powers. Tell them about our plan to release massive amounts of potions in order to promote the troops of the continent. Tell them that we would upgrade them to 8th ranks and that the 9th rank potion would be on the way."

Laura and the others immediately nodded before going off to settle the affair. Then Zhao Hai turned to look at the Divine Race and sighed once more. To be honest, his decision to release spatial water was actually influenced by Fuwa.

Fuwa made him understand a lot about the Immortal Realm. The Divine Race might be powerful, but in the end, they were just pawns of an elder of the Five Gates Sect, used in order to gather faith power. The people of the lower realms were just livestock to them, just like pigs, chicken, and sheep.

Moreover, the Five Gates Sect wasn't the biggest sect in the Immortal Realm, only one of the numerous first-rate sects. From what he understood listening to Fuwa, the Five Gates Sect wasn't even a member of the 180 Buddhist Temples, 81 Daoist Sects, 36 Devil Sects, nor the 72 Earth Fiend Sects. In other words, the strength of the cultivators in the Five Gates Sect can only be ranked at most in the top 400 sects in the Immortal Realm. If a normal elder of such a sect is enough to control the lower realm, then how about those more powerful than him?

The great strength of these immortal cultivators had stimulated Zhao Hai. He didn't want to become just a pig inside a pen. He didn't want to become an ant in another person's eye. He wanted to rebel, he wanted to be competent enough that these immortal cultivators wouldn't dare to look down on him. He wanted to prevent himself from being stepped on under their feet!

# Chapter 759 – Asking Them Over To See

---

A strange phenomenon can be seen in the Ark continent. It was already known that the Divine Race and the Demons were invading the continent, however, people seemed to not worry too much about it. They were just leisurely constructing military barracks, farms, and other essential structures. They seem to act like they were doing a chore in their house.

At a time when the invaders and the invaded were quite passive, Zhao Hai suddenly released a lot of spatial water into the continent. This was good news for the people, especially those in the army. The armies had already heard about the frontlines thanks to various channels. They also knew that they currently had no strength to combat the invaders, if they ever fight, then they would only be seeking death. But since they needed to protect their home and family, they made a resolve to fight no matter what.

But their worries changed when a large amount of spatial water suddenly flowed towards them. No matter what levels they were in, as long as they drank the water, then they would become 8th ranks in a short time. For some soldiers, this was something that they could only achieve in their dreams.

Although these people had already resolved themselves to die, this didn't mean that they wanted to die. Nobody wanted to die, if given the choice, everybody would prefer life.

So how can people refrain from dying when fighting against the Demons and the Divine Race? Simple. As long as their strengths were improved, then their survivability would increase. Once they reach 8th ranks, then their chances of perishing in battle would significantly decrease.

These people were full of gratitude for Zhao Hai, and the next information almost made them worship Zhao Hai like a God. They



had heard from other people that Zhao Hai has a potion that can make them 9th ranks. This was the strongest rank in the continent, they were people who can fly to the sky. Not a lot of people can reach this rank. And now that Zhao Hai has a potion to help people reach this rank, the soldiers couldn't help but feel breathless.

Naturally, this mere fact alone wasn't the most important. They had also heard that Mister Zhao Hai was producing these potions en masse and was planning on making all soldiers of the continent into 9th rank experts.

Moreover, these soldiers knew that Zhao Hai wasn't talking nonsense. They were completely aware that Zhao Hai had these potions. They had seen the results in several of their peers.

Because of this proof, the soldiers couldn't help but believe the news. This information caused a surge in morale for the Ark Continent, especially from the soldiers in the frontlines.

And Zhao Hai hadn't gone back on his word. Large quantities of potions were delivered to various cities and settlements in the continent. As long as one was a soldier, frontline or reinforcing armies, all of them had been promoted to 8th rank. And after reaching 8th rank, they would need to wait later on for the 9th rank potions to arrive.

It didn't take too long for 8th ranks to pop up all over the continent, they look like bamboo shoots going out of the soil after a rain. 3rd and 4th rank soldiers had become 8th ranks, the same level as those they looked up to. This made the people in the continent excited. At the same time, all of them held Zhao Hai with very high respects.

Moreover, Zhao Hai also gave an announcement that later on, commoners of the continent would be upgraded to 8th rank as well. Once they had drank this potion, it didn't matter if they didn't cultivate magic or battle qi, the potion would still improve

one's bodily strength. Additionally, if these commoners bore a child in the future, the effects of the potion would benefit the offspring as well.

This turned the people of the continent crazy. They didn't expect Zhao Hai to be this crazy and provide potions to the commoners as well.

Several Kings and Patriarchs tried to dissuade Zhao Hai, but after hearing his explanation they stopped doing so. Zhao Hai's explanation was very simple. Both the Demons and the Divine Race are formidable, and it would be very hard to deal with them once they decided to join up. This time, the reason he decided to provide the potion to the masses was to prepare for a time where the frontline would get destroyed. This way, the civilians would be able to arm themselves and fight for the continent. After discussing this matter with them, Zhao Hai also made them prepare some troops to train the civilians to be emergency militia.

The various Rulers and Patriarchs of the continent didn't expect Zhao Hai to resolve into this drastic matter. Did this mean that the frontlines weren't able to stop the advance of the Demons and the Divine Race?

Has the situation turned too serious? Are the Demons and Divine Race really that strong? The armies of the continent had already been promoted to 8th rank, were they not enough?

Zhao Hai can understand this mentality. All of them had grown up in the Ark Continent, so it was impossible for them to completely understand the might of the Divine Race. They didn't know that they were treated as milking cows for faith power. In their opinion, 8th ranks weren't weak.

Zhao Hai was currently inside the living room, listening to Laura's report. At this time, various Patriarchs and Rulers of the continent were still suspecting whether it was a good idea to promote the strength of the population. In their opinion, there

was no need to do so.

Zhao Hai sighed and said, “So those guys still don’t believe me, thinking that I’ve been wasting my resources. Laura, talk to them and ask if they would agree to visit the frontlines. We’ll take the initiative and show them how strong the Demons and the Divine Rae are. Then let’s see what they think after then.”

Laura knit her brows and said, “Brother Hai, this is too dangerous. If those people gets into an accident, then our problems wouldn’t be small.”

Zhao Hai forced a smile and said, “I’m aware of that. But there is no other way for them to believe us. Right, tell them to have some of their higher officials come over as well. This way, they can relay what they had seen even faster.”

Laura was still frowning, “But will they come? Won’t they think that this is only our plan and we might be plotting against them?”

Zhao Hai shook his head and said, “They won’t. They are already aware of our strength. If we decided to deal with them, then we wouldn’t do it in this convoluted way. Take care of this matter and discuss when all of them are able to come. We’ll prepare here as well.”

Laura nodded and said, “Alright, I’ll give it a try. Will you really attack the the Demon camp?”

Zhao Hai gave a nod, “We’ll make an attack, but we won’t make it to big. If we do so, then it might cause a strong counterattack from the Divine Race and the Demons. And we wouldn’t want that.”

Laura nodded, “Alright, then I’ll prepare what is needed.” Zhao Hai gave a nod before Laura turned around and left.

Just as what Zhao Hai expected, Laura’s invitation had gone very smoothly. They had also agreed to state a time on when they will visit the frontline. They had a strong desire to see how formidable

the Demons and the Divine Race really were.

In order to unify the schedule, Laura gave them a date, which was three days after. In other words, three days later, the Patriarchs and Rulers of the continent, along with high ranked people in their respective nations, would arrive at the frontlines in order to watch Zhao Hai's performance.

Three days went by fast. In the past few days, Zhao Hai didn't make the Elves annoy the Demons, especially now that the scout troops have more people inside them. If the Elves were to clash with them, then it might be possible that casualties would arise, and Zhao Hai didn't want such an outcome.

Three days later, the Rulers and Patriarchs of the various powers started to bring their trusted aides and subjects to Rising Sun City. Naturally, all of them were brought over using Zhao Hai's Space.

When these people arrived in Rising Sun City, Zhao gave them a short introduction. The most populous people here were the Beastmen. Almost all of the Patriarchs of the Warring races have come, their number had easily reached several hundred. Adding the Emperors and their aides, the visitors had easily surpassed a thousand.

After greeting them, Zhao Hai said, "I know that everybody here wanted to see how strong both the Demons and the Divine Race are. Because of this, I called all of you over to witness today's battle. I will attack the Demons with my undead. Everyone can just stay behind the army, however, please do follow our instructions. Otherwise, if something were to happen, this Zhao Hai will be unable to forgive himself."

Those who came didn't say anything, their relationship with Zhao Hai was very good. Even the Mermaid Queen didn't say anything, she just gave a gentle nod.

However, the Rosen Emperor decided to speak, as he nodded, he said, "Little Hai, since you arranged it, we definitely won't doubt

you.”

After scanning the crowd, Zhao Hai nodded before he summoned large quantities of undead dragons. These dragons were like Alien, all of them had spaces inside to go into. Zhao Hai invited the visitors to go inside the bodies of the undead dragons. Since there were a lot of them, they were split up into several bone dragons.

But even so, Zhao Hai still used about 100 bone dragons in order to accommodate all of them. Then he summoned Shue and Berry along with more undead before they began to fly towards Demon City’s direction.

Zhao Hai already saw it, Demon City has been completely occupied by the Demons. Their number of God-ranks had also reached 50 thousand. It seems like the Demons were already geared for attack.

However, they didn’t think that even before they attacked, Zhao Hai decided to make a move. Zhao Hai didn’t want the Demons to think that the Ark Continent was just a soft persimmon, something that they can just pinch whenever they want.

# Chapter 760 – Worries of the Demon Dragon King

---

The Demon Dragon King was still the commander of the troops in Demon City. This wasn't because he was the strongest God-rank Expert, but because he was very good at strategy.

It can be said that if the Great Demon King didn't appear, then it might be possible for the Demon Dragon King to unify the Demon Realm. His mind for strategy was very formidable, but compared to the Great Demon King, he was still lacking in other aspects.

But this was where the Demon Dragon King seemed strange. Instead of going against the Great Demon King, he decided to devote his heart to help him, winning the Great Demon King's trust in the end. This made the Great Demon King entrust important matters to the Demon Dragon King. For example, the operation of conquering the Ark Continent.

While the Great Demon King stayed back, taking care of the logistics and manpower, the Demon Dragon King took charge of the frontline, commanding the fight against the residents of the Ark Continent.

The Demon Dragon King was currently dread towards Zhao Hai, especially when the latter started to send Elves to deal with the Demon Scouts. The Demon Dragon King was aware of Zhao Hai's strength, so it was no wonder that he had been very hesitant in making a move. Even amidst the satisfaction of the other Demons, the Demon Dragon King still decided to take things slow.

These newly arrived Demons haven't fought with Zhao Hai, so they weren't aware of how scary he was. The Demons didn't think too highly on the residents of the Ark Continent. They had forgotten that conquering the Ark Continent wouldn't take a day or two. In this conquest, the price was the entirety of the Ark Continent. And this price was exactly what made the Demons look

down on the people in the Ark Continent. In the minds of the Demons, these people were not worthy of having such a paradise.

Additionally, the Demons haven't heard of Zhao Hai's name before. Zhao Hai's rise was too quick, and because their information was inferior to the Divine Race, they haven't gathered enough about him before their arrival.

This day, the Demon Dragon King was processing something in Demon City. He has already moved the Demon Race's center of operations in the city, in preparation for conquering the rest of the Buddha Empire.

Although the Demons have yet to attack, the background matters still needed to be managed. The assignment of commodities was also an issue. The people in the Demon Realm weren't less than those in the Ark Continent, and some of these people held grudges towards each other. Although they were under the summons of the Great Demon King in order to attack the Ark Continent, this didn't mean that they would just forget their hatred. Because of this, the Demon Dragon King had to meticulously assign each troops. If he were to make a mistake, then he might be able to offend a certain group, causing internal strife in the Demon Army.

As the Demon Dragon King was working, a mixed sound of disagreement suddenly sounded outside. The Demon Dragon King couldn't help but knit his brows, he can recognize who these voices belonged to. It was from a famous race in the Demon Race, it was a voice from a Demon Brute.

Just from the names of these Demons, one would know that they specialize in strength. They were the strongest but most temperate race in the Demon Realm. Their average height was three meters while their taller members can reach four. They might be very strong, but their weakness was their brains. They weren't too smart, which caused them to be used as mere tools.

However, there were still no group in the Demon Race that dared

to underestimate these Brutes. This was because the entire race was very united. If you use them as tools, and weren't discovered, then that would be fine. However, if they were to find out, they would be willing to fight you to the death. And this didn't just mean a single person, the whole race would attack you. Because of this characteristic, people still needed to think twice before taking advantage of them, even if they weren't that smart.

At this time, the Demon Brutes had pledged themselves to the Great Demon King. But besides the Great Demon King, they wouldn't listen to the words of other people. Even the Demon Dragon King needed to use the Great Demon King's name in order to keep them calm, otherwise his words would be useless.

The one being noisy outside were precisely Demon Brutes, this caused the Demon Dragon King to develop a headache. He knew for certain why these Brutes were causing a ruckus. They've always wanted to attack the Ark Continent, but the Demon Dragon King have always stopped them since he thought that the time wasn't ripe. He had sent the scouts to see and probe Zhao Hai's reaction. If Zhao Hai was entangled with the Divine Race, then the forces in Rising Sun City would be reduced, which will hamper the city from dealing with the Demon scouts.

If the scouts can smoothly traverse the city's vicinity, then this meant that Zhao Hai was with the Divine Race. This would be the best opportunity for them to attack. Otherwise, if Zhao Hai was free, they would have to wait for more time.

The Demon Dragon King had talked about this matter with the Great Demon King, of which the latter agreed. After all, the Great Demon King was the sovereign of all the Demons, even he doesn't want any unnecessary losses among his people.

However, it was evident that this sentiment didn't go through to the heads of the Demon Brutes. They thought that the Demon Dragon King was afraid. Moreover, they didn't believe that the Great Demon King agreed to this plan, and that the Demon Dragon



King was just deceiving them. These people had always pestered the Demon Dragon King to attack, every single day. Now that they heard their voices outside, the Demon Dragon King knew that they came to cause trouble once again.

The Demon Dragon King gently rubbed his forehead. To be honest, he was really bothered by these Demon Brutes. However, he wouldn't dare to offend them. They were quite numerous, and their fighting strength was much needed by the Demon Army. Most importantly, they were completely unafraid of war, they were one of the most genuinely fearless Demons in the Demon Realm.

But these people were just too noisy, they were a constant bother to the Demon Dragon King's busy life.

After some time, the Demon Dragon King sighed, then he stood up and prepared to head outside to appease these Brutes. No matter what, he needed them to wait for more time.

Just as the Demon Dragon King arrived outside the room, he saw several of his soldiers blocking a group of God-rank Brutes. Although these Brutes were only Demigods and were yet to become Full Gods, their strengths were still very valuable to the Demon Dragon King. But this value was slowly starting to vanish as the Demon Dragon King developed headaches from their constant disturbance.

When the group saw the Demon Dragon King come out, one of them loudly said, "Demon Dragon, why haven't you led to battle yet? You even dared to lie about the Great Demon King's words. Wait until we get in front of the Great Demon King, we'll definitely denounce you. Give the order quickly, let us fight!"

Although this Brute didn't have any respect for the Demon Dragon King, he was extremely respectful to the Great Demon King. Since the Great Demon King appointed the Demon Dragon King to be the commander for the frontlines, the Brutes wouldn't

dare to undermine his orders. One must know that the Demons were very strict when it came to discipline. If they dared to attack without the command of the Demon Dragon King, then they would have to answer to the Great Demon King when the time came. Because of this, they could only pester the Demon Dragon King until he gave the command for attack.

Just as the Demon Dragon King was about to appease them, a Vile Demon suddenly flew over to the Demon Dragon King's courtyard. After the Demon Dragon King saw this person, he knew that he was from the scout troop that he had sent out. At this time, the Vile Demon seems to be very anxious while looking for him, something must have happened. The Demon Dragon King didn't have the mood to care about the Demon Brute at this time as he turned to look at the scout and said, "What's the problem? Did something happen?"

After descending from the sky, the Vile Demon immediately gave a salute to the Demon Dragon King before saying, "Your Highness, Zhao Hai came. He also brought his undead, he is directly heading here."

The Demon Dragon King couldn't help but stare upon hearing this information. His expression sank immediately as he said, "Quickly sound the drums. Prepare to meet the enemy!"

As soon as the Demon Brutes heard this command, they all couldn't help but make an excited cheer before they turned around and ran. Naturally, they didn't want to go and fight Zhao Hai right now, they were going back to gather their own people. The Demon Brutes were very united, so when they go to war, they would gather their kin and fight together.

The Demon Dragon King didn't have the mood to deal with these Demon Brutes right now. Those Demon Brutes were already good as they are. They didn't need to or have the capability to discuss strategy with. Because of this, pre-battle conferences were usually devoid of any Brutes. What the Demon Brutes generally do was to

gather their people and then wait for further orders.

Before long, several Demons have arrived in the Demon Dragon King's room. There were a lot of Vile Demons among these people, while the others were from diverse Demon Races. All of their forms and faces look terrifying, and all of their auras were strong. Every single one present in the room was a God-rank expert.

The Demon Dragon King looked at the group and said, "I think everyone already knew why you were called. Do you have any thoughts?"

A Vile Demon opened its mouth, "Naturally, we fight. But as for how to fight, we need to leave it up to you."

Another Demon nodded, "We have been waiting for many days expecting that the Divine Race and the people of the Ark Continent are going at each other's throats. But who would've known that they seem to have small losses. This is not good for our side. And now that the enemy is knocking at our door, it would be impossible for us to wait any longer. Otherwise, this would affect morale, and that wouldn't be good for our future plans."

The Demon Dragon King nodded, then he let out a long breath and said, "The Ark Continent and the Divine Race only having small scale battles is already part of my expectations. I'm afraid that the Divine Race has the same idea as us. I also don't expect the people of the Ark Continent to think about cooperating with the Divine Race. I heard that the Divine Race has used the people of the continent as blood sacrifice in order to descend as well as destroy the laws of the Ark Continent. At this point, the Ark Continent would definitely be in an irreconcilable feud with the Divine Race. It is also precisely because of this hatred where I hoped that the Ark Continent wouldn't be able to hold back for long. It's a matter of time before those two go into a large-scale battle."

# Chapter 761 – Verbal Debate

---

The other Demons nodded, they were aware of this. In fact, they were confused as to why Zhao Hai still didn't launch an attack towards the Divine Race.

The Demon Dragon King looked at the people and then said, "Zhao Hai has strange methods. I have met Zhao Hai a few times. It was when we still haven't recovered our strength. At that time, Zhao Hai was just a Demigod. But when we fought, he suddenly was able to become a Full God. Moreover, his fighting prowess was very strong. At that time, we only managed to hurt him even though there were five of us. He also managed to take Shiyang with him. From what I heard, Shiyang is already dead and was turned into a God-rank undead. What I dread the most is the fact that Shiyang didn't lose any of his strength despite becoming an undead. Zhao Hai is not a simple person."

When the group of Demons heard this, they couldn't help but turn silent. They didn't expect that something like this has happened. No wonder the Demon Dragon King always had a shade of dread whenever he mentions Zhao Hai.

After a while, the Demon Dragon King continued, "We can't underestimate Zhao Hai. For him to come to our doorstep means that he has something in hand. Everyone must be careful. Also, Zhao Hai seems to know a lot about the Demon Realm. I don't know why but he has information that people from the Ark Continent would never find out. Alright, let's end here. Gather the men, we'll have to drive Zhao Hai back."

The group nodded before they turned around and left. The Demon Dragon King also went out and rode his Black Dragon Carriage as it flew into the skies above Demon City.

At this time, the Demon Brutes have also gathered and were flying in the air alongside other Demons. The Demon Dragon King

brought a battalion along with him as they slowly flew out of Demon City. Zhao Hai didn't make them wait for a long time. The undead weren't slow as the cube formation quickly appeared in front of the Demon Dragon King's army.

Zhao Hai's group of three were currently standing on top of the bone dragon's head. The Demons flying behind the Demon Dragon King curiously looked at this ordinary looking young man. They didn't expect that this person would be the one who the Demon Dragon King dreaded. And most importantly, it seems like there was a Succubus right beside this young man.

Zhao Hai bowed to the Demon Dragon King and said, "Your Majesty Demon Dragon King, we meet again. It seems like you've already recovered to full strength. I don't know if I should congratulate you or not." The Demon Dragon King looked at Zhao Hai and gave a smile, "Mister, it has been too long since we've met. Did mister get in contact with the Divine Race? Can I ask who is stronger, the Demons or the Divine Race?"

Zhao Hai gave a faint smile and said, "Your Majesty has been working hard. I have indeed clashed with the Divine Race. Hehe, although I can say that there weren't much difference between the two of you, but seeing how large the Demon Army has become, I couldn't help but feel worry." The Demon Dragon King looked at Zhao Hai and said, "Mister, to be honest, although I admire your methods, I'm afraid you can only block one of us. Did you consider what would happen if the Demons and the Divine Race team up?"

Zhao Hai couldn't help but chuckle, "Haha, don't worry about it, I can certainly block both of your advances. But first, I want to ask you, even if the Demons and the Divine Race team up, how would you divide the Ark Continent later on? Is it an equal split? The division doesn't matter, more importantly, will you even agree to share the Ark Continent? Even if you agree, will the Divine Race be alright with it?"

Just as the two met, they immediately started a verbal debate.

The Demon Dragon King was a veteran in this aspect, and Zhao Hai wasn't very bad as well. This made the others around them open their eyes.

Seeing that he was losing, the Demon Dragon King said, "Mister doesn't need to worry about that. Are you here just to talk to me? Or do you want to use our strengths to prove facts?"

Zhao Hai smiled faintly and said, "I'll be impolite then." Then he, along with Shue and Berry vanished in front of the Demon Dragon King. When they reappeared, they were already in the middle of an undead battalion.

The Demon Dragon King and the others were already prepared for this. The Demon Dragon King established his Domain along with the others behind him. Almost all at once, different kinds of Domain appeared in front of Zhao Hai.

At this moment, several hundred blue lights suddenly projected from the undead and hit the Demons. This made the Domains of the Demons sway, making them somewhat unstable. But this was not the end, another two batches of blue light came and attacked the Domains. This time, those who were hit had their Domains destroyed.

The Demons around them immediately reacted, immediately blocking the attacks from reaching those affected.

The Demon Dragon King couldn't help but stare blankly at this blue light. Zhao Hai had a new weapon, what was this blue light. Was this a Domain from a God-rank expert?

The Demon Dragon King didn't have the time to wait for an answer as the other party's blue lights were too strong. If they wait, they would only be pushed back further and further.

It wasn't strange for the Demon Dragon King to think that way. Zhao Hai had installed his magic cannons inside the undead. This blue light was precisely the attack that came out of the magic

cannons.

The Demon Dragon King immediately gave the command, “Kill them!” Then he urged his Black Dragon Carriage to go forward.

At the same time, Zhao Hai put forth a large number of undead to welcome the Demon Dragon King. These undead might just be Demigods, but their numbers couldn't be underestimated. About five hundred thousand of them threw themselves towards the Demons. The speed of these undead were quick, moreover, their imposing manner was strong. It was surprising that they only had Demigod-level strength.

The Demon Dragon King's heart couldn't help but jump, he immediately said, “Everyone be careful. All of these undead are Demigods. There are too many of them, arrange into formations in order to deal with the enemy!”

The Demons had grown up in war since childhood, so they didn't take too long before they responded to the Demon Dragon King's warnings. All the Demons immediately grouped up and connected their Domains, uniting together to deal with the sea of undead.

Zhao Hai looked at the back of the enemy's army and to the Demon Dragon King. Zhao Hai didn't like how quick the Demons were in responding. They were truly formidable enemies.

The army of Demigod undead quickly got in contact with the formations made by the God-rank Demons. These undead actually made their own formations, but this credit went to Lizzy and Megan.

At this point, Lizzy and Megan were getting better and better in coordination. Lizzy commanded her undead to fight against the God-ranked Demons while Megan took care of the others. The skies above Demon City were lively and full of action. However, Zhao Hai has yet to gain any advantages from the fight.

Inside one of the undead, the Beast King had found himself

having an ugly expression. He had always thought about how strong the Beastmen were when it came to warfare. Their savageness in the battlefield was something that was feared in the Ark Continent. No power dared to annoy the Beastman Race.

But in this fight, the Beast King saw severely wounded Demons voluntarily exploding themselves. Not only did this eliminate them being turned into undead, they also managed to take some undead along with them.

The Beast King can see it clearly. Zhao Hai's undead were all at least 9th rank. One of the Demons blew themselves up and turned the undead in front of him into ash. Several undead close by were also affected by the shockwave, severely damaging them in the process.

This scene wasn't rare in the battlefield. As long as Demon was seriously injured, they will immediately blow themselves up, causing damage to their enemies.

While looking at those Demons, the Beast King couldn't help but feel terrified. He can be assured that the Beastmen wouldn't be able to reach this point. Moreover, what made him startled was the raw strength of these Demons.

When a person goes head to head with an equally ranked undead, then that person would suffer greatly. This was because the undead weren't afraid of death nor pain. If you slash them with a sword, they wouldn't care to defend, instead, the undead would just swing a sword at you at the same time. In the end, the one who would profit off of this trade would be the undead. Because of this, people would only fight an undead whenever their strength greatly surpassed it.

On the other hand, the Demons weren't only fighting with the undead, they were also in equal terms. Only when they were killed by the undead would they stop fighting, otherwise they would explode, taking some undead along with them. Such ways of



fighting could terrify any person.

It wasn't only the Beast King, the heads of the major powers were also shocked at the Demon Race's manner of fighting. They were too savage, too scary. They can affirm that no soldier, even those who had turned 9th rank, would be able to single handedly face these Demons. Except for Zhao Hai's undead army, all other armies would surely find it difficult to stop the Demon Race.

Zhao Hai calmly looked at the battlefield before him. To be honest, he didn't want to fight with the Demons yet. This was because fighting them at this time would give him no benefits. Unlike the Divine Race, the Demons would almost always blow themselves up before being turned into undead. Now only would this keep Zhao Hai from gaining profits, he would also lose a lot of undead.

## Chapter 762 – After the Battle

---

But this didn't mean that Zhao Hai didn't want to fight because he can't. He was just compelled to do so because of the underlying reasons. Moreover, he also decided to use this time to see if the Demons had any weakness that he can exploit.

However, after half a day of battle, Zhao Hai wasn't able to find something out. The life force of these Demons were just too strong. Only when their heads were chopped off could they be safe. Otherwise, no matter what injury they had, they would still manage to survive, and then they would proceed to blow themselves up.

Chopping the heads of Demons required huge skill, which Zhao Hai's undead cannot voluntarily do. Because of this, Zhao Hai manage to lose a lot of undead in this battle.

The Demon Dragon King had already tied down the Demigod-level undead. However, the undead were still going strong. Otherwise, if they weren't undead, they would have already fallen to the attacks of the Demon Dragon King's group.

Zhao Hai looked at the battlefield and then frowned. The Demon Dragon King was doing the same thing as well. To be honest, Zhao Hai's undead had caused him great headaches. Even the undead that the Lich summoned weren't as hard to deal with compared to Zhao Hai's undead. The team of Demons that can block the undead can only be so much compared to the numerous Demigod-level undead.

Both sides went on for two more hours, causing damage to both sides. At this time, Zhao Hai gently waved his hand as Megan and Lizzy led the undead to retreat, then Zhao Hai went forward. After seeing this, the Demon Dragon King also waved his hand, stopping the Demon Army from chasing. Zhao Hai looked at the Demon Dragon King and said, "Your Majesty, I just want to persuade you

once more that the Ark Continent isn't necessarily suitable for the Demons. Now that their spatial rift has been opened, the Divine Race had already started to flood into the continent. They are very greedy, managing to conquer multiple planes. If you decide to join with the Divine Race to deal with us, then after that the Divine Race would surely deal with the Demons. To be honest, after clashing with both you and the Divine Race, I can say that the Demons will surely face heavy casualties if you and the Divine Race were to fight. I'm saying this in order for the Great Demon King to take this matter into consideration." Then Zhao Hai turned around and led his army to retreat.

The Demons didn't chase after them, they wouldn't dare to do so. At this time, the Demons finally understood why the Demon Dragon King had always held them back from attacking the Ark Continent. If they wanted to attack, then they have to consider this existence called Zhao Hai.

The Demon Dragon King looked at Zhao Hai until he was already far away. Then the Demon Dragon King sighed. To be honest, he was starting to believe Zhao Hai's words. The Ark Continent might be a beautiful place, but it was not necessary for the survival of the Demon Race.

Why were the Demons strong? It was because they grew up in a place such as the Demon Realm. In that place, if you weren't strong, then you will either be eaten or be turned into slaves. In this case, all the Demons needed to go all out, which resulted in the formidable Demon Race that it is now.

But the Ark Continent was different, the environment here was fantastic. There were food everywhere, moreover, there weren't any dangers in living in this place. If the Demons were to get idle, will they still belong to the formidable Demon Race? It's still hard to say.

On the other hand, it was really hard to give up on the Ark Continent. The place was too beautiful for the Demon Race,

abandoning it would be a pity. Not to say the others, even the Demon Dragon King didn't want to just give up. Although he knew that the continent would dull the fangs of the Demon Race, it was still too good to give up on.

The Demon Dragon King's army slowly returned to Demon City. After arriving at the city, the Demon Dragon King immediately had a meeting with his subordinates. The Demon Dragon King also called the Demon Brutes over, he wanted to hear what they thought.

Although the Demon Brutes were the most violent race among the Demons, they were not that stupid. When facing a strong enemy, they would still make the right choice. This can be seen by the fact that they submitted to the Great Demon King. For each race to survive, they would need the necessary skills to do so, especially in a place like the Demon Realm. The Demon Brutes not only survived in this hellscape, they also managed to expand. If they were really the boorish fellows that were described, then they wouldn't have reached their current status.

The Demon Dragon King sat in the hall, he looked at those present and said, "Everyone, tell me your thoughts about today's battle."

The people in the room looked at each other, but nobody spoke. After some time, a Demon opened its mouth, "Formidable. This Zhao Hai is stronger than what I thought. Conquering the Ark Continent was proving to be difficult."

Then with this, the people in the room immediately expressed their thoughts to each other. One of them said, "I don't understand. How could he have a lot of strong undead? This doesn't add up."

Another Demon said, "Right, and he didn't even make a move, only his undead creatures fought."

A Demon Brute in the audience stared at the others and said,

“What? You’re all afraid? Are you really Demons? That Zhao Hai, even if strong, is still one person from the Ark Continent. Do you think there are more of him out there? If that was the case, then they would’ve driven us away a long time ago.”

The Demon Dragon King looked at the Brute as he nodded, “Right, out of all the people in the Ark Continent, this Zhao Hai is the only one that I dread. After investigating, I can affirm that the people in the Ark Continent are relying on Zhao Hai. If not for him, the continent would have already been conquered. Because of this, after knowing that the Divine Race has come, I decided to hold back from attacking. First, we can use this time to construct important structures for the rear army. And second, to have a look at the strength of the Divine Race. We need to know about the Divine Race in order to have the confidence to deal with them. And lastly, I want Zhao Hai and the Divine Race to fight, hopefully causing major losses on both sides. What do all of you think about this?”

The Demon Dragon King’s two cold eyes scanned everyone in the room. All of them couldn’t help but unconsciously lower their heads. They were ashamed of themselves for berating the Demon Dragon King with criticisms when he decided to refrain from doing an attack.

After seeing the response of the group in front of him, the Demon Dragon King couldn’t help but laugh inside. The relationships between the Demon Races were very complex. And now that they had been placed in a single place, they needed to be well managed. Even the Great Demon King was having difficulties in this matter, let alone the Demon Dragon King.

Normally, the Demon Dragon King would find it hard to calm them. But now that Zhao Hai made a move, these people started to behave themselves. It was advantageous for the Demon Dragon King if these people were to stay this obedient.

After scanning the group, the Demon Dragon King said, “Alright,

something major happened today, all of you should go back. Go and check the casualties in your respective groups. Those injured needed to be taken care of immediately. We don't want to make a sudden move and make a drastic mistake. We need to be careful from now on." Then the Demons nodded before they turned around to leave.

Demon City slowly calmed down. However, the same cannot be said with Rising Sun City. Zhao Hai wasn't able to get any advantages in today's battle, he might have even suffered some losses. However, Zhao Hai didn't think too much about it. On the other hand, the Rulers and Patriarchs of the continents were very shaken, their expressions were ugly to see.

Zhao Hai welcomed them to the city lord's mansion of Rising Sun City. After everyone had sat down, Zhao Hai looked at them and said, "Everyone should have witnessed the strength of the Demon race. To tell you the truth, those undead that I sent out had God-rank strength. However, they are only Demigods, the lowest level a God-rank expert can be, about the same strength as Origin Sword Saint. And I have used five hundred thousand of those undead to fight the Demons." The Rulers and Patriarchs didn't speak. In the past, since they haven't witnessed the strength of the Demons, they couldn't believe the tales told about them. But now, they finally understood that Zhao Hai didn't lie. The Ark Continent was indeed in a very dangerous situation.

Zhao Hai looked at their faces and said, "The Divine Race's strength is no weaker than the Demons. And there are more people from the Divine Race. In their army, their weakest troops are their Heavy Cavalry, with an average level of 8th rank. However, even if their Heavy Cavalry are unable to fly, they still have strength comparable to a 9th rank expert. Their innate strength is astonishing as well. If they were to charge, then I'm afraid that neither the Elephant Tribe, the Bull Tribe, nor the Rhinoceros Tribe are able to meet them head on. Moreover, after reaching 9th

rank, their strengths have undergone a huge change. 8th ranks would be nothing in front of them.”

After speaking up to here, Zhao Hai continued, “Aside from the Heavy Cavalry, there are Light Cavalry units as well. The lowest rank of these Light cavalry is 9th rank, God-ranks were among their numbers. In addition to their strength, they are quite quick as well. I’m afraid only the strengthened Elves with blood lightning beads can contend with them in the skies.”

## Chapter 763 – Actually, We Are Sheep

---

As soon as Zhao Hai finished talking, he could see that the faces of those present here has become ugly. Zhao Hai looked at them and said, “I also suspect that the Divine Race’s light and heavy cavalries aren’t real members of the Divine Race, but slaves that came from the planes that the Divine Race has conquered. Naturally, their status in the Divine Race should be just cannon fodder. Every fight, they would be placed in the front while the Divine Race stays behind. At the same time, the Divine Race army is also very powerful. They almost don’t have any 9th rank member, most of them are God-ranks. If we didn’t have the magic cannons in the last encounter, then we might not have been able to stop them from going forward.”

Then Zhao Hai gave out a sigh and continued, “This is truly the Ark Continent’s greatest tribulation. The Demons and the Divine Race, any one of them would be difficult to deal with, much less two. The reason why I had the commoners promoted was because I’m afraid that we wouldn’t be able to stop the two invaders from going forward. When the time comes, we would need all the manpower that we can get.”

Nobody spoke, although they hadn’t yet seen the Divine Race, seeing Zhao Hai equating them to the Demons was enough to prove their prowess.

Zhao Hai scanned the group and then gave a bitter smile, “Actually, there is another matter that I still haven’t told all of you. I’m hesitating to tell this because I’m afraid that you would become too terrified.”

When the Rosen Emperor heard Zhao Hai, he paused for a moment before he said, “Little Hai, what else can scare someone as old as us. Just say it. Can it be more terrifying than the arrival of the Demons and the Divine Race?” Zhao Hai looked at the Rosen Emperor and smiled, “Father-in-law, this thing is more terrifying



than that. Let me tell you. I've already fought with the Divine Race for two times. The first time, I faced with their infantry units. They're very strong. I managed to drive them away using my undead, the magic cannons, and a lot of crystals. On the second encounter, I faced against their regular army, the heavy cavalry, the light cavalry, and the summoners. I've already told everyone about the cavalry units. But those summoners are special units specifically trained by the Divine Race. These summoners summoned strong magic beasts. And most importantly, when these summoners combine their powers, they were able to summon a person."

Those present gawked, summoning a person, they had heard of summoners able to summon humanoid magic beasts. However, from Zhao Hai's tone, it seems like it wasn't a magic beast. What does this mean?

Zhao Hai looked at the group and continued, "Right, it is an actual projection of a person. And the Divine Race called this person 'Deity'. For the Divine Race to call someone Deity is already very strange. Afterwards, this projection and I had a huge fight. In the end, I almost lost my life when I was attacked by that person's spiritual attack. Luckily, I was able to survive and eliminate the projection."

The group continued to stare. Although they didn't understand what this projection was, they can fairly imagine that a projection wasn't a person himself, but something like a shadow instead. A shadow-like thing actually managed to almost kill Zhao Hai? This information made everyone panic.

Zhao Hai smiled bitterly and said, "To be honest, that was the most dangerous situation that I have been in. My mind was completely out of it. Fortunately, I have some potions in my hand, allowing me to recover quickly. That projection didn't think that I can recover so fast, so he didn't expect it when I came out and destroyed his weapon, eliminating the projection in the process."

After speaking up to here, the room finally relaxed. Before this day, they wouldn't easily believe Zhao Hai's words. But now, all of them didn't doubt him anymore. Even after seeing Zhao Hai doing well in front of them, they still couldn't help but be nervous for Zhao Hai.

Zhao Hai continued, "After killing the projection, I used a secret Dark Magic technique in order to obtain certain information from that person's mouth. This information was what startled me."

The Rulers and Patriarchs were all looking at Zhao Hai, waiting for him to say this information. Zhao Hai looked into their eyes and said, "From that person's memory, I had found out that in this universe, planes like the Ark Continent, Demon Realm, and Divine Realm were aplenty. However, our Ark Continent, the Demon Realm and the Divine Realm were no more than the most common type of plane. They were under these so called major planes. That man from the projection was supervising this major plane in order to collect faith power from these common planes. In other words, in that person's eyes, our use is just to provide them with faith power."

The group stared, puzzled at what Zhao Hai said. Then the Rosen Emperor said, "Little Hai, what is this faith power that you speak of?"

Zhao Hai replied, "This faith power is a type of invisible energy. Actually, the Radiant Church's purpose was precisely to offer this energy. As long as one becomes faithful to the point where one can sacrifice themselves, then they will provide faith power to the Deity. This energy might be useless to us, but for that man that the Divine Race summoned, it is very useful. Whether it was the Demons, Divine Race, or us, we are just like sheep raised to be sheared to provide wool."

As soon as they heard this, the people in the room couldn't help but be in an uproar. These people were used to be the ones stamping their feet, ruling the Ark Continent in their high

positions. But now, in the eyes of the man that was summoned by the Divine Race, they were just like Sheep. How unbelievable was this?

Zhao Hai saw their reaction and smiled bitterly. He knew that this was a hard thing for these people to accept. They had lived their lives being aloof, but they were actually just sheep in the eyes of others. How could they just accept this fate?

After some time, the group calmed down, but each of their expression stayed quite ugly. Zhao Hai looked at them and forced a smile, “I know that everyone isn’t feeling any better. But no matter what, I need to say this. Although that projection was just like a shadow, but that thing had about the same strength as me even though it only had 1 percent of the true body’s power. In this case, if that person himself came here, I would have surely died. This person might seem strong, but from what I had gathered, he was only a normal person in his realm. In this case, how could they possibly place us in their eyes?”

Zhao Hai’s words made those present turn pale. It was just unbelievable. If the enemy can send someone that can fight 100 Zhao Hais then that would be too scary.

Zhao Hai continued, “But everyone doesn’t need to worry about this. It would be impossible for that person to arrive at our Ark Continent, just like how hard it was for the Divine Race to arrive here. And since that person is too strong, he would have to expend more energy if he decided to personally descend.”

Seeing that the crowd had relaxed, Zhao Hai then said, “But even if they can’t come over, the aid that they could provide to the Divine Race was still problematic. The method that the Divine Race used to break the Ark Continent’s space came from that person. After all these years of guiding the Divine Race, who knows what weapons they have in their hands. Because of this, I couldn’t help but pay attention to the Divine Race.”

The group nodded, they didn't dare underestimate the Divine Race after this. Then Zhao Hai said, "But I'm still afraid that the person would come here despite the difficulties. When that happens, then that would be the end for us. I don't want to frighten you, but I want all of you to give your all in preparation. When both the Demons and the Divine Race decides to attack, then we would have to give up on the Buddha Empire and go all out in defending the Accra Mountains. In the mountains, our Ark Continent would have a chance for survival. We need to wait before my God-rank potions get finished, then we would have more God-ranks in the Ark Continent. When that time comes we can counter attack. And as long as we block the two races, it would be possible that they would go against each other first, that would be a good outcome for us. So when everyone gets back, they must train every single person they can. It may be possible for us to use them the war. But preferably, I want them to stay as reserve."

The Patriarchs and Rulers nodded. After witnessing the Demons today, their previous mentality has already vanished. They were now very convinced to turn the commoners into experts that the continent may possibly use.

Zhao Hai looked into their eyes and said, "I know that everyone of us is busy, so I won't be keeping you here for long. I only hope that after you head back, you will put your best in training the troops. The Divine Race has already turned the entire Radiant Empire into their military outpost, waiting for their reinforcements to arrive. On the other hand, the Demons have never stopped sending their troops over. If we combine those two armies, then my undead would prove insufficient. I need more people to help defend the frontline."

The people present held a very heavy heart, but as Zhao Hai said, these invaders weren't simple people. The continent couldn't idle for too long.

After having their talk, Zhao Hai immediately used his spatial

riffs to send everyone back to their territories.

# Chapter 764 – Shun Becomes A God

---

After sending the Rulers and Patriarchs off, Zhao Hai gave out a sigh. Then he returned to the Space and sat inside the living room as Meg served him a cup of tea. Laura and the others were also sitting beside him.

Although Zhao Hai didn't tell the whole truth, Laura and the others can understand that some matters cannot be said, especially when it came close to exposing the Space's existence.

Laura looked at Zhao Hai and said, "Brother Hai, do you think that those people would change the way they think? We didn't really need to do that much"

Zhao Hai smiled bitterly and said, "I hope they do. Otherwise, he would have wasted our time."

Lizzy had a complicated face as she said, "Brother Hai, why didn't we go fight the Divine Race? Battling them would show father and the others a more formidable side of our enemies."

Zhao Hai forced a smile and said, "The Divine Race is different from the Demons. The Demons are currently afraid of us, moreover, they desired for us to battle the Divine Race. Because of this, before the Divine Race makes their move, the Demons wouldn't make too big of a move. On the other hand, the Divine Race has always been prepared for a fight. Also, after monitoring them for quite some time, you should know how arrogant the Divine Race are. If we decided to poke them a bit, then they might go and attack us in full force. When that time comes, the Demons would also make their move. The Demon Dragon King isn't a simple person, that would be the result that he desired the most. Moreover, I chose the Demons because they don't have magic cannons, completely different to the Divine Race who had huge ones. Although we haven't seen the might of their cannons, we can be assured that they are more threatening than ours. From what I

can see, threatening the Divine Race would cause us to lose more undead in the end.”

Lizzy gave an understanding nod. The Demons were also better targets because they didn’t have any strength with regards to defending a city, their prowess completely relied on field battles. But the Divine Race is different, their defensive strength was also very strong, those huge magic cannons aren’t just for decoration. If Zhao Hai went on to attack the Divine Race, then his losses would certainly be huge. And at this time, Zhao Hai cannot afford to lose so much undead.

Lizzy sighed and said, “Big Brother Hai, you’ve actually thought up to this point. I feel kind of useless right now.”

Zhao Hai looked at Lizzy and smiled, “What are you saying. Aren’t you and Megan the ones commanding the undead? Also, Laura, Ruyen, and Meg are also doing the logistics. It is only because you took these matters off my shoulders that was I able to make extra considerations. Moreover, you should know that your ability in commanding the undead is far superior than mine. If I were the one controlling the undead in the recent battle, then I might have even lost all of them.”

Lizzy and the others couldn’t help but smile upon listening to Zhao Hai. Laura looked at Zhao Hai and said, “Brother Hai, you said that the Immortal Cultivator won’t come to the continent. However, what would we do if he did?”

Zhao Hai gave a bitter smile and said, “Lu Wei’s status isn’t high. Additionally, it would take a lot of resources for someone like him to come here from the cultivation world. Remember how much the Divine Race sacrificed in order to come here? Lu Wei would certainly pay a much bigger price compared to the Divine Race. Because of this, it would be close to impossible for him to come. The price would be too much for someone like Lu Wei to pay. What I’m worried right now is when we get stronger in the future. If we manage to ascend to the cultivation world, then we would

have Lu Wei to worry about.”

Lizzy smiled and said, “There’s nothing to worry about that. He wouldn’t know that Brother Hai has the Space. Right, Brother Hai, when do you think the Divine Race would attack?” Zhao Hai shook his head and said, “I don’t know. The Divine Race aren’t too anxious right now. Forget it, the God-rank potion should be done quite soon. When it’s made, Immediately give it to Shun. Then we’ll have him participate in battles in order to awaken his Domain. Cai’er, how long will it take before we can use the materials in the magic backgrounds?”

Cai’er smiled and said, “Young Master, they should be ready in a few days. There are already some that are available, but they are still yet to mutate. Having mutated ingredients would make it much easier for us to produce God-rank potions, so I chose to wait.” Zhao Hai nodded and said, “Alright, I’ll leave it all to you. I’m quite tired, so I’ll take a break.” Then he stood up and went to his room.

Zhao Hai got up early the next morning. After having his breakfast, he went to the living room and looked at the screen. The movements of the Divine Race weren’t small. Their little slaves have already been sent to cultivate the lands. Moreover, they also had more of their troops stations near the Buddha Empire’s borders.

After seeing this scene, Zhao Hai’s complexion couldn’t help but sink. He knew that the reinforcements were coming, and that the Divine Race would soon start their attack. And from what he can see, they were going full force!

Laura and the others were also looking at the monitor. Although they had expected this situation, their imaginations were still less than the display before them. Their hearts couldn’t help but turn cold at what they had seen.

Zhao Hai let out a long breath and said, “It looks like it’s time to



fight a major battle. I'm afraid the Divine Race would be attacking within a few days. These guys, it seems like they aren't placing the Demons in their eyes. They clearly knew what the Demons are planning, but they still chose to be this arrogant."

Laura and the others sighed, they didn't say anything. Zhao Hai changed the monitor's display to see the situation of the continent. He couldn't help but let out a sigh of relief, the continent was now starting to train the commoners. Although it was just the start, it was still a welcome development.

After looking at this, Zhao Hai turned to Laura and said, "Immediately tell the continent that the Divine Race's reinforcements are coming. Moreover, they would be attacking in the next few days. Give them the 9th rank potions now, have them promote all the armies into 9th rank."

Laura and the others nodded, then they proceeded to handle the matter. Zhao Hai was still quite worried. Although having a lot of 9th ranks was great, he wasn't sure if they were able to fight the Divine Race.

Zhao Hai shook his head and disposed of these ideas. Then Zhao Hai released Fuwa and asked him about the undead dragons. Fuwa told him that they would still need more days before being done. It might have been fine if there wasn't a battle, but now that one was coming, Zhao Hai couldn't help but think about how hard it was to acquire God-ranks.

The next day, the God-rank potion had finally been made. Zhao Hai immediately called Shun over, making him take the potion. Shun smoothly became a God, but he was yet to comprehend a Domain. This time, Zhao Hai didn't deliberately find trouble with the Divine Race or the Demons, the situation was just too volatile. For now, Zhao Hai had Shun get familiarized with his new strength.

And Zhao Hai made the right decision, although Shun can't make

a lot of clones like Shue, he was still a powerful assassin. With his promotion to God-rank, Shue's hidden weapon skills became even stronger. From Zhao Hai's calculations, not even 10 Demigods would be able to face Shue and his unstoppable hidden weapons.

Now that Shun and Shue, the two friends, were on the same ground once again. Zhao Hai was thinking about promoting Blockhead and Rockhead next. The mental synergy between the two was very strong. Once they become Gods, their combat strength would surely soar.

Zhao Hai was now acting like a Merchant, thinking carefully where to invest, making sure that every step was perfect.

Zhao Hai and Shue helped Shun get used to his own strength. In order to improve Shun's power, Zhao Hai spent some gold coins in the Processing Machine in order to produce a batch of hidden weapons. He also gave Shun a couple of spatial bags filled with those weapons. The weapons in the bags should last him for a few years.

After leaving Shue and Shun, Zhao Hai felt more relaxed. In the past, the two had been worried that they weren't able to help Zhao Hai, but now that Zhao Hai had things he couldn't handle, the two can proceed to show their usefulness. While the two were looking at the monitor, Zhao Hai went on and got used to the tiny pagoda's abilities.

Originally, Zhao Hai wanted to wait for the pagoda to make the first batch of undead before testing its defensive and offensive capabilities. But now it seems like that wouldn't be the case. Not knowing when the Divine Race would attack, Zhao Hai decided to do his tests right now. If he cannot fully make use of the pagoda, then that would definitely be a loss. It was more important than upgrading the undead.

The tiny pagoda's power was in the level of Demigod. But if Zhao Hai can utilize all of its strength, then he would be able to face 100

Demigods alone. Naturally, this required being familiar with the pagoda.

Using the pagoda will consume its energy, delaying the undead's promotion. However, Zhao Hai didn't care about it right now.

Two days later, Shun can finally make use of his Demigod level strength. At the same time, a large scale reinforcement from the Divine Realm just arrived at the Ark Continent. The war is ready to set off!

# Chapter 765 – Tactic Most Suited For The Space

---

Zhao Hai was currently looking at the Divine Race displayed in the monitor. This time, the Divine Race reinforcement were mainly infantry. This meant that the reinforcements were true members of the Divine Race.

Besides the infantry, there were also Summoners as well as a race that Zhao Hai hadn't seen before. There weren't anything strange about this race other than their height. They were about six meters tall, able to see eye to eye with any tall Beastman. Their bodies looked very strong as well, judging from what can be seen through their beast skin garments. Their weapon were huge wooden trunks, and engraved on these trunks was a pattern of a vine.

From their looks, one could say that they seem to be wild men. Zhao Hai didn't doubt these people's strength. Each one of them were God-rank, moreover, there were quite a lot of them, about a hundred thousand.

A hundred thousand might not look great in an army of ten million, but with their builds, a hundred thousand robust men looked very terrifying.

Laura and the others were also in the living room, looking at the Divine Race's reinforcements through the monitor. In total, the reinforcing army numbered about 20 million. Adding on to the previous army, the Divine Race now numbered at 30 million, the same number as the Ark Continent's entire military unit.

What kind of concept was a 30 million soldier army? In addition to the little slaves that cultivated, the Divine Race had now completely filled up the entire Radiant Empire.

Laura frowned and said, "It looks like the Divine Race is ready to march. Brother Hai, what can we do about this? They wouldn't be

so easy to stop.”

Zhao Hai nodded and said, “They truly are quite hard to deal with, but we need to do it regardless. Anyway, most of the Ark Continent’s army have already been promoted to 9th rank. They should be enough to make a dent on the Divine Race. To be honest, I’m not quite afraid of the Divine Race. Unlike with the Demons, I can make undead out of their dead soldiers. They wouldn’t blow themselves up so I should be able to replenish our forces.”

Laura nodded, then she said, “We should also give our army some magic beasts. This way, they would have more mobility in the battlefield.”

Zhao Hai agreed, “Alright, do that immediately. Later on, we can only battle in this way.”

Laura gave a nod before she, along with Lizzy and the others, made their move. They had already discussed this matter before. They would supply the armies of the continent with fast magic beasts in order to make use of the beasts’ mobility. As soon as the Divine Race attacks, the armies would continue on and harass them whenever possible using blood lightning beads. They wouldn’t make the Divine Race relax even for a little bit.

Zhao Hai’s methods turned out to be the same as what he repeatedly used in the past. Using guerilla warfare, they would continue to nibble at the Divine Race, making them unable to breathe properly.

This method was completely compatible with Zhao Hai. Because of the Space, Zhao Hai wasn’t afraid that the soldiers would be ambushed, so it was a relatively safe way for them.

Zhao Hai didn’t have the means to deal with the enemy right now since his side was still quite weak. Because of this, they can only resort to making the Divine Race stumble on every step they make.

Zhao Hai’s side sent large quantities of magic beasts to the

various armies in the continent. Since the Beastmen had their own mount, they didn't need to be provided with some. On the other hand, even if the Dwarves still had their iron armored beasts, those mounts can only be used to dig, so they were very unsuitable for mobility purposes.

The Elven race has been completely transformed as an aerial unit. Their blood hawks have become very good in coordination. The ones who mainly needed the mounts were the Human armies. On the other hand, the Fishmen had special bodies. Although they have become 9th ranks and can leave the water for a long time, they would still need some time to get used to it.

As the Divine Race army arrived at the continent, they went on and recuperated for a few days. In any case, they weren't in a hurry. In their opinion, the Ark Continent was already in their bag, so they went on their operation with leisure.

Zhao Hai took this time to complete the distribution of fast magic beasts. These magic beasts had already reached 9th rank, even the fastest pegasus mounts wouldn't be able to catch them.

After handing the magic beasts out, Zhao Hai immediately led the troops to the battlefield, which was the cities in the Buddha Empire. Zhao Hai had already prepared the materials for those who would be stationed there. And as soon as they leave the place, the Space would just reclaim them. The Space was Zhao Hai's ultimate weapon, it gave him the confidence to tussle with the Divine Race.

Actually, Zhao Hai didn't have much problems in using the Space. When it came to command, he was already leaving it to Lizzy and Megan. This would also provide them with more experience for later on.

But although Zhao Hai wasn't very good in commanding an army, he was still someone who had lived during the Information Era. Even if he wasn't a commander, he can still apply the tactics

that he had heard before, like the guerilla tactics. When he proposed this, Lizzy and Megan were actually shocked. They thought that this was the best way to combine tactics and the Space.

When he heard the reason for their surprise, Zhao Hai understood that he had been underestimating the Space. It would definitely be a waste if they didn't use the Space in their plans to chip away at the Divine Race. But since he didn't want to reveal the Space to the soldiers, he can only transport the troops from one point to another. But even with this, they can still attack the Divine Race momentarily before turning back.

Because they had planned a guerilla warfare, Zhao Hai wasn't too worried about the success or failure of a city. And since this was the case, Zhao Hai withdrew the magic cannons and then placed them inside his undead.

The corpses in Accra Mountain that were meant to be consumed had been transformed into undead by Zhao Hai. This was especially true for those with large bodies, they will become moving turrets, helping the mobile army in both attack and retreat.

Zhao Hai sent these moving turrets into the armies earlier so that they can get accustomed to using them in battle. More efficiency on their part would allow Zhao Hai to gain more undead.

Although the blood lightning beads were very strong, its targets would get vaporized once hit, leaving Zhao Hai with no bodies to turn into undead. Because of this, Zhao Hai was prepared to use these magic cannons along with the soldiers in order to gain more undead. At this point, the promoted 9th rank soldiers were extremely obedient towards Zhao Hai. They were very grateful for Zhao Hai for providing them with a way to improve their strength.

It can be said that if Zhao Hai commanded them to kill their monarchs, these soldiers would do it. In any case, the entire Ark

Continent was depending on Zhao Hai. At this point, the Kings were less important compared to him.

The other races might not have this sentiment, but their feeling of gratitude for Zhao Hai was still quite strong. These races might not listen to anyone, but they will completely obey Zhao Hai.

As the continent was completing its preparation, the Accra Mountain's defense line continued to be constructed. But at this time, the Demon Race's side also underwent some changes.

The Demons were continually listening for news regarding Zhao Hai and the Divine Race. Therefore, it would be impossible for the Demons to be unaware that the Divine Race reinforcements have come. Moreover, they also knew that the continent had started to move. With this information, how could the Demons just let go of this opportunity.

The Demons were very clear about the fighting strength of the continent. They also knew that Zhao Hai had provided 9th rank potions to the continent. They even managed to get a potion for themselves. Then they sent the potion off to be researched. However, they had no idea how hard would it be to study the spatial water.

The reason why the Demons were aware of all of these was because they had people inside the Ark Continent. One shouldn't forget about Engraved Ark. At present, none of them had been rooted out yet. Even if Zhao Hai has the Space, it would be impossible to catch all of them, especially at this hectic time.

Seeing the Demon Race's changes, Zhao Hai knew that the true war has come. Once the Divine Race made their move, the Demons would soon follow suit. If they don't, then they aren't the Demon Race.

In the face of this situation, Zhao Hai can only turn to the armies in the Buddha Empire. What they needed to do was stall the invaders for as long as possible.



The Divine Race didn't make Zhao Hai wait for long. Five days after their arrival, the Divine Race finally started to move. They gathered two battalions of mostly infantry and giants to head towards the city. On the other hand, the light and heavy cavalries became the second army and third army which directly went to the heart of the Buddha Empire. They thought that this army was enough, they were thinking that they were far superior to the Ark Continent's army. The infantry and giants would face Zhao Hai while the 2nd and 3rd armies would circumvent Upper Bank City in order to target the other cities further inside the empire. Once these cities were taken care of, they would go back and deal with Zhao Hai. Even if they allowed Zhao Hai to escape, at least they already held control of the Buddha Empire.

This plan was good. But unfortunately for them, they weren't aware that the Ark Continent's armies had already been promoted. Moreover, they had also changed their tactics, they weren't going to hold a city anymore!

# Chapter 766 – God of Thunder's Army

---

Thunder Yun was a famous general in the Divine Race. He was called the God of Thunder because first; he was a lightning element divergent ability user. Second, because he had a booming voice that was just like thunder. And third, because of his Thunder Army.

The God of Thunder's Army held fame in the Divine Race. Belonging to this army were the Giants. Just as Zhao Hai thought, the Divine Race had already conquered other planes. Some of the races in these planes were subdued, like the heavy cavalry, the winged pegasus cavalry, and the Giants.

The status of these people wasn't high in the Divine Realm. The heavy cavalry unit was treated just the same as those little green creatures that currently cultivated the Radiant Empire's land. The only difference between the two of them was that the green creatures were labor slaves while the heavy cavalry were battle slaves. Although the heavy cavalry held higher status than the green creatures, they still couldn't escape the title of being a slave.

There were divisions when it came to the status of the slaves. The heavy cavalry held lower status compared to the winged pegasus cavalry. And the winged pegasus cavalry held lower status than the Giants. And the status of the Giants was almost no less than the commoners among the Divine Race.

The Giants in Thunder Yun's army were called the Totem Division. They were a very powerful part of the army. Not only were their close combat capabilities strong, they can also use their totems to summon vines that would help them in battle. These vines were actually a kind of lightning element creature.

Thunder Yun has been fighting for the Divine Race for many years. With the God of Thunder's Army in his hands, he had won many victories for the Divine Race, gaining awe and popularity in

the Divine Race. He was even awarded a plane as his territory. This plane was where the Giants resided in. He directly named this plane as the God of Thunder's Plane. The original name of the plane was Lightning Continent, precisely because of the lightning element creatures.

Thunder Yun was over 400 years old, a not so old age for a Divine Race person. If compared to a Human, he would be just like a middle-aged man. He silver hair on his head. However, the hair was quite strange. It looks just like Thunder Yun was hit by electricity, the hairs were standing up, and even looked a little burnt.

He also had a full silvery-white beard. He also had silver white armor as well as a silver-white weapon and silver white horse. His horse was not the same as a common one. This horse was just like the horned pegasus, but without wings. Also, the horn on its head would constantly flash with lightning. It was evident that it was a lightning element beast.

Although Thunder Yun didn't think too much about the Ark Continent, his many years of experience allowed him a habit of collecting information. So when he arrived at the Ark Continent, he immediately asked Cloud Ying and Silver Shuke about the plane as well as Zhao Hai.

In the past, the Radiant Church had amassed information from Zhao Hai. But naturally, all of that was useless right now. When the Divine Race clashed with Zhao Hai, they discovered that Zhao Hai's strength was better than what they imagined. The only trusted information that they had right now was from the two battles. Although some of them were useless and there were only a few good points, Thunder Yun was still able to get an idea about how strong Zhao Hai was.

When Thunder Yun saw the estimation of Zhao Hai's strength, he couldn't help but be surprised. He didn't think that Zhao Hai would be this strong. He managed to repel their advance twice,

without losing too much on his side.

Although this made Thunder Yun look down on Cloud Ying and Silver Shuke, this also allowed him to pay close attention to Zhao Hai. He knew about the strength of Cloud Ying and Silver Shuke's armies. Silver Shuke was assigned to be the vanguard, this alone explains how much trust the Divine Race had on him. On the other hand, Silver Shuke's regiment was able to summon the Deity. In addition to the light and heavy cavalries, the two armies couldn't just be underestimated.

For these two regiments to be driven away by Zhao Hai was in itself proof of how strong Zhao Hai was. Because of this, Thunder Yun became alert towards Zhao Hai, despite his inner belief that the two regiments should be able to take the city on their own.

Thunder Yun was currently sitting on his magic beast. On his side was someone who held his weapon for him. This person was quite tall and big, about four meters tall. Beside carrying Thunder Yun's weapon, he also had his own wooden trunk. This person was the leader of the Totem Division of Thunder Yun's army.

Although this person wasn't as big as the other Giants, he was actually a Highgod. With his two feet, he was innately fast. Now that he had become God-rank, he was unnaturally quick, he can even catch up with Thunder Yun who was on top of his mount. Because of this, Thunder Yun decided to have him as his own personal guard.

Thunder Yun was moderately advancing. In his front was his army, along with the Giant's Totem Division.

One could say that the Totem Division was Thunder Yun's most trusted men. This was because in addition to having them in his army, they were also residents of his own plane, whose families were very loyal to him. Moreover, their fighting strength was great. They were totally unafraid of war and were the most obedient troops.

In multiple wars, the Totem Division had secured him victories just by smashing through the enemy's army. Because of this, inside the God of Thunder's army, the Giants actually held greater status than the Divine Race.

Thunder Yun, who was going forward, suddenly muttered, "It has been a long time since we had met an interesting opponent. Fei'er, how do you think Zhao Hai would deal with us?"

Fei'er was the Giant that stood next to him. Although this person looked stupid, his head wasn't like that at all. He was Thunder Yun's most trusted man, he would confidently discuss everything with this giant.

# Chapter 767 – Engagement

---

Aiken was a Ten Thousand-man commander for the Rosen Empire. His former post was the commander for Rosen Empire's elite heavy armor infantry. It was said that although he was just a Ten Thousand-man commander, his status wasn't any lower than a local regiment army commander.

In the Rosen Empire, a local regiment commander generally commanded a hundred thousand to a hundred fifty thousand troops. For a ten thousand-man commander to be placed in the same status as a regiment commander was saying something.

Presently, Aiken was 40 years old. He was an 8th rank expert before but had just recently become 9th rank. His promotion was something that Zhao Hai gave him.

Aiken was in admiration towards Zhao Hai. In a short time, he managed to turn the Buda Clan into one of the most powerful families in the continent. That in itself was great, but he also married several beautiful women with powerful backgrounds, eliciting envy from people all over the continent.

And most of all, what made him very famous was his fighting strength. He was too strong, not only was he able to extinguish the Dragons, he even blocked the advance of the Demons and the Divine Race.

Aiken was one of the first people to be sent over here. Because of this, he was clear about the strength of the Divine Race. Seeing Zhao Hai drive them away was something that Aiken would never forget. Adding the fact that he was made 9th rank because of him, Aiken's gratitude for Zhao Hai was something that only he could describe.

Zhao Hai's plan had already been told to Aiken. Since Zhao Hai gave them horse-type magic beasts, they took off their heavy armor and donned light armor in exchange. The weapon that they

held weren't their heavy shields, but javelins instead. These javelins looked simple, just wooden poles that were sharpened.

However, Aiken knew not to underestimate the javelins. This was because he was aware that although they looked simple, these javelins were actually holding blood lightning beads.

But Aiken wasn't thinking about this right now as his hand touched the small bag on his waist from time to time. Those who followed him were looking over with an envious gaze at the little leather bag, as if it was a rare treasure.

It can be said that the bag was indeed a treasure, it was a spatial bag. It was one of the smaller bags, only having ten or so cubic meters of space inside. What made it important was the thing inside it, a messenger fish.

Zhao Hai already had a lot of messenger fishes inside the Space. Therefore, he put them in good use and gave the leaders of each army group one. Ten thousand man commanders like Aiken would lead his army to harass the Divine Race, and in his group, only he obtained a messenger fish.

And although Aiken's group were already 9th ranks, their flight speed wasn't that quick. This was supplemented by Zhao Hai providing them with magic beasts. This magic beast wasn't acquired from the Ark Continent, it was actually something bought from the Space's shop, a Ferghana Horse.

Ferghana horses were animals from Earth. It was one of the most expensive ones not only because of their speed, but also their great endurance.

However, these ferghana horses were clearly different compared from those back on earth. These horses were now 9th ranks, so they were able to fly. Moreover, they still kept their speed and endurance. They were very well suited to be mounts, especially for a cavalry unit that needed to be quick.

The place that Aiken's group were currently in wasn't far from the Radiant Empire's border. However, they were unable to see the Divine Race's army. After all, if they can spot the Divine Race, the Divine Race can spot them as well.

However, they would still send some squads to monitor the Divine Race Army. This wouldn't cause any problems with the Divine Race since they were already aware that Zhao Hai would send people to monitor their movements. If he did not, then it might even arouse their suspicion.

Aiken's group had very excited expressions right now, they knew that they would be the first batch to face the Divine Race. For them, this was the greatest honor, this meant that they had Zhao Hai's trust.

Aiken was a great military leader, otherwise he wouldn't have become the commander of an elite heavy infantry unit. His family didn't have a deep background, they were just an average middle grade noble family.

He relied on his military exploits in order to climb the ranks and end up where he was right now. Because of this, he was someone who was unafraid of war. Conversely, he liked going to war, only through battles could he gain more military merit.

Aiken touched the spatial bag once more, muttering, "Will it be soon?"

The guard at his side, upon hearing Aiken, calmly said, "Sir, it should be quite soon. Mister said it, so we should trust him."

And just as the guard finished talking, Aiken's two eyes shined. Then he took his spatial bag and took out the glass bottle inside. Soon after that, Zhao Hai's voice came, "Aiken, go towards the left front. If you see any Divine Race troops, attack them then immediately retreat."

Aiken quickly responded, "Yes, sir. We will head out



immediately.”

Then Zhao Hai’s voice replied, “Be careful and don’t go too near. Killing the other party isn’t important, I want all of you back alive.” Aiken gave a sound of affirmation, then he placed the messenger fish back into the bag.

After putting the messenger fish away, Aiken turned to his men and said loudly, “Brothers, Mister Zhao Hai has ordered us to attack. We have 12 javelins, so when we meet the Divine Race, we will throw them out in the shortest time possible before we withdraw. Don’t hesitate and remember Mister’s instructions.”

The men gave a loud shout. In the eyes these frontline soldiers, Zhao Hai was a supreme existence. As long as Zhao Hai gave word, they will surely respond.

Then Aiken held his hand out as a banner was passed on to him. Embroidered on this flag was an ox, the symbol of Aiken’s troop.

Aiken looked at the banner and lifted it as he said, “Mount your horses, then we go forward!” Although they were heavy infantry, they were still used to riding horses. In the Ark Continent, there were many homes which had lower level magic beasts. These can be used to haul goods or plow the lands. And since Aiken himself was a nobleman, it would be impossible for him to be unable to ride a horse. After all, it was a compulsory lesson for nobles like him.

The others were similar as well. Some of them even came from military cavalry families. The reason they joined the heavy armor infantry was because they were deemed to be the elite forces of the Rosen Empire, their salary was the best. Therefore, any outstanding soldier would sign up for the heavy infantry division.

For this reason, Zhao Hai didn’t worry too much when he gave them their mounts. These people were already decent cavalry units without any need for training.

Aiken's group got ready very fast. It didn't take too long before the four hooves of the ferghana horses started to flutter. They seemed to be running on clouds, but this was just an illusion caused by how fast they were going. Soon, they were able to see the Divine Race army.

This Divine Race army had about 20 million troops in it. It can be said that their presence managed to blot out the sky. Compared to the 20 million, Aiken's ten thousand troops looked utterly significant. Anyone weak willed would see their legs give out after facing such a display.

However, Aiken and the others were unafraid. In the past, Zhao Hai used tens of millions of undead to face the Divine Race army, they were already used to the scales of the current war.

The Divine Race also saw the approaching troop. Almost immediately, a similarly numbered troop went out of their formation in order to meet Aiken's cavalry. After seeing the approaching enemy, Aiken's eyes shone bright as he bellowed, "Prepare!" Then he took out two javelins from the leather bag by his side. The others did the same.

They didn't stop going forward, seemingly intent on facing the ten thousand troops of the Divine Race. The Divine Race troops were all infantry, one can clearly see that they weren't weak.

As these people went toward Aiken's troop, they also adjusted their formation accordingly. They spread out and when they were a kilometer away they immediately established their Domain.

Although they were just ordinary God-rank experts, this display was already extraordinary. There were almost no Demigods among the Divine Race army. With how much they fight, it would only take a short time before they comprehend a Domain after reaching God-rank. After all, their Divine Race Demigods either comprehend a Domain or die in the battlefield.

Aiken already knew about Domains, but he still didn't retreat.

Instead, they went forward faster. As they quickly approach, the properties of the Domains started to show up. Seeing the spear shaped Domains, Aiken said, “Beware of long ranged attacks!” But even if he said that, they still didn’t stop and rushed forward with the same tenacity.

The distance between the two got closer and closer. When they were about 200 meters away, the Divine Race army suddenly released 10 thousand spear attacks towards Aiken’s group.

After feeling the might of the enemy’s approaching attack, Aiken immediately shouted, “First volley, fire!”

Then he switched to his other hand and said, “Second volley, fire!”

Two rounds of javelins, twenty thousand in total, darkened the skies as they flew towards the Divine Race’s ten thousand man army.

## Chapter 768 – Wave After Wave

---

However, these two volleys didn't hit the Divine Race, instead, they clashed with the spear attacks that the Divine Race sent out. Upon hitting the spears, an explosion suddenly happened as both spear and javelin disappeared in mid air.

Aiken didn't stop there, upon seeing this, he immediately commanded, "Shoot all ten javelins!" Then he swung his arms continuously as he threw javelin upon javelin towards the opposing army.

After emptying their ammo, Aiken commanded, "Retreat!" Then without any hesitation, he turned his horse around and escaped.

On the other hand, upon releasing their first attack, the Divine Race thought that they would get into close combat with Aiken's troop. They had already seen that Aiken and the others were only 9th rank, therefore, their attack shouldn't have been able to penetrate their Domain.

But they didn't expect that Aiken's side would only throw two javelins each in order to eliminate the attack that the Divine Race had sent out. Then just as the Divine Race were stunned, Aiken's next attacks came in. A wave of ten consecutive volleys were currently facing the Divine Race.

The Divine Race was already aware that the Ark Continent would use blood lightning beads. Because of this, they quickly established their Domains in order to defend themselves. However, they weren't expecting that the attack of the enemies would be this severe.

As they stared, the ten waves of javelins exploded. The first five waves eradicated their Domains, the latter five were for the Divine Race to take.

One must say that the region taken up by 10 thousand Domains

weren't small. If average people were to throw the javelins, it would be impossible for them to even touch the Divine Race.

However, one shouldn't forget that Aiken and the others were 9th rank experts. 9th ranks used to be the strongest people in the Ark Continent. The javelins that they threw out could easily reach 1 kilometer away. Even if the Divine Race were God-ranked, they still wouldn't be able to quickly dodge the javelins given how close the two parties were.

Both sides were 200 meters apart and had attacked virtually the same time. It can be said that when the attacks happened, both were already quite close. Fortunately, Aiken's horses were very agile and were able to turn corners immediately, conveniently dodging the attacks from the Divine Race.

When the Divine Race reacted, and sent people to pursue Aiken's troops, they were already too late to catch up.

Thunder Yun didn't care too much about small engagements like these. In his opinion, a ten thousand man troop was pretty insignificant in front of a twenty million man army. Let alone those troops being 9th ranks, he can just send out an army to swiftly kill them.

However, he didn't think that this underestimation would make him suffer a loss. Of the ten thousand people he had sent out, nobody came back. Moreover, none of them were critically injured, not even corpses remained. All of them were directly vaporized by the blood lightning beads.

Thunder Yun looked at where Aiken clashed with the ten thousand Divine Race infantry. He couldn't help but say, "Fei'er, send an order out. Tell them to make use of ranged attacks whenever they come in contact with the people from the Ark Continent. Don't make them go too near."

Fei'er nodded then relayed the orders. The faces of the Divine Race wasn't too good. They had just left the Radiant Empire in a

great mood, but they had already lost ten thousand people. It can be said that losing people this early wasn't a good sign.

At this moment, on the Divine Race's right side, another cavalry unit from the Ark Continent came out. This unit did the same, they were riding the same horses and had brought javelins. However, these people had received orders from Zhao Hai to fire at a safe distance before retreating immediately.

Zhao Hai was aware that although Domains can attack at a long distance, it was impossible for it to reach one kilometer. On the other hand, 9th ranks can confidently throw javelins at this distance. Because of this, after seeing that Aiken had caused severe losses, he instructed the others to take it easy and attack at a safe range.

This tactic was just like how mounted archers fought against infantry in the battlefield. They would pepper you with arrows in the distance and retreating when you decide to chase them.

The Divine Race rarely encountered such a thing. In the past, when the Divine Race conquers a plane, they would just saturate the place with experts, overwhelming the local residence with strength.

This would be even easier if the invaded plane didn't have any God ranks. Without any way to resist the Divine Race, the plane would fall quite soon.

Before the Ark Continent, the Divine Race's hardest conquest was in God of Thunder's plane. To conquer the plane, the Divine Race had to expend a lot of resources. This was because there were a lot of God ranks in that plane. Moreover, their subordinates were also quite numerous. But even with this, they still managed to take control of the plane, despite the losses of several million lives.

That was the most dangerous situation the Divine Race had faced. But even then, they hadn't experienced the same methods that Zhao Hai used.

It was obvious that the Ark Continent didn't have any God-rank divisions. One can say that there were only very few God ranks among the Ark Continent's residents. But the strange thing was, despite having low amounts of God ranks, the continent was still able to produce blood lightning beads in a quantity enough to threaten the Divine Race's God ranks.

Although there were a lot of God ranks among the Divine Race, it would still be impossible for them to have an endless supply of blood lightning beads like the Ark Continent. In fact, blood lightning beads weren't conventional weapons in the Divine Realm. This was because the method of making these beads was very troublesome. If a God rank made one, the damage on their vitality would be enormous. Because of this, it would be impossible for the Divine Race to use blood lightning beads the same way as Zhao Hai had.

But nobody could blame the Divine Race, even they wouldn't have expected Zhao Hai to have an ultimate weapon such as the Space. It can be said that the blood lightning beads were just an amalgamation of two energies, of which the Space had unlimited amounts of. Zhao Hai already had the Blood Pond for the blood of a God rank expert, at the same time, he also had the Dao lotus to provide the lightning element. These two allowed the Ark Continent to have an endless amount of blood lightning beads, making them a standard weapon for the Ark Continent.

After the cavalry unleashed their 12 javelins, they immediately retreated. Even if the Divine Race wanted to chase after them, they were still unable to do so. This time, the Divine Race lost 1000 men. This amount was still insignificant compared to the 20 million that were currently here.

However, Thunder Yun didn't feel good about it. The current situation made him frown, the other party was starting to prove to be a headache.

While Thunder Yun was thinking, another wave of attack came

in. It was still the same javelin attack from a different cavalry unit. They were also firing from afar before retreating. They provided zero chance for a direct confrontation.

The brows of Thunder Yun crunched up, he turned to Fei'er and said, "Fei'er, transmit these orders. Have the quickest long ranged attackers stationed out front. Once the enemy comes, immediately attack them. We can't have these cavalry units continuously chip at our troops."

Fei'er nodded, then relayed the orders to the army. Before long, a disturbance happened in the army. The soldiers made way as groups of people bearing bows and arrows came forward. Not only were their attacks far reaching, they were also quick in moving around.

Just as the changes in the Divine Race's troops finished, the fourth wave of cavalry came in. Seeing them approaching, the Divine Race's archers immediately established their bow and arrow Domain. Naturally, they wanted to have the initiative and fire attacks towards the Ark Continent's cavalry.

However, the Ark Continent's cavalry unit weren't fools. After seeing the Divine Race's actions, they immediately turned around and ran, abandoning their plan to attack.

The archer units tried to pursue, but they just weren't fast enough. When they came back, the same cavalry unit went forward. This caused the archer unit to attack once more, only to find that they really couldn't catch up.

This exchanged happened several times. Finally, the archer troop soldiers became enraged. This time, after seeing the enemy retreat, they didn't return to their army. Instead, they went forward and went all out in pursuing the enemy.

Thunder Yun also saw the actions of the cavalry unit, he was quite enraged as well. The Ark Continent's actions were just too insulting. It was quite obvious that they weren't intending on



fighting full on combat. They seem to be intent on chipping away at the Divine Race Army.

Because of these actions, the archer troop couldn't help but pursue. Thunder Yun didn't prevent them. He wanted to see where these cavalry units retreat to.

However, Thunder Yun was quick to regret his decision. Not long after the archer troop decided to pursue, they were suddenly surrounded by huge undead. Although they were huge and skeletal, the undead were fairly quick as well. They didn't follow the cavalry units, instead, they faced the archer troop. This made the archers stop, then they formed their formations, ready to meet the enemy's attack. But at this time, a drastic event happened.

# Chapter 769 – Completely Empty

---

Just as the Divine Race was done with their formation, the undead opened their mouths as a sudden burst of blue and red rays came out. These rays were shot directly into the formation of the Divine Race. Upon getting hit, the archers couldn't help but be scrunched up with each other. One by one, dead bodies started to fall down. But something strange happened, those dead bodies disappeared as they fell down. Before long, the archer troops were being one sidedly slaughtered .

Thunder Yun quietly looked at the battle. The Ark Continent's move was done beautifully. The ambush was not too far nor was it too close. It was just at the point that the Divine Race was able to see them but not too close for them to catch up. The action was just like a demonstration of the continent's methods.

Thunder Yun was actually not enraged, he just calmly looked at what happened. To be honest, after the succeeding attacks, Thunder Yun understood what the Ark Continent was doing. They probably wanted to delay their advance as much as possible, thus the constant small attacks on the Divine Race army.

In his past wars, Thunder Yun had also encountered similar situations. But the lethality of the Ark Continent far surpassed those in the past. The attacks of the Ark Continent's residents can actually cause casualties numbering from a hundred to over a thousand.

These scattered attacks might not look eye-catching. But it was actually a huge blow to the power and efficiency of the Divine Race army.

Thunder Yun might be calm, but his internal thoughts weren't. The Ark Continent's poking was truly different than the ones he encountered before. Although they were only attacked four times, they had already lost more than 10 thousand people. This might

look small, but in the long run, this number would continually increase.

Moreover, those attacking them made Thunder Yun worry. Most importantly, Thunder Yun and the others weren't actually aware of the true strength of the Ark Continent. There were two points of interest in what Thunder Yun just witnessed.

First was their mounts. Thunder Yun was a veteran in the battlefield, so he was clear about how strong 9th ranks were. It would be impossible for 9th rank experts to be that quick. The only explanation was their mount. Moreover, it seems like these mounts were something that had never been seen in the Ark Continent before.

The second were their cannons. Thunder Yun had already heard about the continent's magic cannons. At that time, he didn't really take it to heart. He knew how strong the magic cannons could be. Not to mention, the magic cannons of the Divine Race, even if they were meticulously made, were still quite weak in Thunder Yun's eyes. Because of this, he really didn't think too much about them.

But in this war, Thunder Yun's knowledge had actually been overturned. He didn't think that a common magic cannon in the Ark Continent would have this much might. This actually made him surprised.

Thunder Yun cannot just leave his people be slaughtered in front of him. He immediately sent people out to assist. But when they arrived at the site, the cavalry and undead had already retreated. Nobody was left.

Thunder Yun wasn't very happy with this battle. He had just sent out 10 thousand troops, but when they returned, only about four thousand returned. This meant that the people of the Ark Continent had killed more than 5,000 people. This casualty wasn't very small.

Thunder Yun frowned as he massaged his head. If they couldn't

deal with these attacks, then the 20 million man army wouldn't be able to survive. They haven't even gone far into the Buddha Empire, but they already lost 20 thousand people. Although it wasn't relatively significant compared to the 20 million, one shouldn't forget that all of these losses were incurred in just one day.

After some time, Thunder Yun turned to Fei'er and said, "Fei'er, what do you think we need to do?"

Fei'er's deep voice answered, "Master, we truly haven't encountered this situation before. Although the Ark Continent's people have powerful weapons, this is the extent of what they can do."

Thunder Yun smiled and said, "Good. Give the order to march. If they want to play around, then we'll just hammer on. Swiftly take their homes. And once they decide to go all out, we'll wipe them out in one go."

Fei'er nodded and then spread the order as the army sped up their advance. However, it was a pity that their advance couldn't become so fast. After all, this was a 20 million man army. If they wanted to speed up, it would be very hard for them to keep their formation.

If they want to maintain their formation, then they would have to carefully advance. But if they don't, they will become separated groups, making it easy for the Ark Continent's forces to poke them.

This was hard to deal with, and Thunder Yun knew that there was no solution. He only hoped then they would find the Ark Continent's camp soon, then they would take their revenge.

The Radiant Empire wasn't very far from Upper Bank City. If one were to fly fast, they would reach it in half a day. However, since Thunder Yun's army was advancing, their march was slow. When they came to the city, it was already the afternoon two days later.

Thunder Yun knew that they cannot camp outside for too long. They weren't in the Radiant Empire, where there were magic cannons protecting them. Here, in the Buddha Empire, they had nothing in terms of defense. If they decide to make camp, they would certainly be under attack by the Ark Continent's cavalry units, and their casualties would only increase.

Because of this, they needed to reach Upper Bank city as soon as possible. When the army saw the city, their advance became quicker, they wanted to be behind the walls of a city as soon as possible.

However, Upper Bank city actually gave them a scare. Nobody was actually in it, it was completely empty, not even one mouse can be seen.

When Thunder Yun saw this, his expression couldn't help but sink. He was already aware of Zhao Hai's plan. Zhao Hai wanted to use the entire Buddha Empire to hamper the advancing armies in every step they take. From the moment they left up until now, the Divine Race army had already suffered 24 different attacks from the Ark Continent's cavalry units. By now, the Divine Race's losses has reached more than 30 thousand.

They had already lost 30 thousand troops but they were yet to touch even the hair of the enemy. This fact made Thunder Yun's face ugly. Originally, he thought that the enemy would be in Upper Bank City and would fight with them when the army arrive. This way, the Divine Race would be able to let out a breath of relief.

Who would've thought that the enemy would never give them the opportunity to blow off steam. Thunder Yun looked at the empty city and breathed out a cold air. Just by seeing how swift the other party was, Thunder Yun could understand that they were formidable enemies.

Naturally, the Divine Race also had divine sense. Thunder Yun had repeatedly scanned the surrounding area, looking for

something. Not only was the layout of the city good, even the area outside had criss crossing tunnels. This showed how important Zhao Hai regarded this city.

However, as soon as the Divine Race army came, they actually abandoned it. Such a move was something that ordinary people wouldn't be able to do.

Actually, Thunder Yun was misinformed about the situation with the Ark Continent's commoners. Except for the army, there were no commoners left in the Buddha Empire. This way, Zhao Hai had more flexibility in making his plans, just like abandoning a city. Since there were no civilians inside, then why would he go and defend it?

Thunder Yun didn't know about this, so he was quite surprised when he saw the empty city. But after his initial surprise, his expression turned ugly. He knew that if he cannot eradicate the enemy camp, the sneak attacks wouldn't stop. Whether it be day or night, the army wouldn't have a single moment of peace.

Everyone looked at the city and didn't know what to do next. All of them were very eager to rush into the city and kill all those cavalry units that were poking them. However, they found nobody, increasing the frustration that they currently felt.

After looking at the state of the city, Thunder Yun said with clenched teeth, "Enter the city and take a rest. Tomorrow we'll charge through to the Ark Continent. I don't believe those cavalry units would abandon the entire Buddha Empire. Also, arrange for night guards and patrols."

Those who heard him gave a nod before arranging everything. However, the people that Thunder Yun had brought over were too many, they simply were unable to fit inside the city. Because of this, some of them can only stay outside. They made some houses with earth element magic and settled inside.

What made the Divine Race feel strange was the fact that since

they entered the city, the attacks actually stopped.

But since the prior attacks gave them a headache, they still chose to continue being on alert. The army had sent forth 1 million troops in order to patrol the surrounding areas.

Bit by bit, the skies turned dark. Most of the Divine Race soldiers had already taken their rest. Although it wouldn't be a problem for them to stay awake for several days, Thunder Yun was also aware of the effects towards their performance if they didn't rest. When facing a sly enemy like the Ark Continent's people, the Divine Race army would need as much rest as possible. Otherwise, they would just be courting death and humiliation.

# Chapter 770 – Zhao Wen Returns

---

Although it was already dark, the Divine Race were yet to experience an attack. However, Thunder Yun's heart was still restless. He didn't believe that the enemy would just do nothing. Seeing how they acted, it would be foolish for them to let go of this opportunity.

However, it was already dark, and the alarms outside were yet to sound out. Nothing came. What was the enemy doing?

If Zhao Hai was still harassing Thunder Yun's army during the day, then Thunder Yun might not have been worried. After all, there was nothing notable about Zhao Hai's tactics.

Now that Zhao Hai stopped, Thunder Yun couldn't help but worry. Not understanding what the other party would do, plunging yourself in doubt was something that was dangerous to do.

Then suddenly, Thunder Yun became startled, he could hear a faint humming sound. In this silent night, the noise was quite distinct. Thunder Yun sat upright and concentrated on his ears. From what he can deduce, it was a sound of a mosquito. Mosquitoes, in majority of planes that he'd been in, were not very terrifying creatures, one could just kill them without even thinking about it. After being certain that it was a mosquito, Thunder Yun stopped caring about it and just continued sleeping.

However, this humming noise got louder and louder. Thunder Yun couldn't help but sit still once more. He stood and loudly shouted, "Fei'er, what's going on? Why are there so many mosquitoes in this city. Go and take a look."

Fei'er, who was resting just outside Thunder Yun's room, immediately stood up upon hearing his superior. Then he promptly went outside to take a look.



And just as Fei'er opened the door, he couldn't help but breath in cold air. He was a God rank expert, but this was the first time that he witnessed the current situation.

In the skies above the city were large clumps of dark clouds. These groups of clouds were massive. Moreover, their shapes kept changing. What made him surprised was the fact that the sounds of humming were actually coming from these clouds.

Fei'er's body immediately flew up towards the dark clouds. But when he was a hundred meters away, he stopped. He felt the hairs on his back stand up, the dark clouds were actually groups of mosquitoes, countless amounts of mosquitoes.

This was the first time that Fei'er had seen this many mosquitoes. And the most fearful thing about these mosquitoes was their size, they were too big. Each of these mosquitoes were the size of a human palm. Their bloody red color made those looking at them feel numb.

Most important of all, Fei'er recognized these mosquitoes. They were blood devouring mosquitoes, Divine Realm's blood devouring mosquitoes. Even in the Divine Realm, these mosquitoes were fearful creatures. Naturally, a couple of mosquitoes weren't a threat. But large clumps of them were a definite disaster in the Divine Realm.

Fei'er slowly retreated, afraid that he would agitate the mosquitoes. Because he was too scared of the mosquitoes, Fei'er wasn't able to spot the spatial rift right in the middle of the clumps. The blood devouring mosquitoes were going out of this spatial rift in large quantities, further increasing the dark clumps in the skies.

When Fei'er was about a kilometer away from the mosquitoes, he immediately flew towards the city lord's mansion. Thunder Yun was currently using the mansion as his personal quarters.

Thunder Yun was already up by now, standing outside looking at

the sky. His face was drained of color as Fei'er gave his report, "Master, its the disaster mosquitoes. Everyone, wake up! Dangerous mosquitoes are coming!"

After hearing the two words, disaster mosquito, Thunder Yun's face paled. He immediately turned to the sentries and bellowed, "Sound the alarm, quick!" Fei'er and the others immediately went towards the walls where the alarms were and sounded it with anxiety.

Dang, dang, dang. The sound permeated all throughout the Divine Race army. The soldiers immediately woke up and wore their armors as they went out of their residences. At this time, light mages simultaneously illuminated the skies of the city.

It didn't take long before the army witnessed the large clump of blood devouring mosquitoes. All of the blood on their faces quickly receded.

Blood devouring mosquitoes were completely troublesome magic beasts in the Divine Realm. They didn't expect that they would see these creatures in the Ark Continent, they couldn't help but get scared.

At this moment, as though under command, the clump of blood devouring mosquitoes dispersed. Then all of the mosquitoes started to flood the city and its surroundings. The Divine Race couldn't help but change their expressions upon seeing the incoming attack. They immediately established their Domains, hoping to block the attack of the blood devouring mosquitoes.

However, there were just too many mosquitoes, nobody can estimate how much. Just as the first wave were eliminated, the second wave replaced them and continued the attack.

These blood devouring mosquitoes seem to target certain people. There were some who only had few mosquitoes going after them while some were completely flooded. After some time, the overwhelmed soldiers found their Domains slowly crumbling.

As large amounts of mosquitoes hammer the Domains, the Divine Race soldiers couldn't help but go pale. They immediately sent more energy to their Domains. They knew that once their Domains crumbled, the only fate waiting for them would be death!

Thunder Yun's expression was quite ugly after seeing the mosquitoes. This quantity of blood devouring mosquitoes couldn't be seen even in the Divine Realm. If these were to appear there, then they would surely be classified as a disaster.

Whether inside the city or outside, everybody was doing their best to kill the mosquitoes. The war between insect and people continued to wage on.

At this time, Zhao Hai was calmly sitting inside the Space while spectating the situation. Naturally, these mosquitoes were released by him. He had actually forgotten about the Space's mosquitoes. Only when Zhao Wen returned after reaching God rank did Zhao Hai remember.

Actually, Zhao Hai didn't expect Zhao Wen to get promoted this early. She was one of the bottom in terms of power among the carrions swamp's beasts. The other 9th rank beasts have been cultivating for much longer than she did.

When Cai'er informed him that Zhao Wen had become 9th rank, Zhao Hai couldn't help but be surprised.

As Zhao Hai summoned Zhao Wen back to the Space, he saw that nothing changed too much from Zhao Wen's appearance. However, her strength had indeed reached God rank. This made Zhao Hai puzzled, as for Zhao Wen, she also said that she wasn't very clear about it.

In the end, Zhao Hai reckoned that it might be because of the drop of blood that Zhao Wen drank. In the past, he deduced that the blood that Zhao Wen had drank might have come from the Divine Race. And since the blood contained great energy, Zhao Wen managed to reach 9th rank.

At the same time, upon taking Zhao Wen into the Space, she also gained benefits from its environment. Zhao Wen was the one who stayed in the Space the longest among the carrion swamp's magic beasts.

With the Space's environment and the blood of a God rank expert, not only could Zhao Wen reach 9th rank, she would only need time in order to get promoted to God rank.

Among the magic beasts of the carrion swamp, Zhao Wen was the closest one to Zhao Hai. She didn't want to leave the Space, but for Zhao Hai, she decided to settle her heart and leave along with the other beasts. She wanted to return to Zhao Hai's side as soon as possible. She wasn't stupid, and she knew that as long as one becomes God rank, they would be able to go and stay by Zhao Hai. Therefore, she eagerly cultivated outside. Because of her persistence, she succeeded and became the first God rank among the magic beasts in the Carrion Swamp.

Sure enough, as soon as she broke through God rank, Cai'er immediately invited her back to the Space. If others were to be promoted, they might not have been able to do this. However, Zhao Wen wasn't the same as the others, because of her relationship with Zhao Hai, she was immediately picked up and sent to the Space.

As Zhao Wen came back, Zhao Hai suddenly remembered a weapon that he had not used, the blood devouring mosquitoes. The Space can release an uncountable amount of them, it was a pity that they haven't been used lately.

In the past, Zhao Hai was not able to use the blood devouring mosquitoes because he was fighting with the people in the Ark Continent. There really wasn't any need, the undead were enough. After using them in the Prairie, the blood devouring mosquitoes haven't been used later on.

However, they were now fighting the Divine Race, and the

undead were proving to be insufficient against them. So when Zhao Hai saw Zhao Wen he immediately thought about the blood devouring mosquitoes. But he didn't immediately make a move, he waited until night before launching an attack.

Zhao Hai was also unaware about how much mosquitoes he had sent out. He just knew that they were several times more than the Divine Race army. These blood devouring mosquitoes weren't high ranked, and their attacks were weak. So even if they outnumber the Divine Race, they were still unable to completely wipe them out.

However, what confused Zhao Hai was the fact that when he released the blood devouring mosquitoes, the Divine Race actually identified them.

In Zhao Hai's mind, the Divine Race shouldn't be familiar with these mosquitoes. But after seeing their expressions, it seems like they were quite afraid of them.

# Chapter 771 – Blood Devouring Mosquitoes

## Levels Up

---

Zhao Wen was currently lying on Zhao Hai's head, her small eyes looking at the monitor. Her body had changed after becoming God rank, her skin were now like crystals. As long as she lied motionless, it wouldn't be strange if one were to assume that she was just a sculpture.

As Zhao Hai looked at the nervous Divine Race soldiers, he asked, "Little Wen, why are these soldiers very afraid of the blood devouring mosquitoes? Does you family have any connection to the Divine Realm?"

Zhao Wen shook her head and said, "Young Master, I had been in the Ark Continent the moment I was born. I don't know anything about the Divine Realm."

Zhao Hai nodded and said, "The attacks of the blood devouring mosquitoes aren't that weak, but most of the Divine Race soldiers should be able to endure. At the same time, the mosquitoes would disappear after getting killed 30 times. It seems like they won't be a huge threat to the Divine Race."

Zhao Hai also learned just recently that there are also other ways to control the pests or mosquitoes aside from giving them a timed life. In this case, in future battles, the same mosquitoes will proceed to attack again and again until they are killed 30 times. The pests would be the same as well.

However, it was already astonishing. Thirty times, if each mosquito needed to be killed 30 times, what would that mean if there were 10 thousand? Ten thousand mosquitoes needed to be killed 300 thousand times. Then how about 100 thousand? A million? And the amount that Zhao Hai released today far surpassed a million. Remember, the Divine Race army numbered 20 million. If 20 million faced 1 million mosquitoes, then would

they be afraid? No, Zhao Hai released more than 20 million blood devouring mosquitoes.

At this point, the blood devouring mosquitoes were flooding the skies in and around Upper Bank City. The Divine Race soldiers were also starting to get tired of keeping the mosquitoes off. Although nobody has yet to be injured, the mosquitoes were starting to get on their nerves.

Zhao Hai wasn't idling right now. He was still in the Space ready to unleash another round of mosquitoes. After the current batch gets eliminated, he will release another.

Fantastic, Zhao Hai thought. He could only release mosquitoes once a Day. After using them, he wouldn't be able to do so for another 24 hours. Moreover, the time to produce mosquitoes would only happen for six hours. Therefore, the attack can only happen before the daylight comes.

Although there were many limitations, Zhao Hai still thought that the mosquitoes were powerful weapons. Zhao Hai didn't know how many mosquitoes the Space can release in six hours, but he knew that it would be very astonishing. During that time, the Divine Race would be in constant headache while dealing with the unending stream of blood devouring mosquitoes.

At this time, Zhao Hai couldn't help but praise the strength of the Divine Race. Although a lot of mosquitoes were already killed, nobody from the Divine Race side had yet to die.

One must know that the mosquitoes needed to be killed thirty times before they disappear. Since casualties happened, then it meant that there were mosquitoes that have been killed for 30 times. It seems like the Divine Race really had skills.

However, Zhao Hai wasn't disappointed, he knew that casualties among the Divine Race were soon to pile up. Finally, a Divine Race soldier had their Domain broken through. Once the defense collapse, the blood devouring mosquitoes immediately threw

themselves towards the vulnerable target. The Divine Race soldier went behind a protective shield, but it was useless. The mosquitoes broke through the shield and latched themselves to the soldier's body. It didn't take too long before a pitiful yell came from the soldier.

Zhao Hai stopped the mosquitoes from sucking the soldier dry. He was afraid that the lack of blood would stop him from turning the dead soldier into undead.

After being killed by the mosquitoes, Zhao Hai would immediately take the soldier's corpse into the Space, then turn him into an undead.

It was at this point that Zhao Hai became surprised, just as the mosquitoes bit into the Divine Race soldier, the Space suddenly issued a prompt, "Space's mosquito pests has absorbed blood of a powerful being. Blood devouring mosquito shall evolve. Mosquitoes promoted to 6th ranks. Every 24 hours, Host can release mosquitoes for seven hours. Mosquitoes can stay outside for ten days or after dying 40 times."

Zhao Hai stared, then happiness immediately burst out from inside him. He didn't think that the mosquitoes would level up like this. In other words, once the mosquitoes suck the blood of a powerful being, then they would level up. This was an extremely priceless piece of information.

Although the mosquitoes were only promoted to 6th rank, one shouldn't forget that their might came from their absurd numbers. Moreover, the life force of the mosquitoes was very strong. Killing them wouldn't be so easy.

A God rank expert might be fierce, but if they were flooded by tens of thousands of 6th rank beasts, then even they would fall eventually.

While the Divine Race were dealing with the mosquitoes, Zhao Hai was starting to turn his attention to another thing. After the



mosquitoes get used up, he would have the cavalry units take over, launching attacks towards Upper Bank City as well as its surroundings.

At this time, Lizzy and Megan were actually handling another matter. They were going to attack the second group of Divine Race soldiers.

The Divine Race's attack was divided into two parts. The first part was Thunder Yun's center army, in charge of charging right through the city. Although they couldn't eliminate Zhao Hai, they would make sure that he wouldn't be able to help the other places. The second part of the attack were the heavy and light cavalry units, who were supposed to sweep the other Buddha Empire cities.

The heavy and light cavalries took off two hours after the center army left. This was done so that Zhao Hai would focus on Thunder Yun and his army.

However, they didn't know that Zhao Hai was already aware of their movements. When the light and heavy cavalry units set out, Zhao Hai's side was already prepared.

Zhao Hai didn't have the capacity to deal with the two cavalries while he was dealing with Thunder Yun. Because of this, Zhao Hai handed the undead over in order to deal with the light and heavy cavalries. This way, he would be able to gain more undead while crippling two arms of the Divine Race army.

Lizzy and Megan were in charge of this matter. Since the light and heavy cavalries weren't working together, they divided into two armies, one on the left and one on the right, as they went on and charge towards the heart of the Buddha Empire.

It would be impossible for Zhao Hai to take advantage of this opportunity. Although the heavy and light cavalries weren't members of the Divine Race, their combat prowess wasn't weak. Also, since they have been enslaved for too long, it would be

impossible to turn them against the Divine Race. At this point, Zhao Hai's only choice was to make them into his undead.

Once the heavy cavalry units become undead, all of them would reach 9th rank. When that time comes, their innate strength shouldn't be any less than a God-rank expert.

The winged pegasus cavalry couldn't be underestimated as well. Because of this, Zhao hai prepared to deal with the heavy cavalry first before going to attack the light cavalry units. After these two sides were dealt with, then Zhao Hai would proceed to slowly grind down Thunder Yun's army.

At this point, Zhao Hai was tied up with Thunder Yun. So Megan and Lizzy were the ones preparing to deal with the heavy cavalry unit.

Although the heavy cavalry units were strong, they were still inferior to the Zhao Hai's undead. One shouldn't forget that Zhao Hai had undead beastmen cavalries. And since all of them were at least 9th rank, they weren't very weak. They should be able to easily deal with the heavy cavalry units.

Zhao Hai wasn't worried about Lizzy and Megan. With their talent and experience, they shouldn't have any problems in defeating the two enemy cavalry armies. What Zhao Hai needed to do right now was cause as much headache to Thunder Yun as possible.

Besides these matters, Zhao Hai also needed to consider the Demon Race. Since Zhao Hai had changed his strategy, holding Rising Sun City wasn't as important as in the past. However, there were still a large amount of people in Rising Sun City, preparing to delay the Demon Race's advance by making them think that Zhao Hai wasn't entangled with the Divine Race.

However, Zhao Hai also knew that they couldn't hide this matter for several days. The Demons would certainly get news about the state of the Divine Race. When that time comes, they will

immediately join the stage.

It was ideal for Zhao Hai if the Demons stayed put. This way, he would have sufficient manpower to use in dealing with the Divine Race. He needed some more time to damage the Divine Race's army.

What Zhao Hai needed was time. He wasn't afraid of fighting two battles at the same time. After adjusting their tactic, it didn't matter whether the enemy was from the Divine Race or the Demons, it would work on both side. However, Zhao Hai would still need time in order to deal some damage on one side before the other started to move.

In the current Upper Bank City, the fight between the Divine Race soldiers and blood devouring mosquitoes was still going on. However, the Ark Continent's cavalry had already arrived. They should have been attacking the Divine Race the whole afternoon and into the evening. But since the blood devouring mosquitoes were present, Zhao Hai gave them an order to take a rest. After they rested, they immediately came over to the city and prepare for another wave of attacks.

This time, Zhao Hai prepared a lot of troops to annoy the Divine Race. There were two million people including Humans, Elves, Beastmen, and Dwarves.

Although these 2 million couldn't compare to the 20 million Divine Race soldiers, they were already quite large for an army who would be doing guerilla tactics. Once this army attacks the Divine Race from day to night, and then have the blood devouring mosquitoes take over, the Divine Race would soon lose their hair in frustration.

# Chapter 772 – Dealing with the Divine Race

---

Thunder Yun had lost count of the number of blood devouring mosquitoes that he'd killed. These mosquitoes seemed to be unkillable. After killing a batch, another batch would come, then another, then another.

In Thunder Yun's mind, these blood devouring mosquitoes were more repugnant than the Ark Continent's cavalry units. The cavalry unit would attack them while the Divine Race can do nothing. However, only those who were in the periphery of the army were attacked, those in the middle parts were completely unaffected.

On the other hand, the mosquitoes were different. There were just too many mosquitoes, almost everyone was under attack, completely hindering them from taking a proper rest. This situation would surely affect the Divine Race army's fighting capabilities in the coming days.

There were already casualties among the Divine Race army. Although Thunder Yun didn't know how much, he still couldn't help but frown.

The attacks of the mosquitoes were different compared to those made by people. When people attack, you can counter them with proper group tactics. But the mosquitoes don't care about formations. Their bodies were too small that once they attack, the battle would end up as individual fights.

Thunder Yun looked at the blood devouring mosquitoes. The insects were still attacking the army, however, it was evident that their numbers had dwindled. Compared to before, the pressure that they brought had become much lighter.

After seeing this development, Thunder Yun couldn't help but let out a sigh of relief. But at this time, a huge explosion was suddenly heard. Thunder Yun became startled, he looked towards the

explosion and spotted a group of Ark Continent cavalry. They had just thrown their javelins and were about to retreat.

Thunder Yun's expression couldn't help but sink. He didn't think that the Ark Continent would actually use this opportunity to take a shot. This situation was too irritating.

Although he was completely infuriated, Thunder Yun didn't have anything to say about it. This was war, and although the Ark Continent has been annoying, he still couldn't help but recognize their ability to grasp at the opportunity to attack the Divine Race.

After thinking up to here, Thunder Yun couldn't help but sigh deeply. He came out this time in order to face Zhao Hai, but he didn't think that it would be very difficult. With how much he lost, his expression was uglier than Silver Shuke and Cloud Ying who were before him. The situation had completely left him with no face to return with.

However, this situation was still expected. Thunder Yun just didn't think that the Ark Continent would have such methods. At the same time, he also suspected that the blood devouring mosquitoes were products made by someone in the Ark Continent.

The timing of the mosquito attack was very good. They didn't encounter any attacks in the afternoon and into the night. And just as they lowered their guards, the mosquitoes suddenly appeared. It can be said that if the Ark Continent and the blood devouring mosquitoes weren't related, then Thunder Yun was willing to cut his own head off.

After the group of Ark Continent cavalry left, another one came. They did the same as the one before them, threw their javelins before retreating. Afterward, a third team came, then a fourth, then a fifth...

While they were dealing with the remaining mosquitoes, the Divine Race army were faced with the attacks of the Ark Continent's cavalry.

After about more than an hour, the amount of attacks that they had received have reached the same number as the attacks that they had suffered in the past few days. It can be said that the Ark Continent was waiting for this opportunity, and Thunder Yun can't do anything about it.

Thunder Yun wouldn't dare to send a detachment to attack the Ark Continent's troops. This was because he knew that once he sends these detachment armies, they would immediately be slaughtered by ambushes coming from the enemy. They were truly in a dilemma right now.

Thunder Yun loudly commanded, "Troops in the periphery stand guard. The others, proceed to deal with the mosquitoes!" As he said that, the troops in the outskirts of the army focused on the Ark Continent's cavalry while those in the middle went on and continued to attack the mosquitoes.

After two hours, the attacks that they received had surpassed those they encountered before. Moreover, their casualties were starting to mount up. In the 30 waves of attacks, nearly 40 thousand people were killed. Adding the damage caused by the residual mosquitoes, the casualties would number to 50 thousand. Moreover, it was clear that as they move through the Ark Continent, this number would continue to increase.

When the skies turn bright, the Ark Continent stopped their attacks. This made the Divine Race army relax and count their total casualties. In the evening, they lost 100 thousand people, when they add the casualties during the cavalry attack it would number to 150 thousand. In just one night, the Divine Race lost 150 thousand troops!

After hearing this number, Thunder Yun felt that he was in a dream. He was also hoping that he was in a dream, that all of these was just an illusion. But after he looked at his side and saw the weary look on Fei'er, he knew that it was real.

Thunder Yun rubbed his temples, then he turned to Fei'er and said, "Beat the drums, have the leaders gather." Fei'er nodded, then he turned around and beat the big drum outside the city lord's mansion.

Before long, several white robes people arrived. In the Divine Race army, only General rank people can wear white robes. It was a kind of status symbol for the army.

However, Thunder Yun liked to wear his battle armor, this made him different from the other generals. Generals in the Divine Race army took command of about five hundred thousand people, so 40 white robed people arrived at the city lord's mansion.

Thunder Yun was sat down inside the mansion, there were also some chairs in front of him. All of these furniture were brought by the Divine Race. Zhao Hai already took everything before leaving the place.

After the Generals entered the door, they immediately gave Thunder Yun a salute before promptly taking a seat. Cloud Ying was among those who sat on the first row while Silver Shuke sat on the second.

After everyone arrived, Thunder Yun looked at them and said, "We've just begun, but we're already stumbling. We underestimated the Ark Continent's people, causing us to lose more than a hundred thousand people. For the Divine Race, this has never happened before. Everyone, tell me about your thoughts on the matter."

Silence spread out inside the room, nobody knew what to say. After some time Cloud Ying opened his mouth and said, "General, I have something to report. We just fought with those blood devouring mosquitoes, and their numbers are surely large. But although they had been killed, nobody can spot a single mosquito corpse inside or outside the city. Everyone is puzzled by this."

Upon hearing Cloud Ying, the other generals were giving nods. It

was true, yesterday, they had fought with a storm's worth of blood devouring mosquitoes. Although some of them were incinerated to ashes by fire element magic, there should still be corpses that remained. However, no corpse can be seen. This matter was too strange.

Thunder Yun nodded, "Right, I saw that as well. I'm also quite sure that the mosquitoes are on the side of the Ark Continent. Otherwise, the cavalry attacks would be too much of a coincidence. It seems like the Ark Continent still had a lot of methods they had yet to use."

The expressions of those present couldn't help but turn serious. They were generals, and they were no fools, they can accept almost any outcome. In yesterday's war, not only were mosquito corpses not found, dead Divine Race soldiers were nowhere to be seen as well. Naturally, large part of that was due to being vaporized by the blood lightning beads, but there were also quite a number of those that were taken by Zhao Hai.

Cloud Ying frowns and said, "If those blood devouring mosquitoes are really on the side of the Ark Continent, then we have trouble. If they can make blood devouring mosquitoes, we need to think about ways to deal with it."

Thunder Yun knit his brows and said, "Blood devouring mosquitoes aren't easy to breed. Otherwise, the Ark Continent would have already used them a long time ago. However, we still need to be on guard. If we encounter more mosquitoes in the future, every soldier will group up into three man teams. One will support a Domain, one will kill the mosquitoes, and one rests. They will cycle through to minimize exhaustion. That way, the mosquitoes wouldn't be too much of a threat. What we need to pay attention to are the Ark Continent's cavalry units. Does anyone have any ideas in dealing their attacks?"

The group frowned, they went quiet for a while before one of them stood up and gave a bow to Thunder Yun and said, "General,



I think we are too reliant on our Domains. Domains are indeed powerful, but their range is just too short, not enough to reach the range of thrown javelins. Because of this, we can only receive attacks and not retaliate. Therefore, I think that we should do the same as the Ark Continent's cavalry. We cut some trees and make them into our own wooden javelins. Although we cannot place blood lightning beads inside them, at the very least, we can counter attack. With our God rank strengths, our throwing distance should be much further compared to the 9th rank cavalry. This will give us a means of counter-attack, and a way to threaten the other side."

Upon hearing this person's words, Thunder Yun's eyes turned bright, he looked at the person and said, "Good Good, Cloud Yi, your idea is good. Although javelins wouldn't be able to cope with the mosquitoes, they would be a threat to the cavalry units. Moreover, making them is very simple. Good, when everyone heads back, inform the soldiers to cut trees down and make them into javelins. If there are no trees to cut, get some stones and keep them. In any case, we can't let them continue attacking us like this."

The people gathered in the room also thought that the idea was good. The disparity between God ranks and 9th ranks is very big. The javelins and stones that God-ranks throw would definitely be more powerful compared to those thrown by 9th ranks. When the time comes, the enemy cavalry would have no way to approach them. Even if the cavalry units doesn't die, the Divine Race army could at least drive them away.

They weren't thinking of eliminating all cavalry units with this method, it was impossible. The cavalry units were just too quick, such a method was completely useless. However, this will minimize their losses. As long as they aren't afraid of the harassment of the other party, then they can continue on and charge towards the heart of the Ark Continent. When the time

comes, the Ark Continent's residents will have no other choice but to fight the Divine Race army head on!

# Chapter 773 – A Good Plan

---

Zhao Hai didn't know about the contents of the Divine Race army's meeting. The Divine Race used a formation in order to isolate the space surrounding them. This magic was quite effective against the Space.

Zhao Hai was currently looking into the Demons. He was afraid that the Demon Race would get any news and proceed to attack. He already had the troops in Rising Sun City show themselves regularly on top of the walls, hoping that the Demons would not suspect anything. But if the Demons did attack, these troops will immediately turn into cavalry units and proceed to harass the Demon army.

The current Demon army was no less than the Divine Race. They also numbered around 20 million troops. Moreover, more people were still coming from the Demon Realm.

At the same time, the continent's armies were also quite numerous. Although there weren't a lot of elite troops, the local armies were still collectively large. The local armies have now been promoted to 9th rank, their abilities shouldn't be too far from the elite troops.

Besides the Human army, there was also the Elves, Dwarves, Beastman, and Fishman armies. All in all, the Ark Continent had about several tens of millions of usable troops. This was especially true for the Fishman race. Nobody knew how large the endless sea was, but one could be certain that the amount of Fishman tribes were a lot. The entire Fishman army, once they left the seas, will become huge war machines. Even the Mermaid Clan was unclear about their total battle prowess.

There were still many others who hadn't taken the spatial water and were yet to be promoted. But Zhao Hai couldn't do anything about it. Although he said that everyone can drink the spatial

water, there will come a time when it would lose its effectiveness and just turn into normal water.

What Zhao Hai needed to do right now was to unveil the maximum warring potential of the Ark Continent and use it against the Demons and the Divine Race. It can be said that this was part of the Ark Continent's evolution.

Right, the Ark Continent needed to evolve. Zhao Hai thought about it because of the recent changes to the continent. In the past, the Ark Continent was just a lower realm compared to the Divine Realm. But now, the Divine Race just removed that division. This meant that the Ark Continent and the Divine Race now had similar laws. Under this situation, if the Ark Continent's people failed to adapt, then they will certainly be eliminated.

If Zhao Hai didn't have the Space, then this evolution would certainly be impossible. But Zhao Hai had the Space, providing them with the ability to evolve. Because of this, Zhao Hai decided to use this war to improve the entirety of the Ark Continent.

However, the situation with the other races was very different compared to the Humans. The Humans lived in a relatively concentrated manner, and their government had almost reached a perfect state. Take the Rosen Empire, for example, their governance was already first-rate. Their control of the population had even reached the tiniest unit, villages being governed by the village heads. On the other hand, the other races were different. The Elves and the Dwarves had it the best, living close to each other. However, the same cannot be said for the Beastmen.

The Beastmen lived in the Prairie, a place that was too big. Because of this, the Beastmen lived a fairly nomadic lifestyle, moving about in small tribes of several tens to several hundreds of households. In this case, wanting to concentrate them would be very difficult.

The Beastmen were just a tad less problematic compared to the

Fishmen. The Fishman race lived in the endless sea, a place much bigger than the prairie, and much more difficult to manage.

In fact, the management of the Fishman Race was very relaxed. But all of them knew that the Mermaid Clan was the ruler of the entire sea. However, since the Mermaid Clan doesn't care too much about taxes, the management had become too loose and neglected.

This caused Zhao Hai a headache. The Fishman Race was just too dispersed despite being the largest group in terms of population and war potential. Additionally, the Fishman Race weren't too used to fighting on land.

Because of this, although there were a lot of Fishmen who had become 9th ranks, they were still not suitable for land battle. They were on the rear, training on top of the mounts that Zhao Hai gave.

At this time, the number of troops in the Buddha Empire numbered less than 10 million. But there were still more troops coming from the rear.

In fact, if Zhao Hai's tactics were used, they really don't need so many troops. However, Zhao Hai still wanted to see what a full on fight with the Demons and the Divine Race looks like.

Zhao Hai looked at the situation in the Demon Camp. Fortunately, it was still the early days of the Divine Race's attack. Because of this, the Demons were yet to receive any news. However, Zhao Hai knew that word would soon reach their ears.

Seeing no movements from the Demons, Zhao Hai turned to look at what the Divine Race were doing. Upon seeing the Divine Race, Zhao Hai couldn't help but stare. The Divine Race army were cutting trees down and gathering stones. He was confused at what these people were doing.

However, he soon found out what this action meant. After

cutting trees down, the Divine Race unexpectedly made javelins out of them. Although these javelins were simple, looking just like a sharpened wooden club, they were still quite lethal once thrown by the Divine Race army.

It was quite obvious that the Divine Race wanted to use these javelins to retaliate against the Ark Continent's attacks.

After thinking up to this point, Zhao Hai's brows couldn't help but wrinkle. Although the strength of the Divine Race's javelins were inferior to the ones with the blood lightning beads. The large number of the Divine Race army alone was something that cannot be underestimated.

Zhao Hai couldn't help but shiver after imagining 20 million Divine Race soldiers throwing javelins simultaneously. Zhao Hai couldn't forget the scene from the movie 'Hero' where a rain of arrows was seen going down on a city. He reckoned that the Divine Race's javelins would be more frightening compared to the Qin army's arrows.

The Buddha Empire had a lot of trees, and for the Divine Race, they wouldn't be very hard to cut. For them, making javelins should be very simple.

Zhao Hai also understood what the stones were for. Judging by the sheer number of the Divine Race army, the javelins made would surely be insufficient. These stones were not only portable and easy to find, they could also deal significant damage once thrown. If these were thrown by any average person, then they might not be a threat, but in the hands of God ranked experts, they would surely be lethal.

Zhao Hai frowned, the Divine Race were too quick to think. Do they intend to deal with the cavalry attacks with this method?

As Zhao Hai was calmly thinking about it, Laura walked in and sat by his side. After seeing the monitor, she was puzzled so she asked Zhao Hai. "Brother Hai, what's happening? Why are those

soldiers gathering stones and wood? Do they want to build a city?" Zhao Hai bitterly smiled and said, "They're preparing to counter our cavalry attacks. The wood are made into javelins while the stones are to be thrown."

When she heard Zhao Hai's answer, Laura couldn't help but frown. Zhao Hai's cavalry units were yet to utilize their full 9th rank strength. Additionally, throwing javelins weren't their speciality. Zhao Hai didn't even order them to be accurate, throwing the javelins and then retreating was his only order.

Because of this, the cavalry units weren't very skillful in their job. If they were attacked by these javelins, the only way they could survive was to abandon their mounts. And if they won't, they would only be eliminated by the Divine Race.

Moreover, once the Divine Race uses this tactic, the harassment methods that Zhao Hai's side had thought of would become useless.

Laura turned her head to Zhao Hai and said, "Brother Hai, what do we do now? Under these javelin and stone attacks, our cavalry units would be unable to continue their job. Using shields to block the Divine Race projectiles would not be enough." Zhao Hai nodded as he sighed and said, "I'm also worried about this matter. God rank experts are much stronger compared to 9th ranks. God ranks are very difficult to deal with, especially those who already have Domains. The javelins thrown by the Divine Race would surely be strong. Only a few armies in the continent are able to block their attack."

Laura frowned, but then her eyes shone, then she said, "Brother Hai, do you remember the magic formation disks used by the Radiant Church? If we make more of those, I think they can be used."

Zhao Hai stared, "Formation disks? So what if we make formation disks?" Laura smiled and said, "Defensive formation

disks. Major cities of the continent might have defensive formations, but these formations are very complex. If we shrink them down, then they can be used with formation disks. Each squad can carry a set of these disks and use it with crystal stones when they face the Divine Race. This should make the stones and javelins very useless.”



# Chapter 774 – I Have a Way

---

When he heard Laura, Zhao Hai's eyes lit up. He nodded and said, "That method is good. We should have them made as soon as possible. However, we still need to test these magic formations. They can't be too big nor too small. Too big and they waste too much energy, too small and they become useless."

Laura smiled and said, "This should be easy to do. At this point, your word is already law in the continent. Moreover, father has been researching magic formations for a very long time. I can hand the task over to him. We should expect results to come up soon."

Zhao Hai nodded, "Alright, then we'll hand it over to father-in-law. Tell him that we need it and we prefer them to be made as soon as possible."

Laura nodded, "I'll take care of it. But Brother Hai, we cannot stay put in the following days. How about we adjust Lizzy and Megan to face the center army. The javelins and stones might be a threat to the cavalry, but to the undead they should be less harmful."

Zhao Hai nodded, "Alright, I'll tell them after they deal with the heavy cavalry unit."

Just as Zhao Hai said that, Lizzy's voice was heard, "It seems like me and Megan came in at the right time. Big Brother Hai, the heavy cavalry unit has been taken care of."

Zhao Hai turned his head to look and saw Lizzy and Megan's excited faces. Zhao Hai immediately smiled at them and said, "You already took care of the heavy cavalry? How many people did they have?"

Although the majority of the reinforcements were composed of the Divine Race, the winged pegasus cavalry, and the rhinoceros heavy cavalry, there were also other races included in the mix.

This time, these extra races weren't included in the Divine Race's center army. Instead, they were used to supplement the heavy cavalry army in attacking the other cities of the Buddha Empire. What Zhao Hai was asking about was the total number of people included in the heavy cavalry army, including those supplemental races.

Megan smiled and said, "There were a lot of them. You couldn't even imagine. There were 5 million of them, 5 million."

Zhao Hai immediately became ecstatic when he heard Megan, he said, "That's fantastic. Then this means that we have 5 million additional undead. That is a huge harvest. Hahaha. And since the light cavalry unit have more people in comparison, our numbers will be greatly strengthened. Good, good. You two have a good rest before you deal with the light cavalry. Right, hand some of those undead over to me. I'll use them to deal with the Divine Race's center army."

Lizzy and Megan nodded. Then they thought back to how difficult it was to deal with the heavy cavalry unit. The opponent wasn't weak at all. Moreover, with their numbers, dealing with them in such a short time was very hard.

However, Lizzy and Megan had thought of a way. They would have Dwarves dig some holes on the ground, making the heavy cavalry stop their advance.

The heavy cavalry's greatest asset was their charge. Once their charge gets stopped, then they're overall power would drop. The Dwarves' traps were precisely used to stop them.

Once the heavy cavalry unit saw the traps, they quickly knew that it was set up by the Dwarves. It didn't take too long for them to shoot out earth magic towards the ground. This magic had the effect of hardening the ground. It would last for an hour or so, making them unafraid of any attacks coming from the Dwarves.

However, their decision this time was very mistaken. Lizzy and

Megan didn't plan to attack them from the ground. Instead, they used the time where the enemy was using earth magic to surround them with undead. Then the undead began to attack the heavy cavalry.

These undead were quite strong, they were 9th ranks after all. Because of this, even before the heavy cavalry can respond, they were already eliminated.

This method can only be used because Zhao Hai's side had the Space. They have the method of making the undead appear wherever they want. Lizzy and Megan used this feature to surround the heavy cavalry with undead. Catching them off guard and making the operation easier than it should be.

The plan might look simple, but it wasn't. Fortunately, not a lot of people were aware of this capability.

Some of the undead were handed over to Zhao Hai while some remained in the control of Lizzy and Megan. The winged pegasus army were fast, and could fly, so they would need a much better plan to deal with them. This needed to be thoroughly thought out.

While Lizzy and Megan rested, Laura went out to discuss the formation disks with Karen. Meanwhile, Zhao Hai stayed in the villa in order to monitor the Divine Race.

Besides monitoring the Divine Race, Zhao Hai also busied himself with resupplying the cavalry units with more javelins..

There were currently a lot of places in the Ark Continent that took on the job of making javelins. In addition to wooden ones, there were also a lot of bamboo-made javelins. Those javelins made of bamboo were found out to be more powerful and convenient to use.

At this point, Zhao Hai planted a lot of bamboos in the Space, specifically for the manufacturing of javelins. Making bamboo javelins was simple. A single person would be able to make a lot of

javelins in a single day.

Supplying the cavalry units was also a unique matter. Zhao Hai placed the supplies somewhere on the continent, then he would just lead the cavalry units there in order to take their javelins. At the same time, the cavalry could also eat and rest there.

These places varied, some were in cities of the Buddha Empire while some were in rural areas. The areas weren't too complicated and the supplies present there were only enough for one or two batches.

Zhao Hai had also given the captains of these units a spatial bag each. Each bag can carry about a thousand cubic meters. In addition to the messenger fish, the bags also stored things to eat and drink. Zhao Hai didn't want them to be starved during times where he was unable to teleport them from place to place.

Now that the cavalry units had received their supplies, they proceeded to take a rest. At the same time, the Divine Race army were also taking a rest. The blood devouring mosquitoes had made them suffer heavily.

Although the mosquitoes were upgraded, they still needed 24 hours in order to be re-released. But when the time comes, those new mosquitoes would be stronger than the ones before.

After being upgraded, the strength of the mosquitoes had doubled compared to before. Zhao Hai believed that the mosquitoes would deal a much heavier damage to the Divine Race the next time they attack.

Although the Divine Race army were composed of God-rank experts, Zhao Hai can still see weary looks on their faces. Those who had acquired their javelins and stones immediately took a rest. It seems like they were very tired.

However, there were still some of them who stood guard in the surroundings. Therefore, attacking them at this time wouldn't be

so easy. Still, Zhao Hai wasn't worried. If he really wanted to deal with the Divine Race army, he could just send some undead into the middle of the army. That would certainly catch them off guard.

But Zhao Hai didn't want to do that right now. The Divine Race was different compared to the light and heavy cavalries. The Divine Race army have God-rank strength, making them much stronger than the two other armies. Even if the undead appeared in the middle of the army, their only choice would be to self destruct using blood lightning beads. Dealing with the Divine Race army using the methods used on the heavy cavalry would be a foolish decision, the strength disparity was just too much.

For Zhao Hai to not use it doesn't meant that it was useless. On the contrary, this trick would be very useful. However, this trick can only be used once. The next time, the Divine Race would be prepared for it. Because of this, Zhao Hai planned to use it only when it is crucial.

Since that was his plan, Zhao Hai didn't send people to harass the Divine Race right now, allowing them time to rest. But Zhao Hai also believed that even if they were resting, they would still keep one of their eyes open, fearing that an attack would come at any time.

After seeing that nothing was happening in the Divine Race's camp, Zhao Hai felt relief. He took some time to head back to the Black Wasteland. At this time, many people who specialized in magic formations had been sent over. Karen was present there as well. Zhao Hai had a laboratory made for them so that they can research weapons and formations much easier.

After the plan for making formation disks were passed on to Karen's group, they immediately started on their research. They were quite familiar with defensive formations. In fact, they already have ideas on how to proceed.

Ever since the Demons and the Divine Race started to invade the

Ark Continent, these people were already thinking about these types of formations. Because of this, after Zhao Hai's word was sent, they didn't fumble around and just proceeded to shift their research towards Zhao Hai's needs.

In the past, they have been researching ways to make more defensive and energy saving formations. This time, they only needed to make the formations small enough to carry around. Their research were focused on huge formations, so they had a certain understanding when it came to areas and their energy consumption. What they needed to do now was to make formation plates that have ample defensive strength for the cavalry units.

When he saw how smooth the research was going, Zhao Hai felt relief. It seems like it would only take a few days before the formation plates to be made.

# Chapter 775 – The Demon Race Moves, War On Two Fronts

---

Zhao Hai had also changed his methods from before. He now reported everything that happened in the frontlines. He would have Cai'er manufacture written documents to be given to the various powers, detailing what happened. This will give them a more direct understanding about the situation in the frontlines.

This would also make the various powers feel more involved in the fight and not too distant to what was happening.

While the Divine Race and Zhao Hai's army were resting, the Demons were doing the contrary. The Demon Dragon King had received word that the Divine Race had already made their move. Upon receiving this information, the Demon Dragon King immediately convened his officers and notified them about the Divine Race's action.

When they heard that the Divine Race had made their move, the various officers couldn't help but be excited. One of them said, "Good, the Divine Race finally attacked! Your Highness, when do we advance?"

The Demon Dragon King was also smiling, he replied, "It has already been a few days since the Divine Race advanced. We might not know what happened, but there was no movement in Rising Sun City. I suspect that those left there are only the human army. Zhao Hai shouldn't have the time to block our advance. Our opportunity has arrived!"

The group cheered. The Demon Dragon King looked at the group and said, "The sooner we dispatch the troops, the greater the advantage we can gain. At the same time, we must prepare to deal with the Divine Race. Just as Zhao Hai said, they might not agree to divide the Continent. We don't agree to divide it as well. The strength of the Divine Race is no less than ours. Everybody should

prepare well.”

The group simultaneously made a shout. However, each one of them still had their happy expression. The Demon Dragon King faintly smiled and said, “Go back to your armies. After one hour, we depart. Our target, Rising Sun City!” The group gave another loud shout before they turned around and left.

There was no Demon who came to the Ark Continent that didn't want to attack. This was because all of them wanted to make the Ark Continent their territory as soon as possible. After staying here for one day, nobody wanted to return to the Demon Realm.

After one hour, the Demon Army was fully prepared. And with the command from the Demon Dragon King, close to 30 million Demons left the Demonic Abyss, heading straight towards Rising Sun City.

However, the moment the Demons moved, Zhao Hai already ordered everyone inside Rising Sun City to leave. Nobody was left inside as they transitioned into doing guerilla tactics.

Using their harassment methods on the Demons should be more convenient compared to the Divine Race. This was because the Demon army didn't have as much God-rank experts, so not a lot can support a Domain to block the blood lightning beads. Because of this, Zhao Hai held more confidence in dealing with the Demon Race.

Before long, the first round of harassment came. The Demons were not like the Divine Race, they don't have as much God ranks. However, the abundance of God ranks and their Domains made the Divine Race think that long ranged weapons weren't that important. On the other hand, since the Demons had 8th to 9th ranks, they equipped themselves with bows, javelins, and other throwable weapons. After losing more than ten thousand people in the first attack, the Demon Dragon King immediately made an adjustment. Those with ranged weapons would be placed on the



outskirts of the Demon Army. Moreover, as soon as they saw the Humans, they immediately threw their weapons. This arrangement actually caused some casualties among the Human Race's cavalry.

This caused Zhao Hai a headache. He didn't expect the Demon Race's archery to be this strong. Moreover, their firing distance was quite far. Because of this, Zhao Hai was very dissatisfied. Although they were still causing trouble for the Demons, Zhao Hai was still not happy.

This move by the Demons further pushed the importance of the formation plates. Zhao Hai discussed the matter with Karen, making them produce a working prototype as soon as possible. And with the Dwarves' help, they need to make one at the quickest time possible.

Shortly after the Demons moved, the Divine Race had finished their rest and continued to charge towards the heart of the Ark Continent.

This time, Zhao Hai has to face enemies on two fronts. However, he was already prepared for this outcome. He immediately sent the undead that was handed over to him and harassed the Divine Race. On the other hand, there was no substitution for the Demons. The cavalry units still attacked them. Even if the damage made was low, at least the Demons weren't advancing smoothly.

At this time, Lizzy and Megan led the undead and the other armies of the continent to deal with the light cavalry army.

The number of people assigned to the winged pegasus cavalry was about 7 million. Because of how fast the light cavalry units were and the fact that almost nobody can catch up to them, there were no other race that was placed in this army.

Zhao Hai actually wanted to use the winged pegasus as a mount for the cavalry. This was because they were very mobile.

However, Zhao Hai's Space had just acquired some winged pegasus. It would be impossible to fit every cavalry unit with one. Although the Space can speed up the breeding of these winged pegasus, to reach a proper number was still far off.

Thunder Yun noticed that Zhao Hai had changed his way of attack. Before, their attackers were composed of Human soldiers, but now they were replaced by undead. These undead were also very fast, and their usage of javelins was actually more proficient and lethal compared to the Human soldiers.

Naturally, Thunder Yun wasn't aware that the armies of the continent had just been promoted to 9th-rank, so they weren't too proficient with their strength. On the other hand, the undead had already underwent battles in their current state, so they were more used to their bodies compared to the recently promoted soldiers. It was no wonder that the undead were more proficient in using the javelins.

But what worried Thunder Yun the most was how quick Zhao Hai was able to adjust. Zhao Hai was just too fast, it was as though he immediately figured out that the Divine Race had a way to deal with the Human cavalry. Just as Laura said, the javelins and the stones might be effective against living cavalry, but were less useful against the undead. Unless the javelin or stones hit exact places, the undead would remain unscathed. The projectiles would just go through their bones as they continued to fight.

Moreover, Zhao Hai's undead had self regeneration and pseudo-vitality. As long as their souls weren't extinguished, these undead would stay immortal. In this case, the javelins and stones were rendered close to useless.

Thunder Yun didn't know whether Zhao Hai was aware of their actions or this arrangement was just done in pure coincidence.

If Zhao Hai knew that the Divine Race planned to use javelins and stones, and promptly used his undead, then this meant that Zhao

Hai had means to constantly look into the state of the Divine Race army.

While thinking about this possibility, Thunder Yun couldn't help but be startled. He immediately scouted the surroundings, looking for places where people could hide.

However, they found nothing. This action only made their march slower, which allowed Zhao Hai more time. What Zhao Hai needed is time, time to eliminate the winged pegasus army, to research magic formations, to finish constructing the defensive line at Accra Mountain, and to promote more people to God-rank.

Naturally, Zhao Hai will not let the Divine Race go just because they slowed their advance. The undead cavalry remained and continued to harass the Divine Race army. Because the undead were never tired and didn't need to eat nor drink, they attacked non-stop. And as soon as they reached the Divine Race's line of fire, Zhao Hai would immediately take them into the Space. He would release them once more when their turn to attack comes.

Thunder Yun's army was now advancing at the speed of a turtle. It would only need about three to four hours if one were to fly from city to city. However, it has already been five hours since Thunder Yun's army left Upper Bank City, yet they were still halfway to the next city.

Zhao Hai was very satisfied with this result. He was currently making every effort he could in order to delay the Demon and the Divine Race. After Lizzy and Megan eliminates the light cavalry army, Zhao Hai would then be able to allocate more resources into crippling the advance of the two enemy parties. At the same time, Zhao Hai had a more sinister idea in his mind. He would go and attack their rear!

As long as manpower gets available, Zhao Hai will have the undead winged pegasus army attack the cities in the Radiant Empire in the guise of zombies. When that time comes, Zhao Hai

wanted to see whether the Divine Race would retreat or not.

Naturally, Zhao Hai didn't think about driving the Divine Race back to the Divine Realm, that was just impossible to do. After seeing the giants, the winged pegasus, and the heavy armor cavalry, Zhao Hai knew that the Divine Race had already conquered several smaller planes. And in their operation in the Ark Continent, it was certain that they had made the proper preparations. To drive them back to the Divine Realm in such a short time was just not possible.

However, attacking the Radiant Empire still had its own advantages. First, they could compel the Divine Race army to retreat. Second, they would be able to acquire those large magic cannons and have them researched. And third, they would be able to get some green skinned creatures and ask them about the matters of the Divine Race.

But all of these relied on time. As long as Zhao Hai had time, he can make sure that the Divine Race never reached Accra Mountains.

The construction in Accra Mountain had increased a lot. It will become a permanent defensive line, so Zhao Hai's requirements for it were very strict. Not only does it need magical formations, the materials needed to be selected properly as well. In addition to being resistant to physical damage, the materials needed to resist magic attacks as well as have magical effects. That is to say, using magic to break these materials was just plainly impossible.

Take Upper Bank City, for example. The city had a very good defensive formation, providing the walls with defense against magic. However, after the formation was broken, the walls were susceptible to being turned into golems by using earth magic. The walls will become weapons to attack the city's defenders.

This situation needs to be prevented in Accra Mountains. Instead of stones, Zhao Hai asked for concrete to be used in making the

walls. This concrete was different to the concrete back on Earth. The materials used for Ark Continent's concrete comprised of things like gravel, rice milk, and some other things. Naturally, combining these things would need magic.

In the Ark Continent, magic-mage materials weren't rare. There were a lot of materials that can be made using magic, but they weren't used much in the past years. Only in making Imperial Palaces did these materials appear. Making concrete using magic was an idea that Zhao Hai had proposed.

Moreover, Zhao Hai had another requirement for the Accra Mountains. The defense lines must be done outward. This meant that the defense will be focused on the Buddha Empire. As for the Lyon Empire's side, no defense shall be made.

The reason that Zhao Hai made this decision was because he was afraid that if Accra Mountain fell, then its defense would be turned against the Ark Continent. If Zhao Hai made both sides of the mountain defensive, then the Divine Race or the Demon Race might use it as a forward base against the Ark Continent. When that time comes, reclaiming the land would become much more difficult.

This method had its advantages and disadvantages, but Zhao Hai can only do it. Before doing so, he also discussed this matter with the Buddha Emperor. He wanted to make it clear that this arrangement wasn't against the Buddha Empire, but to the invaders instead.

# Chapter 776 – Skill

---

In the past, Zhao Hai didn't consider the people of the Ark Continent in his decisions. The only things in his mind was the Buda Clan, everything is for the betterment of the clan.

But in his current position, he found out that there were more things to consider. Just take the matter with the Accra Mountains, for example. If it wasn't properly taken care of, then it might result in the dissatisfaction of the Buddha Empire.

Although the Buddha Empire had moved to the Lyon Empire, Zhao Hai had to hand a city over to the Buddha Emperor. This was done in order for the Emperor to be able to rule his people. One could see how sensitive matters like these were to the Buddha Empire's people.

Even if they were forced to leave their country, this only intensified their feelings about it. By making a demarcation in the Accra Mountains, Zhao Hai just cut the continent into two. The internal part would start from the Lyon Empire and then moving forward. The outer part would be the Buddha Empire and the Radiant Empire. Those people in the internal part naturally wouldn't have any issues with this. After all, this was done in order to combat the Demons and the Divine Race.

On the other hand, this decision would make the people of the Buddha Empire feel bitter. Cultivating the Accra Mountains as a wall made the people of the Buddha Empire think that Zhao Hai had already abandoned their home. This was akin to handing the Buddha Empire over to the Demons and the Divine Race.

This didn't even include what the Buddha Emperor would think. If Zhao Hai were to repel the Demons and the Divine Race one day, then the Accra Mountain defense could be seen as a protective guard against the Buddha Empire.

Because he was afraid of the Buddha Emperor having this idea,

Zhao Hai talked this matter with him when the construction started. He even promised the Buddha Emperor that once the Demons and the Divine Race were expelled, the Lyon Empire would not place any garrison troops inside Accra Mountains.

All of this was made in the name of stability. Only when everything was stable would the fight in the frontlines be smooth.

Although the Buddha Empire's people were living under refuge right now, their influence was still quite significant. This was because they had given up their country for the sake of the Ark Continent. Because of this, Zhao Hai needed to give them preferential treatment. Otherwise, the other nations would feel that Zhao Hai had been unfair.

The various Emperors were on the side of the Buddha Emperor. How Zhao Hai treated the Buddha Emperor right now would be how he would treat them in the future. These Emperors knew how strong the Demons and the Divine Race were, so they were aware that repelling them wouldn't take a short time, it was just impossible.

They were afraid that a day would come where the invaders would rush over Accra Mountain's defensive line. They were afraid that they would have the same fate as the Buddha Emperor. If Zhao Hai didn't treat the Buddha Emperor well, then they wouldn't be expecting Zhao Hai to treat them well in the future. Maybe they would even think that Zhao Hai would just eliminate them and consolidate control over the entire Ark Continent.

Although Zhao Hai's present strength allows him to dethrone the Emperors and control the continent, he didn't want to do this. The Emperors and Great Nobles had been ruling their respective subjects for several thousand years. It can be said that their influence in the continent had already been ingrained in the hearts of the people. Wanting to abolish their rule wouldn't be very easy.

The reason why Zhao Hai was able to quickly control the Lyon

Empire was because their Royal Family was killed by the Dragons. The strength of the Dragons had also left a huge impression on the commoners. So after Zhao Hai eliminated the Dragons, the Great Clans of the Lyon Empire had no choice but to become his subjects, otherwise they would face ruin in the hands of the commoners.

Because of this, Zhao Hai decided to tell the people of the continent about his arrangements. He had no choice, otherwise the aristocrats of the continent would unite against him. When that time comes, the whole continent would be plunged into chaos. Not to say about the Demons and the Divine Race, the continent might even disperse because of infighting. Zhao Hai had no choice but to consider all of these whenever he made a major action.

The reason why Zhao Hai can say that there would be no Lyon Empire garrison on Accra Mountains in the future was because he was still the Emperor of the Lyon Empire. One shouldn't forget that the Buddha Empire and the Lyon Empire were divided by the Accra Mountain.

Not having garrison on the Accra Mountains might also mean that the defense would be handed over to the Buddha Empire. Naturally, the Buddha Emperor have no problems about this.

Actually, Zhao Hai didn't want to hand the Accra Mountain over to the Buddha Empire nor would it be under the hands of the Lyon Empire. After they repel the Demons and the Divine Race, Zhao Hai plans to hand the defensive line over to the Dwarves and the Elves.

The passage between the Dwarf Mountain and Elven forest passes below the Mountains. If either the Buddha Empire or the Lyon Empire takes control of the mountains, then this would mean that they would have a certain influence over the Elves and the Dwarves.

Naturally, he wouldn't tell this plan. He just told the Buddha Emperor that there would be no Lyon Empire soldiers stationed on



the mountain after the war. However, he didn't explicitly say that the mountain would be handed over to the Buddha Empire. If the Buddha Emperor thinks so, then that won't be Zhao Hai's problem anymore.

This was a type of deception, a deception that must be used since it was necessary. After all, the Buddha Empire wasn't loyal to Zhao Hai. Therefore, some small deceptions needed to be made in order to achieve certain goals.

Besides the frontline and backline matters, Zhao Hai also took care of the reports that Cai'er would send. In addition to the heads of the powers, these reports would also be read aloud in various cities. This would allow the commoners to know about the situation in the frontline.

Zhao Hai still continued to stabilize the spirit of the people. Just like how he needed to appease the heads of states, he also needed to make sure that there weren't wrong rumors going about among the populace. Rumors like 'the frontlines couldn't defend, 'Zhao Hai is heavily injured', and 'The Demons and the Divine Race have come' needed to be quelled.

Nonsense rumors like these would only cause anxiety to the people. Moreover, there were also a lot of soldiers in the continent that were originally commoners. Therefore, these people needed to be made aware of the war's progress.

The reason why Zhao Hai didn't bother doing this before was because he was yet to transfer troops from the continent into the Buddha Empire at a large scale. At that time, the people involved in the war were only those who were from the Buddha Empire, some armies from the three Empires, and groups from the other races.

However, now was different, Zhao Hai was mobilizing the entire Ark Continent. Although he had improved the strength of the soldiers, it was still impossible for them to not be worried about the frontlines. Therefore, Zhao Hai decided to read out the reports

to the civilians, informing them about the war.

Zhao Hai was not afraid that his plans would be exposed to the Demons and the Divine Race. After all, what he was doing was just stalling the enemies. It was a kind of information that nobody can make use of. The enemies might know about his plan, however, what can they do about it?

Whether it be the Demons or the Divine Race, both of them were subjected to Zhao Hai's delaying tactics. Zhao Hai used his undead for the Divine Race while the cavalries were used against the Demons. This arrangement was right. Although the strength of the Demon army wasn't that great, they were beings completely unafraid of death. With their powerful life force, even general 9th ranks from the continent would be unable to play around with them.

Although using the cavalry against the Demons caused some lives to be lost, it was still better than facing the Divine Race. Zhao Hai can imagine the large losses that would be met if he continued to use the cavalry units against the Divine Race.

The javelins and stones from the Divine Race were very lethal. Even undead fell to them, much less actual living people.

Actually, the heavy cavalry unit can be said to be the most appropriate enemy against the Divine Race. Their inborn strength would bring them more throwing distance compared to the others. They might even compare to the Divine Race's projectiles.

However, Zhao Hai cannot send them right now because he needed to deal with the winged pegasus cavalry. Once Zhao Hai sends the heavy cavalry, the Divine Race would know that Zhao Hai was planning on dealing with the winged pegasus cavalry next. This would allow the Divine Race to adjust their strategy, making the situation unfavorable for Zhao Hai. Therefore, Zhao Hai could only use the undead to deal with the Divine Race. Fortunately, the undead were already enough to slow the advance of Thunder Yun's

center army.

The Demons and the Divine Race were still advancing, but their rate of advancement was horribly slow. The Divine Race wasn't expecting this move from Zhao Hai, they didn't bring too much supplies when they left the Radiant Empire. Although their supplies can last them for another one or two days, it was already clear that their supplies wouldn't last for too long. When they decided to get supplies from the Radiant Empire, then that would be the time where Zhao Hai's undead cavalry would make their attack.

Zhao Hai has been paying attention to the moves of the two armies. Now, 24 hours had almost passed by, Zhao Hai was preparing to unleash the blood devouring mosquitoes once more. When the time is up, the mosquitoes would be released immediately. This time, the blood devouring mosquitoes wouldn't only assault the Divine Race, they would go for the Demons as well.

# Chapter 777 – Thunder Yun's Thoughts

---

It was more advantageous to use the mosquitoes during the night. Since it was still daytime, Zhao Hai only gathered them in the Space. When night comes, he would unleash them to deal with the Demons and the Divine Race.

Honestly, the time of day didn't really affect the Demons and the Divine Race too much. However, even a small advantage needed to be used, so Zhao Hai chose to wait.

This time, he wouldn't have the blood devouring mosquitoes attack on their own. Instead, Zhao Hai planned to have his cavalry carry on attacking as well. It was necessary to exhaust the Demons and the Divine Race as much as possible. When Lizzy and Megan eliminates the winged pegasus cavalry, then Zhao Hai would have more chess pieces to move on the board.

Eliminating the winged pegasus army would provide Zhao Hai with millions more undead. Once that gets accomplished, Zhao Hai would have more things to do with the cavalry. For example, he could completely disrupt the supply line of the Divine Race, he could even go and harass the Radiant Empire. On the other hand, there was no need to be afraid of the Demons. Although they were strong, they weren't much stronger compared to the undead. If an undead dies, it would definitely take another Demon along with it. This trade of losses wasn't something that the Demon Race can withstand.

Zhao Hai looked at the monitor while making orders towards the cavalry units from time to time. At the same time, he would also lead the undead in making their attacks.

Zhao Hai currently felt like he was playing a computer game back on Earth. On the screen were green and red dots. The red dots would be his people while the green ones represented the enemy. At this time, groups of red dots were advancing and retreating on

the monitor.

There was also a huge mass of green dots. The smaller group of red dots would come in contact with these green dots once in a while, some green and red dots would vanish at each encounter.

Zhao Hai didn't feel too much after seeing the red and green lights vanish. Although he knew that each dot that disappeared meant a life was ended, he understood that this was war. Loss of life was inevitable in these situations.

Aside from the Demons and the Divine Race's camps, Zhao Hai was also paying attention to Lizzy and Megan. This didn't mean that he was worried about their success, he knew that the two of them would succeed in this operation. What he was paying attention to was how long it would take to eliminate the winged pegasus army. The sooner they get killed, the more advantageous it would be for Zhao Hai.

But he didn't urge Megan and Lizzy to go faster, he knew that the two were already doing their best. There was no benefit in making them anxious about their success.

The skies slowly turned dark, and Zhao Hai knew that the time to dish out huge damages had come. He immediately had his cavalry units withdraw for some time so that they would be in their best condition when night came.

Actually, these cavalry units weren't very tired at all. After a group attacks the Demons, they would just retreat and resupply while at the same time taking a rest.

Zhao Hai's arrangement was to keep them in the best condition. And now that casualties were happening, Zhao Hai took their corpses and kept them, not turning them into undead. On the other hand, the dead ferghana horses were turned into undead. Not only would they keep their strength, their endurance would also be improved by a lot.

As the skies turned dark, the Divine Race were also beginning to get their guards up. First was because undead creatures can display 120% of their strength during the night. Second, because the Divine Race were expecting the blood devouring mosquitoes.

They were terrified by yesterday's attack. Although they had thought about means to deal with the mosquitoes, the mere idea of the attack made them extremely uneasy.

After seeing the wave of undead retreat, Thunder Yun turned to Fei'er and said, "Fei'er, how many attacks did we receive today?"

Fei'er turned to Thunder Yun and smiled bitterly, "Forgive me master, I lost count."

Thunder Yun smiled bitterly as well, he couldn't blame Fei'er. The undead attacks that they received was just too much. Just as one ten thousand troop retreated, another would come. In this case, it would be strange if they had kept count.

After watching the sky, Thunder Yun immediately said, "Spread this order, immediately find a place to rest and arrange sentries. Have everyone be extra careful. If the blood devouring mosquitoes are indeed under the enemy's control, then they would come back this evening."

Fei'er nodded and then went to arrange it. Thunder Yun looked at the horizon with a worried look. Since their advance was slowed, Thunder Yun took the chance and observed the undead.

After looking at the teams of undead that Zhao Hai sent, Thunder Yun had discovered that there weren't a lot of them, probably about a few million. Thunder Yun was assured of this conclusion because he can see the same faces among the undead from time to time. After his calculations, Thunder Yun reckoned that there shouldn't be more than 5 million undead.

However, from the information that he acquired from Cloud Ying, Zhao Hai had a minimum of 20 million undead. He only used

5 million this time, where did the others go?

More than 10 million undead wasn't small, but they haven't appeared yet. Thunder Yun thought of the various implications of this information.

After the Divine Race army stopped, they immediately built rooms with earth magic. Thunder Yun also had a command center made. Once inside the hall, Thunder Yun had Fei'er sound the drums.

When all the generals arrived, Thunder Yun glanced at Cloud Yi and said, "Cloud Yi, sit on the third row."

Don't underestimate this change of seating, this was essentially a promotion. When Cloud Yi heard Thunder Yun, he immediately stood up and sat on the third row. Everyone in the hall looked at Cloud Yi, but nobody said anything. Cloud Yi came up with the method to restrict the harassment. Although it wasn't completely useful, it still played a big role. Getting a promotion at this time was normal.

Seeing that nobody opposed to it, Thunder Yun moved on, "Everyone should have noticed, the Ark Continent had changed from cavalry soldiers into undead. Does everybody know why?" The people in the room all frowned. Then Cloud Ying said, "There are two possibilities for this. One was coincidence, and the other is Zhao Hai knowing our plan. If it is the former, than we'll be fine. But if it is the latter, then this means that every move we make would be known to the other party. And that isn't good for our future plans."

When the generals heard this, their brows couldn't help but wrinkle. They were experienced war veterans, but since they were too preoccupied with thinking about the undead, they had missed this point. After hearing Cloud Ying, all of them immediately understood.

Although they can understand what this meant, this was still

very bad news. Knowing all of their actions wouldn't bode too well for this conquest.

Thunder Yun nodded and said, "Right, and I suspect that the second possibility is true. Our moved are under Zhao Hai's surveillance. As for his methods, I have absolutely no idea. But there is one thing worries me more." After saying that, Thunder Yun scanned the group. All of them had unclear expressions aside from three people. They were Silver Shuke, Cloud Ying, and Cloud Yi.

Thunder Yun couldn't help but nod after seeing the expression of the three. And among these three, the one who he favored the most was Cloud Yi.

Cloud Ying and Silver Shuke had fought with Zhao Hai before, so they were very clear about his strength. For them to discover the strangeness of the undead was quite normal. But Cloud Yi was different, he had not fought with Zhao Hai. In addition to his understanding now, he also managed to formulate a way to deal with the cavalry harassment. This meant that Cloud Yi had a powerful gift of observation.

However, Thunder Yun kept himself from asking Cloud Yi. He knew that if he asked Cloud Yi about this matter, then the others would think that he favored Cloud Yi and was planning to promote him even more. This wasn't good for troop morale.

Cloud Yi's promotion was because of his advice, so nobody would oppose this point. But if Thunder Yun were to blatantly give a promotion, then it would attract the envy of other people. When the time comes, Cloud Yi might even be bullied in the future, hindering his talent from growing any further."

Therefore, Thunder Yun turned to Silver Shuke and said, "Silver Shuke, tell me, did you notice anything strange about Zhao Hai's action?"



## Chapter 778 – Thunder Yun's Plan

---

Thunder Yun decided to ask Silver Shuke and not Cloud Yi. This was because in the first fight with Zhao Hai, Silver Shuke was the first to fail, and he had been feeling bad about it.

In the beginning, Thunder Yun didn't look too highly on Silver Shuke. But after these few days, Thunder Yun changed his mind. Zhao Hai really did have the strength to cause them losses. In this case, it wasn't surprising for Silver Shuke to fail.

Because of this, Thunder Yun decided to help Silver Shuke out. He used this opportunity to ask him the question, giving him some credit and making it known that Thunder Yun wanted to use him in the future.

Silver Shuke didn't expect Thunder Yun to say his name. He was stunned for a moment before a flash ran by his eyes, he immediately replied, "Yes, General. I noticed something strange."

After seeing Thunder Yun choose Silver Shuke, Cloud Ying and Cloud Yi couldn't help but have a momentary look of disappointment in their eyes. Although their faces were serious, the change didn't escape the eyes of Thunder Yun.

Thunder Yun didn't say anything, he just looked at Silver Shuke and said, "Tell me."

Silver Shuke immediately replied, "General, from what I can see, the number of undead this time isn't right. Zhao Hai has more than ten million undead, but the ones attacking us right now seem to number in the few millions. The number was just too small, and the others were nowhere to be seen. I think there are only two possibilities for this, the first one being the undead attacking our headquarters. Now that our army has departed, the forces back in the Radiant Empire wouldn't be as good compared to before. Even if they couldn't break the camp, they could at the very least cause some damage. However, we haven't had any rescue letters in the

past couple of days. This might be because the base hasn't been attacked, or they couldn't send a rescue letter. I think the former is more plausible. We still have a lot of strong soldiers in the camp, and it would be impossible for them to be unable to send a letter in case of the attack. Therefore, the base is still safe."

"The other possibility for the undead's disappearance might be because they are dealing with the barbarians and the winged pegasus people. If they could indeed see our actions, then it is possible that they are already aware of the two armies. If that is really the case, then we might be in even more trouble."

Thunder Yun nodded, Silver Shuke's analysis coincides with his own. But Thunder Yun discovered that Cloud Ying was still frowning, he probably had some words to say.

Thunder Yun looked at Cloud Ying and said, "Cloud Ying, do you have any other ideas? Say it."

Cloud Ying looked at Thunder Yun and nodded, "General, I have thought of another possibility. We know that the Demons have also come to the continent, and their fighting strength is also quite good. It's certain that the Demons would dispatch their troops once they discover that we have made out more. Zhao Hai might have brought his undead to deal with the Demons."

Thunder Yun looked at Cloud Ying, then he smiled faintly and said, "That is correct as well. However, you have missed something. Zhao Hai replaced those cavalry units with the undead. And where are those cavalry units now? It would be impossible for Zhao Hai to just have them lying around. If he can harass us, then why can't he do the same with the Demons? It's more plausible that he had the cavalry deal with the Demons while his undead goes on and attacks the barbarians and the winged pegasus people. Zhao Hai's only enemies are us and the Demons. And this time, I'm sure the Demons didn't split their army like us. They arrived in the Ark Continent much earlier than us, so they should be more experienced when it came to Zhao Hai's capabilities. And I also

heard that the Demons aren't as strong as us, therefore they couldn't afford to split up their army. At this moment, in the Buddha Empire, Zhao Hai has four groups of enemies. The strongest two of those four are us and the Demon Army, the weaker ones are the barbarians and the winged pegasus army. Zhao Hai would surely eat the weaker ones first before going to deal with us. This is his safest and most beneficial method right now."

Everyone who listened to Thunder Yun's breakdown started to believe his words. After all, Thunder Yun already had the qualifications to make speculations like these. Although he had eaten a loss lately, his status remained unchanged in the hearts of these people.

Therefore, everybody nodded at Thunder Yun's analysis, nobody voiced opposition. Cloud Ying said, "The General is right, forgive me for being wrong."

Thunder Yun just waved his hand. Although he just said that the barbarians and the winged pegasus people were going to be eliminated, he still had a calm look on his face. This made everyone confused.

Cloud Ying looked puzzled at Thunder Yun's expression, so he asked, "Isn't General worried about the barbarians and the winged pegasus army? Is the General confident in them beating Zhao Hai?"

Thunder Yun actually laughed before he answered, "How is that possible? Although I haven't we haven't had a true clash with Zhao Hai, his recent actions are already proof enough to how strong he is. How could the barbarians and winged pegasus armies be able to beat a person like him? If I haven't guessed wrong, then the barbarians should have already been eliminated while the winged pegasus army shouldn't last for long. However, this is exactly what I want."

Thunder Yun's words made everyone present stare. Some of the more intelligent among them immediately understood what Thunder Yun meant.

Thunder Yun smiled faintly and said, "Does everyone understand? Cloud Yi, tell them. You look like your ass is on fire, you tell them what I mean." As soon as they heard Thunder Yun, the group couldn't help but chuckle. The heavy emotions that they carried all this time seemed to slowly vanish.

Cloud Yi stood up and bowed to Thunder Yun before saying, "The general is talking about how vengeful both the barbarians and the winged pegasus people are. After the Divine Race subjugated them, they were still quite resistive to our rule. Therefore, when we asked them for troops this time, they initially refused. Although they gave us some troops, they only gave us two of their ordinary armies, no elites were included. But now that Zhao Hai had killed their people, these two would surely bear a grudge and send their elites over. When that time comes, we would be more relaxed in dealing with the Ark Continent."

Thunder Yun laughed and said "Good, correct. Just as Cloud Yi said, both the barbarians and winged pegasus clans bear deep grudges. They will surely retaliate against Zhao Hai now that he has killed their people. Once they send their forces, then we would have more powerful cannon fodder for our army."

The people in the hall smiled, their low morale had surged up. On the other hand, both Cloud Ying and Cloud Yi were looking at Thunder Yun with admiration. They knew that Thunder Yun's purpose today was to raise morale.

Cloud Ying also understood Thunder Yun's idea, he looked at Thunder Yun and said, "General, what do we do next?"

Thunder Yun's voice turned serious as he said, "In the last two days, the Ark Continent showed that they don't intend to go directly against us, just resorting to harassment tactics and forcing

us to be on the defense. Because of this, I plan to withdraw the troops tomorrow and see if the barbarians and winged pegasus people are indeed killed. If they are, then I will immediately send word to the two races, making them dispatch their troops. The winged pegasus mounts are insanely fast, there would be no way the mounts of the Ark Continent's cavalry would catch up to them. Moreover, the barbarian elites are vastly stronger than the people in the Ark Continent. As long as the elites come, then we can deal with the Ark Continent in one go!"

If Thunder Yun hadn't said his plan, then the morale might've drop when he suggested retreat. But since he made a cushion for himself, the situation became different. Now, instead of dropping, the moral actually increased. Those present were thinking that their retreat this time was done in order for them to mount an even stronger attack. They had been feeling suffocated from the attacks coming from the Ark Continent. Now, they couldn't wait to go all out, this was the result that Thunder Yun wanted.

Being a good General doesn't only depend on how many wins one can get, it also depends on how one deals with their adversary. Cloud Ying and Cloud Yin knew that if they were in Thunder Yun's shoes, then they wouldn't have a spectacular result as this. There were some times where a strategic defeat meant losing. But their retreat this time was different, they would retreat only because they were preparing to launch a better attack.

An example of this happened in the civil war after the Sino-Japanese war. It was when the party had to give up the headquarters at Yan'an. This might look like a big defeat. But this retreat had conserved the party's strength. Moreover, it didn't affect their morale at all. In the end, this move was marked as the party sacrificing Yan'an in order to acquire the whole of China.

# Chapter 779 – Thunder Yun’s Discovery

---

Naturally, Zhao Hai didn’t know about Thunder Yun’s plan to withdraw their troops. But even if he did know, he still wouldn’t let Thunder Yun off. After all, his hatred for the Divine Race was too deep, as long as he gets to kill them, then he would do it.

Therefore, after darkness comes, he would immediately release the blood devouring mosquitoes; half to the Divine Race and half to the Demons. At the same time, he also had the cavalry and undead prepared for another wave of attacks

.Zhao Hai looked at the sky, the Divine Race have pitched camp and their officers met up. It was time, Zhao Hai immediately sent the mosquitoes towards the Divine Race camp.

Thunder Yun and the others were currently discussing about their retreat when suddenly Fei’er came in from the outside. His face was ugly as he reported, “Master, the blood devouring mosquitoes have appeared.”

After hearing Fei’er, Thunder Yun’s expression changed. What he was worried about came true, the blood devouring mosquitoes were indeed under the enemy’s control. Moreover, their numbers are quite large.

However, this wasn’t the time to think about these, he immediately said, “Give the orders, do what I said earlier. Three people will form one group. Tell them not to panic. It’s possible that the enemy would use his undead to attack. Everyone, return to your divisions.”

Although they were just laughing earlier, at this time, orders were orders. Everyone immediately gave a shout before turning around and leaving.

After seeing the group walk out, Thunder Yun stood up as well. He took his wooden pole and then turned around to Fei’er and

said, “Fei’er, gather your people. We’ll make the Ark Continent’s people experience how powerful our lightning abilities are.” Fei’er nodded, then he took up his own wooden pole and followed Thunder Yun outward.

When they reached outside, they immediately saw a scene similar to yesterday. The blood devouring mosquitoes were constantly shooting down from the skies and attacking the camp. Thunder Yun snorted as he waved his pole, a flash of light came and a bunch of mosquitoes in front of him disappeared into ash. What Thunder Yun didn’t notice was the same mosquitoes reappearing in the sky above him and continued on their attack.

At this time, Fei’er had also gathered the other giants. All of them had their poles with them as they lined up and muttered incantations. Tiny sparks of lightning started to appear on their bodies, the sparks got stronger and stronger before each giant was covered in lightning. It was at this moment when Fei’er said, “Attack!”

And just as his voice fell, the lightning on each Giant arched towards the mosquitoes, jumping from one mosquito to another. Those who were hit by the attack were instantaneously turned to ash.

With Fei’er and the other giants controlling the lightning, it meandered all throughout the Divine Race camp, killing a large number of mosquitoes with each go. However, just as soon as they died, the mosquitoes reappeared and then continued on with their attack.

Naturally, it was impossible for the giants to control their lightning for a long time. Soon enough, the net of lightning vanished in mid air. On the other hand, it seemed like the number of mosquitoes remained unaffected.

While Fei’er and the others were doing their attack, Thunder Yun took the time to observe the blood devouring mosquitoes. He

always had this strange feeling. He led his 20 million army yesterday and eliminated all of the blood devouring mosquitoes. They worked very hard, and even if they suffered casualties, they removed all of the mosquitoes that came. However, the disappearance of the mosquitoes' corpses seemed to nag him in the back of his mind.

Because of this, he decided to focus on the blood devouring mosquitoes, he wanted to see some clues. Just as the giants' lightning net eliminated a swathe of mosquitoes, another large clump appeared in the air.

Thunder Yun couldn't help but be surprised when he saw this. In order to make sure that he wasn't seeing things, he concentrated on the lightning net. After the net eradicated the mosquitoes, a blood devouring mosquito suddenly appeared from where it vanished. It looks as if they weren't killed at all.

This startled Thunder Yun, his forehead dropping a cold sweat. He knew that this situation would only happen in two occasions; First, when a mosquito has a spatial teleportation ability. However, Thunder Yun couldn't detect any spatial fluctuations, so this possibility is void.

Another possibility was that these blood devouring mosquitoes can actually resurrect!

Resurrection! This isn't a strange name in the Divine Realm. There were several magic beasts with this ability. If one wanted to kill these creatures, then one needed to ensure that every single part of it was gone, including each drop of blood. Otherwise, any of their parts would be able to attach to another magic beast, absorbing their life force before completely resurrecting themselves. Although their strengths would be affected, nobody in the Divine Realm would want to offend any beast that had this ability. With no way to completely eliminate them, stirring trouble with these creatures would be a very bad idea.



But from the looks of it, these blood devouring mosquitoes seem to have more than just resurrection. Thunder Yun can see that the blood devouring mosquitoes today were stronger than those yesterday, at least twice as strong. And if they can regenerate, then it meant that these weren't blood devouring mosquitoes.

After thinking about it,, Thunder Yun observed the mosquitoes more carefully. He wanted to see if the attacks of these mosquitoes were the same as those he had seen in the Divine Realm.

However, after looking for a long time, he couldn't find any differences on these blood devouring mosquitoes. Therefore, there is only one explanation for this, these mosquitoes were a variant species of the blood devouring mosquitoes.

At the thought of this, Thunder Yun let out a sigh of relief. He wasn't afraid of these regenerating mosquitoes. Since these mosquitoes can regenerate, then it meant that those yesterday could regenerate as well. No wonder those mosquitoes were very hard to deal with, they actually had the ability to regenerate.

But in the end, the mosquitoes yesterday were still eliminated. This means that the number of times these mosquitoes gets resurrected was not endless.

Thunder Yun felt relieved, however, he didn't spread the information about the resurrecting abilities of the mosquitoes. One must know that the mere thought of a resurrecting beast would cause anxiety on any Divine Realm resident. If he spread the word out, then he would be causing unnecessary decrease in troop morale.

After Fei'er and the other Giants ran out of energy to do their attacks, Fei'er returned to Thunder Yun's side. Fei'er didn't follow Thunder Yun for a day or two, so when he saw Thunder Yun standing there, he knew that his Master was observing the blood devouring mosquitoes. Naturally, he wouldn't disturb Thunder Yun and so he gave him time to analyze their enemy.

At this time, an explosion was suddenly heard in the distance. This sound sobered Thunder Yun, he looked at the direction of the sound as he said, “As I expected, this Zhao Hai is really difficult to deal with.”

Fei’er naturally understood Thunder Yun. Not only was Zhao Hai using the blood devouring mosquitoes, he also took the time to add the undead as well.

Fei’er turned to Thunder Yun and said, “Master, what do we do now?”

Thunder Yun sighed and said, “We endure, we have no other ways to deal with them right now. This is also the reason why I decided to make a retreat. The enemy just has too many things to use against us, way more than I expected. We have to go back and rethink about how to deal with them.”

Fei’er turned silent. After being with Thunder Yun for all these years, this was the first time that he heard Thunder Yun say this. From Thunder Yun’s tone was a hint of helplessness. This aspect had always been absent on Thunder Yun, before, yet it appeared right now.

This made Fei’er even more curious about Zhao Hai. He wanted to know what kind of person this Zhao Hai really was. How could he be this consistent that he even had Thunder Yun retreat? This person was just too strong, can one man really do all of these?

Although Fei’er was thinking about these, he didn’t stop and stare. If Thunder Yun were to see Fei’er’s face right now, he would be surprised. Fei’er’s eyes were so bright that he must have been thinking about great things. The first time Fei’er was like this was when he was going all out against the invading Divine Race army.

The attacks from the mosquitoes and undead kept coming. Although they had already thought about ways to deal with the mosquitoes, they were yet to think about how to deal with the undead. The attacks of the undead were really fast. Moreover, with

the attacks from the mosquitoes, those in the outskirts of the army had their consciousness split into two. They were keeping eyes on the mosquitoes while also taking note of the constant wave of javelin attacks coming towards them.

Because of the method that Thunder Yun made yesterday, the lethality of the mosquitoes has been greatly reduced. Although the blood devouring mosquitoes were promoted, the casualties that they caused had become smaller. While the mosquitoes were attacking, one Divine Race soldier would support his Domain, one would focus on killing the mosquitoes, and one would rest and get ready to rotate.

But even so, casualties couldn't be avoided. The coordination between the javelins of the undead and the mosquitoes caused more deaths compared to last night.

## Chapter 780 – Demon Dragon King's Worry

---

The Demon Dragon King looked at Rising Sun City and thought of all the Demons that had died. After seeing Zhao Hai's move, the Demon Dragon King already knew about its purpose. To be honest, Zhao Hai's harassment tactics really gave the Demon Dragon King a headache.

Although Zhao Hai's harassment didn't take too much off of their numbers, he did greatly slow their advance. When the Demon Dragon King arrived at Rising Sun City, it was already late afternoon, the skies were proceeding to turn dark. However, nobody was in Rising Sun City.

The most troublesome thing for the Demon Dragon King right now was that he was afraid of splitting his troops. From what he had counted, Zhao Hai had sent a couple million cavalry units to harass them today. If the Demon Dragon King split his troops, then the only outcome that would happen is them being dominated by Zhao Hai.

Because of this, the Demon Dragon King decided to stay in a single clump. And since Zhao Hai only used his undead in their previous battle, the Demon Dragon King didn't know about the general strength of the Ark Continent's troops. The information that they had collected in the past stated that the people of the Ark Continent were quite weak, they were not an opponent for the Demon Race.

But in the recent time, the Demon Dragon King received information that Zhao Hai had potions that can make anyone into a 9th rank expert in short time. The Demon Dragon King was quite doubtful of this report. But after seeing the cavalry units, the Demon Dragon King finally believed that Zhao Hai really did have a way to drastically improve one's strength.

This made the Demon Dragon King worried. The reason why the

Demons were confident in conquering the Ark Continent was because their soldiers were far stronger compared to those in the continent. Additionally, the Demons also had large amounts of God rank experts. But now that the Ark Continent can promote their strength, the advantage of the Demon Army has been nullified. Additionally, Zhao Hai had items that can injure God-rank experts. Because of these reasons, it would be difficult for the Demon Race to conquer the Ark Continent in a short period of time. Being in competition with the Divine Race didn't help either.

The Demon Dragon King couldn't help but feel his confidence drop after being faced with the cavalry attacks. He didn't know how Zhao Hai managed to make his potions. After all, these potions weren't only good for the Ark Continent, it was good for the Demon Race as well.

The Demon Dragon King even had Demon researchers study the two potions. However, the answers that they gave him was disappointing. The researchers told him that the 8th rank potion was just a bottle of water while the 9th rank potion was the blood of an unknown magic beast. The 9th rank potion wasn't a potion at all!

Upon receiving the result, the Demon Dragon King couldn't help but frown. He hadn't heard of a water that can make someone 8th rank, even the Elves' life liquid couldn't do this. The blood that can make people 9th rank was even more mysterious. If a magic beast who had blood like that existed, there would be no way for Zhao Hai to tame it. More importantly, it would be impossible for that creature to have enough blood to feed the Ark Continent's army.

As the matter stands, the Demon Dragon King gained nothing in this study. He was still stuck in looking for ways to deal with Zhao Hai.

After looking at Rising Sun City, the Demon Dragon King sighed and said, "We rest here tonight. Inform everyone to set up camp." Those around him gave a nod and proceeded to spread the order.

The efficiency of the Demon Race wasn't any slower than the Divine Race. Additionally, they were using the same methods as the Divine Race. Because of this, it didn't take too long before the Demons had finished making their camp.

After the camps were set up, the Demon Dragon King went to his own room and met with other God rank experts from different clans. The Demon Dragon King looked at those present and said, "We have finally arrived at Rising Sun City. However, Zhao Hai's methods are giving us huge problems. Moreover, their soldiers had underwent a huge promotion of strength. Conquering the Ark Continent in a short time is proving to be difficult. I have already reported this matter to the Great Demon King. What we need to do right now is to wait for some clashes between Zhao Hai and the Divine Race, when that happens, we'll go out and capture some important places for ourselves. Then we'll hold those places and wait for the Great Demon King's arrival."

The group didn't have anything to say, they were also annoyed by the constant attacks that they went through today. They couldn't do anything, their cavalry units weren't as quick as the enemy. Even God-rank experts couldn't catch up. In this case, the Demon Dragon King's method was the best plan for them.

Seeing that nobody gave their own ideas, the Demon Dragon King continued, "Zhao Hai has changed his tactics, and their strength is no weaker than us. The only thing we could do is to steadily advance while capturing more cities. However, I expect Zhao Hai to make it harder for us to advance. Make sure to have your men be alert at all times, we can't be careless at this time."

The group loudly accepted the Demon Dragon King's command before then turned around to leave. However, what the Demon Dragon King didn't expect was the cavalry attacks stopping when evening came.

The Demon Dragon King became more relieved as the skies turned darker. This was because the skies of the Demon Realm

were darker than the Ark Continent. The Demons were more suited to fight in the dark, so the Demon Dragon King wasn't afraid of anything.

After establishing their defense, the Demon Dragon King went on to take a rest. Him and Thunder Yun had similar methods. At the same time, the Demon Dragon King also came to encounter the same scenario that Thunder Yun had.

A humming sound awakened the Demon Dragon King. He stared for a moment before he quickly sat up. This was because he felt that this sound was quite familiar. However, even though he felt it familiar, he still couldn't remember what it was.

The Demon Dragon King was a very cautious person, he immediately gave an order, "What is that humming noise? Go and check!" The guard outside immediately responded, footsteps were heard as the guard went away.

Before long, that same guard came running back, and with a panicked voice he said, "Your Highness, large quantities of devil mosquitoes are outside. It looks like an enormous swarm!"

The Demon Dragon King's expression completely melted. He finally remembered where he heard this humming noise. It was an experience he didn't want to remember. Before the Demon Dragon King became God-rank, he was just an ordinary person among the Vile Demon Race. He wandered all throughout the Demon Realm, wanting to quickly improve his strength. At that time, he had several friends travelling with him. They entered a famed dangerous area in the Demon Realm, wanting to explore it. However, they didn't expect to see a mosquito swarm living there. The Demon Dragon King only escaped because of his luck, all of his friends weren't as fortunate.

He could clearly remember the clump of mosquitoes that was enough to blot out the entire sky. At that time, he was extremely terrified as he ran for his pitiful life. All those friends that he had

tried to fight their way out, but in the end, they were swallowed by the mosquito swarm. The Demon Dragon King still had nightmares about that event up to this day.

The Demon Dragon King immediately ran out of the door before he shouted loudly. “How can there be devil mosquitoes here? How can those mosquitoes appear in the Ark Continent? Quick, ring the alarm!!” With his order, the alarm quickly rang out. The melodious ring of the bell seemed very alarming in this dark night. The entire Demon Army immediately sprang out, ready to take action.

The Demon Dragon King looked at the blood devouring mosquitoes in the sky. His expression was very difficult to describe, he didn’t expect devil mosquitoes to appear in the Ark Continent.

At this time, experts from different clans arrived by the Demon Dragon King’s side. Their expression were quite ugly as well, they didn’t know what to say. After a short while, a Demon opened his mouth, “How can devil mosquitoes appear here? If they existed, how can the Ark Continent still survive?”

The Demon Dragon King had already calmed himself, he replied, “I recall reading something from our information of the Ark Continent. There is a record about mosquitoes called blood devouring mosquitoes. At that time, there was a small flock of them in the Ark Continent. In order to suppress them, a lot of 9th rank experts went on to drive them away from the mainland. But I didn’t think that those blood devouring mosquitoes would be the Devil Mosquitoes that we now of. Let everyone be extra careful. Everyone should know about devil mosquitoes and how terrifying they are.”

The group nodded before they turned and left. Just as the meeting was finished, the blood devouring mosquitoes started their attack, plunging the whole Demon Army into chaos.



However, this was also the time where the Demons have shown how resolute they were. The Demons went on and killed the mosquitoes wave by wave. And once a Demon knew that he would not survive, he would fly up to the distance and blow himself up, taking a huge clump of mosquitoes from the surroundings.

The Demon Dragon King looked at these explosions in pain. As the first explosion sounded out, more and more Demons started to blow themselves up.

At this time, a different kind of explosion was heard. The Demon Dragon King stared for a moment before his expression turned ugly. He knew what this explosion was, this was from the Ark Continent's javelins.

After hearing the explosions, the Demon Dragon King knew that the Ark Continent's people had used this opportunity to attack. What made the Demon Dragon King worried wasn't this attack, but instead the fact that the people from the Ark Continent weren't worried about the mosquitoes.

If they weren't scared, then this only meant one thing, the devil mosquitoes wouldn't attack them. And the reason for this was because the mosquitoes were under their control.

The Demon Dragon King knew about how terrifying these devil mosquitoes were, if the Ark Continent can indeed control them, then this wouldn't be good news for the Demon Race.

Another thing that worried the Demon Dragon King was the strength of the devil mosquitoes. They weren't weaker than the ones he encountered in the Demon Realm. The Demon Army was in a very dangerous position!

# Chapter 781 – A Night of Loss, Two Choices

---

Zhao Hai was currently sitting inside the Space looking at the state of the Demons and the Divine Race. He didn't know whether the Demons or the Divine Race would retreat or not.

Zhao Hai knew that tonight's attack would be regarded as the largest attack he'd made to both the Demons and the Divine Race. With the mosquitoes and the cavalry attacking together, Zhao Hai believed that the damages caused this evening wouldn't be small.

However, Zhao Hai's work was actually much easier this time. He just had the javelins and other supplies dropped off on a single place not far from the camps of both the Demons and the Divine Race. The amount that he took out was more than enough. Even if the cavalry and the undead attack non-stop, the supply wouldn't run out.

What Zhao Hai wanted to see was the reactions of the two parties when it came to the blood devouring mosquitoes. What he saw was interesting, both Demons and Divine Race knew about the mosquitoes, this confused him.

Originally, Zhao Hai thought that the blood devouring mosquitoes were native to the Ark Continent. But when he saw the Divine Race say the name of the blood devouring mosquitoes, he knew that they also existed in the Divine Realm. Moreover, they even had the same name.

More surprisingly, the Demons also knew about the mosquitoes. However, their name was different, they called the mosquitoes devil mosquitoes. This made Zhao Hai curious. He knew that the Demon Realm had an environment completely different compared to the Ark Continent and the Divine Realm. Moreover, even though the Demon Realm had variant versions of the Ark Continent's magic beasts, Zhao Hai can tell from the Demon Dragon King's words that the blood devouring mosquitoes and the

devil mosquitoes were the same.

The blood devouring mosquitoes existed in three realms, what does this mean? Zhao Hai couldn't help but frown, he planned to study it when there is time.

Zhao Hai didn't want any more trouble. At this time, Zhao Hai had a constant sense of crisis. Not to talk about the Demons and the Divine Race, the appearance of the immortal cultivator made Zhao Hai look seriously into his current state.

The strange circumstance circulating the blood devouring mosquitoes made Zhao Hai think of his problems. He wanted to see if the mosquitoes also had a connection in the immortal cultivation realm.

As Zhao Hai was juggling his thoughts, the Demons and the Divine Race were continuing their heated war against the blood devouring mosquitoes. The Demons had a bigger loss this time. The Demon army had 8th ranks among their numbers. After being subjected to hundreds of mosquito attacks, these 8th ranks simply didn't have any chance to escape. In the end, most of them chose to blow themselves up.

When faced with ordinary blood devouring mosquitoes, this move might be very useful. However, the mosquitoes that they faced belonged to Zhao Hai's Space. When these mosquitoes die, they just be resurrected. The sacrifice made by the Demons were made utterly useless.

Majority of the Demon deaths were 8th ranks, but this still satisfied Zhao Hai. The 8th rank Demons were still quite a threat. Although they might not be a match against the Ark Continent's 9th rank soldiers, their self-explosions were still very lethal.

But even then, the undead and the cavalry units were still able to bring damages to the two parties. Although the javelins would kill some mosquitoes, the consequence was not that heavy. After all, the mosquitoes can be released once more after 24 hours, so Zhao

Hai wasn't hurt too much about the collateral damage.

The battle lasted the entire night. The Divine Race's losses had reached an astonishing 300 thousand. Meanwhile, the Demons lost more than 500 thousand troops. It can be said that the damages were quite heavy. When dawn came, the number of mosquitoes have been reduced by a certain degree, only stragglers here and there remained. At the same time, Zhao Hai also ordered the undead and the cavalry units to retreat.

After the Demons and the Divine Race counted their losses, their expressions weren't too good. Thunder Yun immediately convened the generals inside his room, he looked at them and said, "It seems like Zhao Hai has yet to eradicate the barbarians and the winged pegasus armies. Otherwise, he would have sent them last night, causing us even more losses. This is the second batch of mosquitoes that Zhao Hai had sent in two days. It has become obvious that the mosquitoes are under the Ark Continent's control. Zhao Hai might not be the one controlling them, but we can be sure that someone from the continent can. We'll return to the Radiant Empire for now. We need to ask for ways to repel those mosquitoes. Otherwise, we will have even more casualties."

The group naturally wouldn't oppose to this, but Cloud Ying couldn't help but say, "I think we need to send word towards the Barbarian and Winged Pegasus clans. Make it known to them that their kin has been killed. Even if Zhao Hai didn't completely wipe them out, he still managed to kill some number of them, the two clans would still send some elites over. At the same time, when the repellants for the mosquitoes arrive, we can resume our attack on the Ark Continent. At that time, I will personally shred Zhao Hai."

Cloud Ying shared this sentiment with the other Divine Race generals. In the many conquests that the Divine Race had in the lower realms, this was the first time that they had lost this much. Although they had lost a lot back in the God of Thunder's Realm, the losses to the other party was much more. But this time, the Ark

Continent barely lost anyone. To the arrogant Divine Race, this was a completely unacceptable situation.

Thunder Yun looked at the group and said, “Send this order. Rest for two hours, after that, we return to the Radiant Empire. We don’t want to get entangled with the undead any longer.”

The group all nodded before they turned and left.

After the others walked out, Thunder Yun relaxed. He turned his head to Fei’er and said, “Fei’er, have you noticed something strange with those blood devouring mosquitoes?”

Fei’er’ had a confused expression as he said, “Strange? Aren’t they just the normal blood devouring mosquitoes? Although they are stronger than the ones in the Divine Realm, they aren’t very numerous.”

Thunder Yun smiled and said, “You don’t think that those mosquitoes aren’t a lot? The blood devouring mosquitoes that we met last time are obviously not the same as the ones we met today. Why is this?”

Fei’er looked puzzled at Thunder Yun, “Master, to be honest, I didn’t notice it.”

Thunder Yun smiled bitterly and said, “I can’t blame you, not everyone noticed it. The Ark Continent’s blood devouring mosquitoes can regenerate. Moreover, it seems like instant regeneration. The number of times seem to surpass 25!”

When Fei’er heard Thunder Yun, he couldn’t help but stare. His complexion changed as she said, “Regeneration? Master, those mosquitoes can regenerate? How is that possible? If those mosquitoes are that terrifying, then the Ark Continent would have been completely eradicated by now.”

Thunder Yun smiled faintly and said, “It’s true. I observed those mosquitoes closely and reached this conclusion. It doesn’t matter matter how the Ark Continent managed to control them, the

important thing is that those mosquitoes aren't good news. We must be more careful from now on."

Fei'er nodded and didn't say anything. At this time, the camp outside had regained its peace. Thunder Yun gave out a sigh and said, "Alright, you go and take a rest. Don't forget, we need to retreat in two hours."

Fei'er nodded, then he walked out. But after he walked out, Fei'er looked back at Thunder Yun's room before a flash of light appeared on his eyes. It seems like he was thinking about something that Thunder Yun didn't know about.

The Demons had a fairly similar situation as the Divine Race. They had lost almost twice as much as the Divine Race. For an army of several tens of millions, this number might not be strong. However, the circumstance of the deaths made the difference. In just one night, the Demons had lost seven hundred thousand troops. This was something unfathomable even to the Demon Dragon King.

The Demon Dragon King was currently inside his room, thinking about whether he would make a retreat or not. They had lost too many people just this evening. Although majority of the deaths were 8th ranks, the number was just too much. If the Demons weren't hardened fighters, then some Demons might have deserted the army.

The Demon Dragon King was frowning as he sat there. This loss was something that he couldn't ignore. The more worrying matter was the possibility that the Ark Continent's people were controlling the devil mosquitoes.

After pondering about it for some time, the Demon Dragon King decided to hold the retreat for now. They would advance in steady steps. He knew that even if they were to retreat, the Ark Continent's people would still go on and harass them. When the time comes, not only would they gain nothing, they would even be

forced to be in a passive situation.

However, this didn't mean that they didn't need support. The Demon Dragon King already sent people back to the Demon Realm to report on the Demon Army's state. At the same time, he asked the troops back at their base to make some repellents against the mosquitoes.

In the Divine Realm and the Demon Realm, their description of the mosquitoes was different from the Ark Continent. In the continent, the mosquitoes were just a one-time disaster. After they were eliminated, they didn't pop out once more. Therefore, the mosquitoes only existed in the Ark Continent's writings.

However, mosquitoes were a constant disaster in the Demon and the Divine Realm. Therefore, research had been made in order to deal with them. It was only because they didn't expect to see mosquitoes in the Ark Continent that the Demons and the Divine Race didn't bring any repellents.

## Chapter 782 – What Zhao Hai Doesn't Know

---

Zhao Hai calmly looked at the monitor. He didn't think that the Divine Race would retreat, it was actually out of his expectations. Zhao Hai couldn't help but stare when he saw the Divine Race pack their things and heading the opposite direction after their two hour rest. Seeing them retreat, Zhao Hai decided to not send the undead after them. It was best to give more time to Lizzy and Megan. As long as the two women had time, they can completely eliminate the winged pegasus cavalry. When that time comes, Zhao Hai's strength would dramatically increase. Also, after seeing the Divine Race retreat, Zhao Hai can now focus solely on the Demons.

Zhao Hai needed time, he wanted the Demons to retreat as well. If the Demons retreat, then Zhao Hai would gain even more time. The first batch of God ranked undead have already finished and the pagoda had started with the second batch. At the same time, another God-rank potion was on the way. As long as there was time, Zhao Hai's side would become much better.

But to Zhao Hai's disappointment, the Demons didn't retreat. Unlike the Divine Race who retreated after resting for two hours, the Demons rested for 5 hours before leaving Rising Sun City, pushing forward into the Buddha Empire.

After seeing this, Zhao Hai couldn't help but knit his brows. His expectation for the Demon Army's retreat was even more than the Divine Race seeing how cautious they had been lately. But who would've thought that the opposite happened, the Divine Race retreated while the Demons pushed on.

While looking at the Demon Army, Zhao Hai coldly snorted. He was still monitoring the Divine Race, however, he didn't send more attacks. He wanted the Divine Race to retreat, and he didn't want to enrage them even more. He was afraid that the Divine Race would get angry and reverse their decision. After all, when



enough time passes, Zhao Hai would be able to clean them up in one fell swoop.

On the other hand, the Demons actually went forward. In two days, they would meet with Lizzy and Megan's group, and that wouldn't be good.

Now that the Divine Race was gone, Zhao Hai can reallocated his undead to deal with the Demons. These undead made the Demon advance even more difficult. They needed to delay the Demons and make time for Lizzy and Megan to eliminate the winged pegasus cavalry.

After the Demons left Rising Sun City, Zhao Hai noticed that they had left some people behind. Zhao Hai immediately knew that the Demon advance this time was meant to occupy the Buddha Empire's cities.

Altogether, the Demons have left 1 million troops inside Rising Sun City, a thousand of them being God-rank experts. At the same time, a constant stream of Demons can be seen going from Demon City to Rising Sun City.

Upon seeing this, Zhao Hai's expression couldn't help but change. With his current resources, he wouldn't be able to reclaim Rising Sun City. If he decided to attack the city, the Demons from Demon City will go forward as support. When that time comes, a clash would happen, this wasn't something that Zhao Hai wanted.

However, Zhao Hai wasn't too worried. After all, he didn't have much power in his hands. As soon as Lizzy and Megan finishes their action, the majority of the undead would be available once more.

The Demon Dragon King had discovered that their current assailants didn't comprise of only cavalry units, there were undead mixed in as well. These undead were very difficult to deal with. The bows and throwing weapons that the Demons had were less lethal to the undead. On the other hand, the javelins thrown by the

undead were a huge threat to the Demon Army.

To be honest, the Demon Dragon King was quite curious about Zhao Hai's javelins. In their previous battles, Zhao Hai didn't use it. Now that Zhao Hai had changed his tactics, these javelin were used. The Demon Dragon King wondered why.

This wooden javelin wasn't simple. One could see that they were crudely made, however, their lethality couldn't be underestimated.

The Demon Dragon King couldn't help but rub his temples. Although he planned to grab some land while Zhao Hai battles it out with the Divine Race, his current losses was something he didn't hope for.

And after they left the city, they were attacked by javelins once more. All of these gave the Demon Dragon King a headache.

While Zhao Hai was busy dealing with the Demons, he wasn't aware of the changes in another place. In the Northern Icefield, there was a huge spatial rift that was constantly releasing undead. When they came out of the rift, the undead went about and explored the icefield. They only remained undetected because the icefield was just too big.

However, the undead quickly found the volcano as well as the stone city. Soon, more and more undead went towards that direction as even more undead came out of the rift.

At this point, a large sea of undead was starting to head towards the Beastman Prairie. These undead were tirelessly going forward. The ice and winds were completely useless against them. In a few day's time, they would be setting foot on the prairie.

Naturally, Zhao Hai and the others didn't know about this. At the same time, they were also unaware about another small rift appearing in an island not too far from the Radiant Empire. This rift was smaller and there were no creatures going out of it.

However, this rift would surely have an impact on the Ark Continent in the future.

Zhao Hai didn't know about any of these, his thoughts were currently on the enemies in front of him, the Demons and the Divine Race. Now that the Divine Race was heading back to the Radiant Empire, Zhao Hai only had the Demons to worry about.

Lizzy and Megan had prepared for three days in order to deal with the winged pegasus army. However, Zhao Hai didn't worry too much. He knew that they would take action quite soon. At the same time, the God rank potion would be completed in one day.

Meanwhile, Zhao Hai was very surprised at the Demon Army. He didn't stop harassing the Demons both day and night. Moreover, with the use of the mosquitoes, the losses to the Demon Army had reached an additional 1 million. But even with this, the Demons didn't retreat. Conversely, even with their slow pace, they continued on. This action made Zhao Hai admire the Demon Race. Zhao Hai sent forces to attack them all the time, however, they kept going forward even if they knew that every step they make would cause them to bleed out.

Zhao Hai didn't understand why the Demons continued on. After the days of being attacked, the Demons were looking very exhausted. They didn't have a good time to rest and eat. However, they still kept on moving forward.

Zhao Hai didn't know that the reason for this was simple. The Demons didn't retreat because Zhao Hai has yet to use his main army. This made the Demons think that he was still in battle with the Divine Race. If they don't use this opportunity to occupy land, then they won't be able to do it in the future.

Although the Demons had sent some scouts, those people didn't dare to get too close to the Divine Race. Moreover, after Thunder Yun saw that Zhao Hai didn't harass them, he decided to slow their retreat, allowing more time to rest. At the same time, he also used

this time to get familiar with the surroundings.

The Demons had more information coming from their scouts near the Radiant Empire. Seeing that the main army was still absent, they were unaware of the retreat. If they knew that the Divine Race had turned back, the Demon Dragon King would surely stop the army from going forward.

A day passed and another God-rank potion has been made. However, Zhao Hai didn't use it. He was waiting for one more potion to be made before handing them over to Blockhead and Rockhead.

Blockhead and Rockhead were twins that had a mysterious way of coordinating with one another. If Zhao Hai decided to promote one before the other, then he may risk disrupting this coordination. Because of this, Zhao Hai chose to promote them at the same time.

It can be said that some of Zhao Hai's fears were unwarranted, but he wasn't in a hurry about this matter. After all, Blockhead and Rockhead would be Demigods after promotion, so they wouldn't be a great help anyway. Waiting for a few days wouldn't affect anything too much.

Time passed by and another day came. This was the fifth day after the Demons decided to dispatch their troops. They were still advancing but their losses had now surpassed 3 million, a tenth of their original number. Additionally, after passing by another two cities, more than 2 million troops were left behind. It can be said that the Demon Army was now cut down by a fifth.

Zhao Hai had to recognize the tenacity of the Demon Race. However, he knew that the Demon army's luck was soon to run out. This was because Lizzy and Megan had already taken care of the winged pegasus cavalry. With this, Zhao Hai was back to using his full strength.

# Chapter 783 – The Divine Realm’s Situation

---

Lizzy and Megan were both sitting and talking inside the living room. However, Zhao Hai was nowhere in sight. He was currently busying himself with the Demon Race. Zhao Hai had Megan and Lizzy rest well after they eliminated the winged pegasus army. Now that the two were resting, Zhao Hai took the job and commanded the undead and the cavalry in the meantime.

Lizzy looked at the weary Demons in the monitor and couldn't help but smile, "It looks like Brother Hai really made them suffer in the past few days. Look at how exhausted every one of them looked." Laura gave out a hmph, "You haven't seen Brother Hai. He was monitoring the Demons non-stop, he's quite tired as well. If you dealt with the winged pegasus sooner, he would have more time to rest."

Megan smiled and said, "Sister Laura, we already did our best. After all, we need to take care of every single winged pegasus soldier." Laura snorted and said, "Alright. Go call people from those two races, let's ask them about the Divine Race's situation."

Since Laura had been managing Zhao Hai's affairs for the longest time, she had the highest status among the women. Lizzy didn't hesitate and immediately called a heavy cavalry soldier and a winged pegasus soldier. This was also done according to Zhao Hai's instruction. When the two races were turned into undead, some of them were made into advanced ones so that they could ask them questions.

The barbarian soldier was tall and big, they were even taller compared to average Beastmen. On the other hand, the winged pegasus person was not that huge. Moreover, they look quite slender, resembling the Elves. However, instead of long ears, the winged pegasus people had two wings as ears, with long feathers on each tip.

Lizzy and the others curiously looked at the two people. After some time, Lizzy looked at the barbarian soldier and said, “What is your race? Are you from the Divine Race?”

The heavy cavalry soldier replied, “Answering the madam. We are called the Barbarians. We aren’t from the Divine Race, instead, our plane was invaded with the Divine Race. Whenever the Divine Race goes into war, they would send us.”

Lizzy nodded, then she asked once more, “Are the other people in your race as powerful as you? How many of you are there?” Barbarian Ding shook his head and said, “Back at home, we are only considered to be second-rate soldiers. The real elite of our race has yet to set out. Our race’s elites are all 9th ranks. We also have our Golden Horn division made up of God ranked experts. However, their numbers aren’t large, only about 50 thousand people. All in all, our race has about 10 million elite troops. As for second-rate soldiers like us, I don’t know how many there are.” Lizzy and the others couldn’t help but inhale cold air. They didn’t expect the barbarians to be this strong. If they didn’t have a few God-ranks, then the Divine Race might not have been able to conquer their plane.

After thinking about it for some time, Lizzy said, “Will your people send more troops? You lost too many people this time. Will your people help the Divine Race? Is your relationship with the Divine Race good?” Barbarian Ding replied, “Replying to the madam. Our relationship with the Divine Race isn’t very good. We might send our troops, but the most we can send out are our elites. The Golden Horn division rarely sets out. Since the madame have killed us, the clan would surely send some people for revenge.”

Lizzy and the to others frowned. They didn’t expect this thing to happen. At this time, Megan couldn’t wait as she turned to the winged pegasus soldier and said, “How about you? What is your race? And how is your race’s relationship with the Divine Race?”

The winged pegasus soldier replied, “Answering the madam. We

are the winged pegasus race. Our relationship with the Divine Race is roughly the same as the Barbarians. We also listen to them but we don't worship their existence. At the same time, our clan would also be sending troops in order to avenge us."

Lizzy and Megan smiled bitterly, they didn't think that there would be more enemies coming over. Laura didn't think about it too much as he looked at the winged pegasus soldier and said, "What is your name? And how many people does your race have? How strong are you?" The winged pegasus person answered, "Replying to the madam. My name is Zhan. My troops are in the middle of our race's strength. Above us are the elite army with 10 million troops. We also have the Silverwing Division composed of 100 thousand God-ranks."

Everybody smiled bitterly upon hearing this. The Divine Race already had a lot of God-ranks. Now, there are also 100 thousand God-rank winged pegasus soldiers. If the Barbarians and the Winged Pegasus clan decided to send their best troops, then the Ark Continent would be in trouble.

Lizzy forced a smile and said, "How about those giants, do you know what race they belong to?"

Winged Pegasus Zhan nodded, "I do. They are people from the Thunder clan. Their faith lied on the Thunder Beast. Their wooden poles are totems used to worship the thunder beast. However, nobody has seen an actual thunder beast. Their totems can summon incarnations of the thunder beast. Their race is very strong, not only are they physically powerful, their totems also allowed them to cast multiple spells. I heard that when the Divine Race went on to conquer the Thunder Realm, they lost a lot of men doing so. Later on, they carried on a massacre in the Thunder Realm, shocking the entire Thunder Clan. In the end, the plane was given to the God of Thunder, General Thunder Yun. Thunder Yun is the commander of the Divine Race army, the Thunder Clan had become his personal bodyguards."

Lizzy gave a faint smile. Megan immediately followed up, “I saw green skinned creatures in the Radiant Empire. What are they? Why do they look like slaves?”

Barbarian Ding replied, “Replying to the madame. They are indeed slaves. They are called the Goblin Race. They are creatures native to the Divine Realm. Their fighting strength is low, however, they are very interested in tinkering. It was said that magic formations made by them are very strong. I’ve also heard that they were able to produce flying machines in the past. However, since their race isn’t interested in making weapons, the Divine Race managed to subdue them. In the end, their entire race was reduced to becoming labor slaves.”

Laura asked, “Did the Divine Race conquer any other race? If so, what other races are there?”

Barbarian Ding shook his head and said, “I don’t know.”

However, Winged Pegasus Zhan replied, “Answering to the madam, there are no other races in the Divine Race army. The Divine Race army that is attacking the Ark Continent right now are the Divines from the Taurus Continent. The Taurus Divines had only conquered our four races. As for the other Divines on the other continents, I don’t know much about the planes that they conquered.”

Laura stared, then her expression underwent a huge change, “Will the other continents send troops here? Aren’t the Divine Race in a war against the foreign races? Did the war subside?”

Winged Pegasus Zhan shook his head and said, “Replying to the madam. I don’t know whether the other continents would send their troops or not. However, I have heard about the war with the foreign races. It seems like the foreign races had inferior strength compared to the Divine Race, they had been pushed into a passive state.”

Laura frowned, “I heard that the Divine Realm has 13 continents.



How are they divided between the Divine Race and the foreign races?”

Winged Pegasus Zhan nodded and said, “Of the 13 continents, ten of them are under the control of the Divine Race while three are controlled by the foreign races; the Aries Continent, the Libra Continent, and the Virgo Continent. Other than those three, the remaining ten are under the Divine Race.”

Laura let out a long breath, then she asked once more, “Do you know which foreign race controls each continent?”

Winged Pegasus Zhan nodded, “The Ares Continent is where the Beastmen Gods reside. The Libra Continent is under the Dwarves, and the Virgo Continent is under the Elves. Beside those three huge races, there are also some other races that live in the three continents. All these years they had continued to resist the Divine Race.”

Laura and the others nodded. To be honest, they didn’t know what to think right now. They didn’t think that the Divine Race would have this much scope in their power. They were already having problems dealing with the Taurus Divines. If the other continents send troops, then the Ark Continent would surely be eliminated.

However, Laura and the others were also thinking that it was highly improbable. The Taurus continent surely wasn’t that smaller than the Ark Continent. In this case, if the other continents sent their troops, there won’t be much they could gain. They might even lose more than what they receive.

Additionally, the Divine Race also needed to deal with the foreign races. It was impossible for the entire Divine Race to focus on the Ark Continent. Perhaps this is an opportunity for Zhao Hai.

They had already proven that the foreign races are still surviving. This meant that a potential ally existed!

# Chapter 784 – Make Them Know How Terrifying We Are

---

Zhao Hai woke up. He found himself very tired in the past few days as he continually harassed both the Demons and the Divine Race.

Additionally, when Lizzy and Megan were done dealing with the winged pegasus cavalry, Zhao Hai saw that the two of them were very tired. So instead of having them work again, he decided to have them take a rest. Meanwhile, Zhao Hai went on and continued to harass the Demons.

After cleaning his room, Zhao Hai pushed the door open. Upon going out, he couldn't help but knit his brows. He knew that Laura and the others were in the living room, however, there wasn't any sound right now.

Zhao Hai immediately knew that something must have happened. Otherwise, the women wouldn't have been this silent. After thinking about it, Zhao Hai immediately hastened his steps as he went to the living room.

After arriving, Zhao Hai saw Laura and the others frowning, nobody made any noise.

Zhao Hai couldn't help but be curious, so he asked, "What's wrong? Why are you all frowning?"

When the women saw Zhao Hai arrive, they immediately made space for him to sit down. Meg stood up and offered Zhao Hai a cup of tea while Laura and the others told Zhao Hai about what they had found out.

After hearing the story, Zhao Hai frowned as well. If this was really the case, then he had gained more annoying enemies.

Seeing that Zhao Hai stayed silent, Laura and the others didn't make a noise. After all, the final decision about this matter lied on

Zhao Hai.

After some time, Zhao Hai opened his mouth and said, “Alright, worrying about this is useless. If the elites of those two races come, then let them come. We aren’t afraid of them. Moreover, when it comes to revenge, their hatred for the Divine Race is certainly stronger. Yet, they still submitted, therefore, they should submit to us as well. The important thing to us right now is the existence of the foreign races in the Divine Realm. As long as they survive, then the Divine Race couldn’t go all out in fighting us. Also, the other Divine Realm continents might not be interested in the Ark Continent. Moreover, with how serious the Taurus Divines have become, their actions have certainly been spread to the Divine Realm. At the very least, the foreign races should be able to hear the news. They might even take the opportunity to contact us, seeing how they aren’t doing too good.”

Laura nodded, “However, it wouldn’t be too easy for us to deal with the Taurus Divines. After all, we’ve already been having problems with Thunder Yun, the power of his Giants is very strong.”

Zhao Hai agreed, “That’s correct. But although the Giants have great strength, I’m certain that they aren’t that numerous. After all, if they had enough numbers, then they wouldn’t have been destroyed by the Divine Race.” Laura and the other nodded. They were just worried, they weren’t afraid. After all, they had the Space. They could just evacuate the Ark Continent whenever things get out of hand. When that time comes, they would just wait until their overall strength gets improved. Then they can expel the Divine Race from the continent.

Zhao Hai looked at Laura and the others as he smiled and said, “Actually, among these information, the one I think the most useful is the Goblins. I have underestimated them before, I didn’t think that they would have this much skill.”

Laura looked confused at Zhao Hai’s words, she asked, “Why is

Brother Hai so interested in those Goblins? I can't see anything special about them."

Zhao Hai smiled and said, "Didn't Zhan say that those goblins are very skilled when it comes to machines? Moreover, they have certain talents when it comes to using magic formations for machines, their skills would surely be good for us."

Laura was still confused, "Good? What's the difference between machines with magic formations and just magic formations?"

Zhao Hai smiled and said, "Of course its good. If those goblins are really experts in the application of magic formations, then they can help improve the strength of our magic cannons. Also, they might be able to make different uses for the crystals. Using the crystals just for ammunition would be wasteful."

Laura stared for a moment before she nodded, "Alright. If we can save more crystals, then we could make more magic cannons and other items."

Laura finally understood what Zhao Hai meant. Karen had been researching ways of using magic formations to change the lives of the average person. He wanted to make their lives more convenient and safe. After seeing the things in the Space like the monitor, the kitchen and other Earth items, Karen suddenly had an inspiration.

Laura didn't oppose to Karen's new obsession. However, she didn't like how Karen would exhaust himself and even forget to eat and sleep.

Therefore, when Zhao Hai raised the idea of the Goblins, she immediately agreed. If these Goblins were to find ways to make use of the crystals, then it would be a good thing for them.

However, Lizzy was still frowning as she said, "Big Brother Hai, but in the past, the Goblins seems to have no interest in weapons. Otherwise, they wouldn't have fallen easily to the Divine Race."

Zhao Hai smiled and said, “In the past, the Goblins did indeed have no interest in weapons. However, now should be different. They had been slaves of the Divine Race for so long that they should have understood the importance of having weapons. I think they should be looking into making their own all this time.” Megan also frowned, “Will this work? Those goblins have been under the Divine Race for so long. I’m afraid their inheritance had already vanished with time. Will they really be useful to us?”

Zhao Hai gave a faint smile and said, “Their inheritance might have vanished, but as long as they are goblins, their skills for tinkering should be ingrained to their bones. Just like how the Elves are innately close to nature and the Dwarves gravitating towards blacksmithing, those goblins should still be able to make machines.”

The woman nodded, then didn’t say anything more. Zhao Hai let out a long breath as he said, “The Divine Race are truly fools. If they had the goblins research weapons, then they might have already conquered the Ark Continent.”

Zhao Hai said this as he shifted his gaze towards the monitor, showing the Demon Race’s situation. At this time, the Demons were resting. The Demons looked less tired now compared to two days before.

This didn’t mean that Zhao Hai had reduced his harassment, it just meant that the Demons have adapted. In the past, whenever they meet Zhao Hai’s troops, the Demons would become anxious. But now, except for those in the outskirts of the army, the others went on to sleep and eat, acting as if nothing was happening.

Zhao Hai faintly smiled, the Demons were truly worthy of being mighty warriors. Their adaptiveness to war was very good. Not only did they adapt to Zhao Hai’s harassment, they also got used to the attacks made by the blood devouring mosquitoes.

Zhao Hai turned to Lizzy and Megan and said, “Are we ready? I

think it's time to attack the Demons. Let them be aware that the Divine Race has retreated, and that we are now focused on dealing with them."

Lizzy looked at the screen and then smiled, "It is indeed time to inform them, otherwise they would think that we're being bullies."

Zhao Hai smiled and said, "Go, make them know how terrifying we are." Lizzy nodded and then took out her messenger fish as she and Megan began to issue orders.

First, they had the cavalry units take a rest. Then they immediately released a large number of undead, ready to attack the Demon Army.

In the beginning, Zhao Hai wanted the undead army to attack Rising Sun City, cutting the retreat of the Demons. Then he would encircle the Demon Army and kill them in one go.

However, he discovered that this plan was too unrealistic. First, the Demons had a large number of reinforcement from Demon City. Secondly, the Demon Dragon King's army had 20 million troops, trapping them was completely impossible.

If 20 million troops were to make a move, then their threat would be too big. Zhao Hai had painstakingly been acquiring undead, and he didn't want them to be blown up by the Demons. Because of this, Zhao Hai quickly trashed his plan. Instead, he would hand the matter over to Lizzy while he would charge towards the enemy troops.

After seeing Lizzy and Megan prepare, Zhao Hai took Berry, Shue, and Shun, as well as some undead creatures with him. The other undead were given to Lizzy and Megan.

Four people stood on top of a Bone Dragon. They appeared on the place where the Divine Race decided to stop. Then, a large army of undead followed them outside. Zhao Hai, along with the undead

army, were ready to charge towards the Demon Army!

# Chapter 785 – Drill

---

The Demon Dragon King felt strange. The constant attacks from the Ark Continent suddenly stopped. All the cavalry units and undead have retreated. What happened? Did the Divine Race break their defenses? Were they forced to retreat?

The Demon Race's information network wasn't quick. Although they had already discovered the retreat of the Divine Race army, reaching the Demon Dragon King wasn't easy. The Demon Army was already deep into the Buddha Empire. And the Ark Continent's forces were often patrolling the surrounding area. Because of this, word of the Divine Race's retreat had failed to reach the Demon Dragon King.

However, word from the scouts was now unneeded. This was because the Demon Dragon King can already guess what happened from what he saw in front of him. An undead army was approaching from the distance with Zhao Hai standing at the front. The Demon Dragon King's face changed, he gave a bitter smile as he muttered, "I didn't expect the Divine Race to be so soft. It seems like Zhao Hai hasn't been damaged at all, instead, he had gained more undead."

The Demon Dragon King was talking to himself, naturally, these words didn't reach the ears of the other military commanders. Seeing the approaching undead army, these commanders were in shock. It can be said that they hadn't battled with Zhao Hai before, so this was the first time that they experienced Zhao Hai's might. Even those who fought with Zhao Hai discovered that Zhao Hai's power was more than what they had thought.

In the past, Zhao Hai brought about more than 10 million undead to fight with the Demons. But now, Zhao Hai brought nearly 30 million. At the same time, human cavalry soldiers were patrolling around the Demon Army. This caused the tension to increase among the Demons present.



In fact, aside from the Demons, the cavalry units were also startled. They didn't expect Zhao Hai to have this much undead. However, their surprise turned into glee. The stronger Zhao Hai was, the better it would be for their future. Although they don't fear death, they still didn't want to die. The more undead Zhao Hai had, the need for the cavalry to break through the enemy lines decreased. This would reduce the probability of them being killed in battle.

As the undead army got closer, the Demon Dragon King slowly gave command, "Army Formation!"

As the Demon Dragon King's voice dropped, the drums behind him began to sound out. The flustered Demons immediately recovered. Before long, a large formation was already set.

At this point, most of the warriors in the Demon Army were 9th ranks. Their 8th rank experts were almost killed during Zhao Hai's constant harassment.

The Demons were unable to form a giant cube just like the undead. Aside from the Fishmen, only Zhao Hai used this kind of formation.

The intricacies to the cube formation was too much. Except for the Fishmen who trained in it for so many years, only Zhao Hai who had a completely obedient undead army can use it. It was impossible for other armies to use it with little to no practice.

The battle formation that the Demons used was different to the cube. It was a half moon formation with the curve's inside facing Zhao Hai.

Zhao Hai looked at the Demon Army and couldn't help but acknowledge the Demon Dragon King's ability. They had been constantly attacked in the past few days, causing them to lose several million people. However, not only did the Demons refrain from retreating, they were also able to adapt to their situation. This was naturally largely in part to the Demon Dragon King's

plans.

Since it was the Demon Dragon King who was controlling the army, the Demons still trusted him despite their heavy losses. Also, not even one Demon deserted the army, showing how resolute the entire race was.

Zhao Hai didn't plan to have a talk with the Demon Dragon King. Instead, he was waiting for Lizzy and Megan to get ready. As soon as they give the signal, the attack would begin.

Just as Zhao Hai's group reached about a kilometer away from the Demon Army, Lizzy's voice came through, "Big Brother Hai, we'll change to a cone formation, you'll be in the head."

Zhao Hai nodded, then he turned his head to the three other people and said, "You don't need to be with me. You go out of the formation and attack the Demons." The three nodded before they flew from the bone dragon and out of the cube formation.

At roughly the same time, the cube formation changed and became an extremely huge cone. Zhao Hai was on the very tip of the cone, establishing his Domain. Since his Domain can transform into anything that he can think about, Zhao Hai made his Domain into a huge cone with ridges along its side. The Domain looked just like a huge drill bit.

Behind Zhao Hai were the undead, all of them were in perfect place along the cone formation, ready to attack the Demon Race.

After Zhao Hai transformed his Domain, it slowly turned. Going along the Domain's rotation were the undead behind, making a huge drill out of the massive cone formation.

While the formation rotated, Zhao Hai led the charge towards the Demons army, intending to barrel through the Demon Army.

The Demon Dragon King didn't expect Zhao Hai's move. A kilometer distance wasn't far, but Zhao Hai managed to change a cube formation into this rotating drill before it clashed with the

Demon Army.

It was too late for the Demon Dragon King to change the position of his army. He knew that if this drill formation hit their army, then the entire formation would be finished. The Demon Dragon King immediately commanded, "God-ranks, go forward and block the attack!"

After the Demon Dragon King's order, the God-rank Demons immediately went forward. However, Zhao Hai's advance was too quick. Just as the God-ranks arrived, they were immediately attacked. Even if their Domains weren't broken, they were slowly turned back by Zhao Hai.

The God-rank Demons met Zhao Hai's drill, however, they were unable to prevent it from advancing. After Zhao Hai killed some God-rank Demons, his formation was already nearing the Demon Army's half moon formation. When the Demon Dragon King saw Zhao Hai's approach, he knew that he needed to break it. However, he knew that he wasn't Zhao Hai's opponent.

The Demon Dragon King discovered that Zhao Hai's drill formation was creating strong energy disturbance around it. These disturbances weren't something that ordinary people can stop, it was even impossible for people to come close.

At this time, Zhao Hai wasn't thinking about this. His only focus right now was to control his speed. He didn't want the undead to be too spread out.

When the undead reached their speed limit, they immediately began to take their weapons out. Then one by one, they sprang out of the formation. Zhao Hai's formation wasn't just an ordinary drill, it was a drill with protruding thorns, dealing massive damage to all it ran through.

Because of this, all the Demons who dared to approach this drill was torn to pieces, they didn't even have the time to blow themselves up. If they don't go near this massive drill, then they

would be safe. However, in a big battle such as this, one couldn't just easily reposition himself. It wasn't long before the Demon discovered that they had very little ways to deal with Zhao Hai.

Although there were a lot of Demons, all of them were in a formation, and Zhao Hai used this opportunity. It didn't take a long time before Zhao Hai's drill was already into the Demon Race's formation.

When Zhao Hai's drill ran through the Demon Army, it immediately disintegrated, turning into innumerable undead that went on and slaughtered the surrounding Demons.

The Demon Army's formation was in chaos, Zhao Hai's drill completely destroyed it. And just as they were about to make a move, the drill suddenly dispersed.

This caught the Demons off guard. In a blink of an eye, the Demon Army has been divided by the undead.

Zhao Hai immediately understood what Lizzy and Megan wanted to do. He immediately turned his head and killed his way towards the Demon Dragon King. The Demon Dragon King was the centerpiece of the Demon Army. His flag was easily spotted in the battlefield, allowing the Demons to know where he was. Because of this, the Demons would have a sense of direction and wouldn't immediately turn to chaos when dispersed.

What Zhao Hai needed to do right now was to deal with the Demon Dragon King. As long as the Demon Dragon King is gone, then the Demons would certainly turn chaotic. This would ensure Zhao Hai's victory in this battle.

The Demon Dragon King naturally saw Zhao Hai's move. When he saw their formation crumbling, the Demon Dragon King immediately knew that it was impossible for them to defeat Zhao Hai today.

The Demon Dragon King couldn't accept this outcome. He didn't

think that he had just been defeated by Zhao Hai in such a quick manner.

However, he also knew that lamenting on this matter was useless. He needed to find a way to conserve their strength. At the same time, the Demon Dragon King also noticed that some of Zhao Hai's undead, although they had an appearance of a skeleton, were wearing very good armor. Their armor was something the Divine Race would equip themselves with.

Additionally, he can also recognize these winged horses. Several days ago, his scouts had informed him of the Divine Race's cavalry. It seems like Zhao Hai's new undead came from the Divine Race army!

# Chapter 786 – A Brave Soldier Breaks His Arm

---

After thinking up to here, the Demon Dragon King couldn't help but force a smile. He can now feel pressure from Zhao Hai's strength. Demons who couldn't withstand the attacks would blow themselves up, unwilling to be turned into undead.

However, Zhao Hai actually managed to massacre a large number of Divine Race soldiers and turn them into undead. One must know that the Divine Race were generally stronger compared to the Demons. In this case, for Zhao Hai to turn a large number of them into undead wasn't a good idea for the Demon Race.

But the Demon Dragon King doesn't have the time to think about this right now. Zhao Hai had already started his killing, and the Demon Dragon King knew how strong he was. Although the Demons still had a lot of experts, as long as Zhao Hai can grasp an opportunity, then he could surely eradicate every single Demon here.

Zhao Hai's Domain was still in its drill form as it went about its killing spree. There were some God-rank Demons who wanted to stop Zhao Hai. However, upon meeting the Domain, they were immediately shredded to death.

The Demon Dragon King shouted, "Retreat!" Just as he said that, his Dragon Domain appeared as he slowly drew back. At the same time, his flag kept waving back and forth. It was a signal known to all Demons, informing them to retreat.

Although the Demons were fighting against Zhao Hai's undead army, they were also keeping attention to the Demon Dragon King's flag. Upon seeing the Demon Dragon King's flag, the Demons immediately fought while going in the direction of Demon City.

However, this feat wouldn't be very easy. The small drills formed by the undead were like slippery fishes, retreating from such conditions was very difficult.

This scene also made Zhao Hai understand how the Demons can survive in a place such as the Demon Realm. And at this time, some Demons had stayed behind.

These Demons didn't proceed to retreat, instead, they blew themselves up. This caused resounding explosions from all directions, causing massive casualties among the undead.

After Lizzy and Megan saw this, they knew that the Demons had went all out. They didn't want to fight with the Demons in this situation. Because of this, Lizzy immediately ordered the undead to clump up while pursuing, allowing the Demons more time to withdraw.

But just as the undead drew back, various cavalry units appeared beside the Demon Army before throwing javelins towards the retreating army. Zhao Hai was still using his harassment tactics against the undead, causing more chaos to appear.

The Demon Dragon King couldn't help but feel a pain on his heart. He turned his head and looked at Zhao Hai, who had finished reorganizing his army. Also, the Demon Dragon King can also see undead Demons among Zhao Hai's undead army,

During the battle, there were still Demons who weren't able to blow themselves up. Naturally, Zhao Hai wouldn't let their deaths be a waste, he turned them into undead immediately.

When he saw this, the Demon Dragon King couldn't help but clench his jaws. His hate for Zhao Hai had reached an all-time high. However, he discovered something that made him frustrated. The speed of his army wasn't as fast as Zhao Hai's. Before they had regrouped, the undead were already finished. At the same time, the cavalry units were already on the sides of the Demon Army. It seems like they were boxed in with one side

missing.

While the Demon Dragon King was looking at Zhao Hai's army in a daze, two pitiful yells woke him up. The Demon Dragon King immediately turned his head to see a God-ranked expert's separated head and then another God-ranked expert with a hole in their neck. But even then, nothing was seen beside them.

The God-ranked Demon with a hole on his neck was still alive when the Demon Dragon King saw him. However, he didn't dare to blow himself up since he was still in the middle of the Demon Race's formation. If he exploded, then he might take his allies along with him. Because of this, he can only swallow his hatred and normally die.

As soon as the two Demons died, two spatial rifts appeared right beside them, swallowing them in the process. Then at Zhao Hai's side were another two spatial rifts where two undead Demons appeared. At the same time, an additional two people appeared. One was Berry while the other was someone the Demon Dragon King haven't seen before. This person looked like an assassin, he also had a rapier strapped on his back.

Naturally, this person was Shun. He hasn't been idle after becoming God-rank. Although he had been sparring with Shue, no positive results ever came forth. He was yet to acquire his own Domain.

Shue told him about his experience on how he managed to comprehend a Domain. Because of this, Shun went and looked for a God-rank Demon during the battle and attacked him, hoping to gain insight into his Domain.

In the end, he succeeded. And unexpectedly, his Domain was actually the same stealth type Domain as Berry's. Berry's Domain was a huge hook while Shun's Domain was a rapier.

While the Demons were yet to reorganize, Berry and Shun used this opportunity to kill God-rank Demons. And in order to ensure



their safety, Lizzy quickly took them back to the Space before sending them to Zhao Hai's side.

Zhao Hai turned his head to look at their eyes and nodded, "Good, nice job. But don't take such huge risks next time." Then he turned his head back to the Demon Dragon King.

At this time, Lizzy's voice sounded in Zhao Hai's ear, "Big Brother Hai, demon scorpion. Pay attention since the undead are using their javelins."

Zhao Hai nodded, then his figure moved and returned inside the formation. After that, the undead formed the demon scorpion formation, the one they also used back against the Fishmen. Since Zhao Hai wasn't needed at the front, he was repositioned to be at the tail end of the scorpion.

It didn't take a long time before the cube formation changed into the demon scorpion. After seeing this change, the Demon Dragon King's expression couldn't help but turn ugly. He was yet to put his men in order, and now they were clashing again?

The Demon Dragon King couldn't do anything but wave his flag, urging the Demons to retreat. Both the elites and average soldiers continued to draw back. And as they were retreating, they were also rearranging themselves.

The Demon Dragon King had small time to think about new formations. This demon scorpion looked more menacing compared to the drill. Some of the troops on the left and right of the Demon Army went forward and clashed with the two claws of the scorpion.

Despite their current situation, the Demon Dragon King was still confident about the strength of the Demons. He believes that even Zhao Hai's undead army wouldn't be able to face the might of the Demons.

However, he was mistaken this time. Zhao Hai simply didn't give

them time to reorganize. When the Demons reached the firing distance, the undead immediately peppered them with javelins.

The Demon Dragon King's expression couldn't help but change after seeing the rain of javelins. Zhao Hai didn't use javelins before, but they already lost too much. Now that javelins were back in the fray, the Demon army's losses would surely pile up.

But this wasn't the end. Just as the Demon Dragon King was feeling regret, the skies above him suddenly darkened. A drill formation had appeared from above, and their target was him.

The Demon Dragon King calmed himself down. At this time, changing his position was too late. Just as he was about to be killed, two people suddenly flew up from the side of the Demon Dragon King. The two greeted Zhao Hai's drill and when they were in a sufficient distance away, they blew themselves up.

These two people were God-rank Demons, so their explosions weren't weak. Zhao Hai felt the tremendous impact from the explosion on his Domain. His whole figure shook, his face drained of color. Before long, his advance slowed down before he ultimately led his undead to draw back.

The explosions of the God-rank Demons also caused huge damage to the Demon Army. Aside from the Demon King and others who could support a Domain, nearly 10 thousand 9th ranked Demon were killed from the impact.

However, this didn't mean that the Demon Dragon King remained unscathed, he was also quite injured. But this was the only way to deal with Zhao Hai. If the Demon Dragon King dies, then the whole Demon Army would be finished.

A brave soldier wouldn't hesitate to sacrifice his arm, and the Demon Army didn't lack these brave soldiers. Blood dripped on the corners of the Demon Dragon King's mouth. He knew that fighting would only bring more casualties to the Demons. Because of this, he immediately shouted, "All armies draw back. Return to Demon

City!”

This order was quickly passed down to each Demon. The entire Demon Army immediately formed groups before they slowly retreated. On the other hand, there was no way for Zhao Hai to let this opportunity go. Batches upon batches of javelins rained one after another, peppering the entire Demon Army. One could say that every step the Demon Army made, people died. However, they still didn't dare to turn their heads and fight with Zhao Hai. The Demon Dragon King knew that even more deaths would occur if they do so.

# Chapter 787 – Drastic Changes In The Icefield

---

It was a road of death. Every minute, Demons would die. Zhao Hai's javelins were like a weapon of the Grim Reaper. Each volley caused deaths to mount up.

At this time, the Demon Dragon King deeply regretted his decision to continue their advance. Under such attacks, he wasn't sure how many people would survive upon returning to Demon City.

The Demons left on the other cities were completely vulnerable in front of Zhao Hai's army. They were completely unable to stop the attacks.

There was no other way for the Demon Dragon King other than retreat. They were pursued by Zhao Hai up until they reached Demon City. After the Demons arrived, Zhao Hai stopped. He didn't say a single word as he led his undead and promptly turned back. The Demons had a lot of troops in Demon City. It wouldn't be good if they were compelled to desperate methods.

After seeing Zhao Hai retreat, the Demon Dragon King let out a long breath. This time, he had led 30 million troops to battle. But now, the number hardly reached 20 million. In this fight, he had lost a third of his troops.

A lot of Demons died in the last battle. They were very heroic, and if they weren't faced with undead, then they might have already won.

Most armies wouldn't be able to keep their composure if they lost a third of their numbers. Only the strong willed Demons were able to achieve this feat. But even then, they weren't proud of this achievement. It was because they lost, they were completely defeated. Moreover, this wasn't their first defeat in the hands of

the same person.

After the Demon Dragon King returned to Demon City, he immediately arranged for those who came with him to take a rest. He also returned to his room to heal himself while also sending a letter to the Great Demon King.

In just one battle, they had lost more than 10 million people. This was something that the Demon Dragon King didn't imagine. In the past, even the Divine Race wouldn't think that a battle in the Ark Continent would take so many lives. There were many wars where the Demon Dragon King lost the same number of men, however, he didn't think that he would do so in the hands of one person.

After Zhao Hai returned to the Space, he immediately arranged people to reoccupy the vacated cities. At this time, the Buddha Empire regained its calm.

Zhao Hai's two battles between the Demons and the Divine Race had spread to the entire Ark Continent. It didn't matter if they were Humans or other races, when they received this news, a scene of jubilation erupted.

However, Zhao Hai didn't idle. He was preparing for another matter, carrying his attack on the Radiant Empire. Zhao Hai was tired of being the receiving end of the attack, he wanted to take shot at the enemy.

Now that the Demons were heavily damaged, Zhao Hai believed that they would stay put for some time. On the other hand, although the Divine Race had lost some people, their major losses were the barbarians and the winged pegasus armies. Because of this, their losses weren't that great, they may send their troops again at any time.

To be honest, Zhao Hai's action was mainly in order to get some goblins. At the same time, he also wanted to see whether he can grab one or two magic cannons from the Divine Race.

When Zhao Hai told his plans to Lizzy, she immediately agreed. Although they had lost some undead in the battle against the Demons, their losses of about a million was still smaller compared to the 10 million from the Demons. The battle was completely their victory.

Since they had lost a little, their overall strength wasn't affected. If they want to attack, they can attack, if they want to defend then they can defend. They still had many tactics that they could use.

Additionally, acquiring goblins for their abilities as well as the magic cannons was something that would benefit their army. Nobody would certainly oppose to this decision.

However, before they could go and deal with the Divine Race, they would still need ample understanding about their structure. They need to think about where to attack from and which place to attack. They wouldn't want a long term battle against the Divine Race.

As Zhao Hai planned his actions inside the Space, various troops had arrived in the Buddha Empire. Zhao Hai had already left orders for the veteran troops to teach the newcomers. Although these people weren't really newcomers when it came to battles, they were still greenhorns when it came to fighting the Demons and the Divine Race. They still need those with experience to guide them.

This matter didn't need Zhao Hai's direct supervision. He just gave some orders and left it all to the other troops. At the same time, he also gave them sufficient supplies while emphasizing that the troops needed to take a rest.

....

One day, while Zhao Hai was studying the composition of the Divine Race army, Cai'er's voice was suddenly heard, "Young Master, the God-rank potion is finished."

When he heard this, Zhao Hai immediately stood up. With a smile on his face he told Laura, “Call Blockhead and Rockhead over to the Space.”

Laura nodded before calling Blockhead and Rockhead over. The two of them already knew about Zhao Hai’s plan, therefore they used the past few days to hand their current tasks over as they waited for Zhao Hai’s call.

When the two entered the Space, Zhao Hai didn’t waste any time and immediately gave them the potions. Then he pushed them to a room and forbade people from disturbing their cultivation.

During the early times when Shue was using the God-rank potion, Zhao Hai was still very anxious. But now, he was already calm. He knew that the God rank potions would work. Unless they forced the potion on a dead person, then they won’t have anything to worry about.

Shortly after Blockhead and Rockhead entered the Space and when Zhao Hai was about to resume his study, the Beast King’s voice was suddenly transmitted from a messenger fish, “Little Hai, are you there? Little Hai? If you hear me, please talk. It’s an urgent matter!” Anxiety was clearly heard from the Beast King’s voice. Zhao Hai couldn’t help but stare as he immediately took the messenger fish and replied, “Your Majesty, what’s the problem?”

The Beast King’s voice was heard, “Little Hai, bad news. Large quantities of undead from the northern icefield are killing their way into the Prairie. The Polar Bear Tribe, White Tiger Tribe, and the Blue Hawk Tribe are already fighting them. In addition to undead, there are also plenty of Darkness lifeforms. They are all very strong. If you haven’t provided your potions, then these creatures might have already broken through.”

When Zhao Hai heard this, his head couldn’t help but turn dizzy. But he recovered himself as he said, “What are the losses between the three tribes?” At the same time, the image of the northern

icefield appeared on the Space's monitor.

Just as the icefield was shown, Zhao Hai couldn't help but gasp. The everpresent white color of the icefield had completely changed, it had all been turned into black!

It seems like the entire northern icefield has been covered by a dark mist, it was extremely hard to see a thing. And inside this dark mist were large quantities of undead and creatures of the dark. Their activities seem to be absent of reason, but they had completely filled the entire icefield.

At this time, the Beast King replied, "Their losses aren't huge, but the undead are very hard to deal with. They have poison in their bodies. Even the dark mist is poisonous. Although it wouldn't kill people immediately, the poison would impede a person's fighting strength. The tribes had no choice but to return to the Beastman Prairie."

Zhao Hai stared at the screen. He can understand the situation more than the Beast King. These undead and dark creatures were indeed numerous. At the same time, wherever these creatures go, the dark mist would follow them. Both of these influences slowly crept towards the center of the Beastman Prairie.

Zhao Hai immediately replied to the Beast King, "Your Majesty, don't dispatch troops to the frontlines. Instead, have them form a defense in the Prairie. The undead and dark creatures are indeed too many. It is also clear that they aren't under the control of the Demons. Get ready and have the tribes migrate towards the Aksu Empire. I will inform the people of the Empire. I'll be keeping attention to the icefield, I'll report whatever I find."

The Beast King agreed and didn't say anything more. Zhao Hai placed the messenger fish down and slowly stood up. He looked at the screen with enraged eyes. He stopped himself from yelling out, he turned his head to Laura and said, "Inform the Aksu Empire that the Beastman are coming. We don't want any



misunderstanding to occur.. I'll be heading to the icefield to take a look and see what is in there.”

Laura and the others were also shaken by the news. The group absentmindedly nodded, for a moment they didn't know what to say.

Zhao Hai's figure moved and vanished from the Space as he appeared inside the northern icefield. As he appeared, he was immediately engulfed by the dark mist. Not far away from him was a skeleton. It had a silver white body that looked quite beautiful.

However, Zhao Hai was not in the mood to appreciate things right now. Just as he came out of the Space, a prompt was suddenly heard, “Huge amount of dark energy toxins entering the Host's body. Activating detoxification measures. Toxins have been neutralized. Spatial water can now cure the toxin. Toxin added to the Space's insecticide.”

Zhao Hai stared, he didn't think that the poison would be so strong that it could actually affect his body. One must know that the spatial water was a powerful antidote against poisons. For the Space to actually proceed to clear the poison meant that the dark mist was very strong.

Just as Zhao Hai was thinking about the announcement, the silvery white skeleton took notice of him. The skeleton immediately charged towards Zhao Hai. At this time, Zhao Hai paid attention to the skeleton. It was very fast and should have a strength not lower than 8th rank. Moreover, there was a silvery white blade on its hand, a type that was probably made from its own body.

Zhao Hai didn't move, he just stood there and stared at the skeleton. Before long, the skeleton was already near Zhao Hai. It raised its sword up, intending to divide Zhao Hai in two. At this time, Zhao Hai raised his blood ghost staff, repelling the incoming attack. However, Zhao Hai couldn't help but wrinkle his brow.

# Chapter 788 – Fuck, This Is Bullshit!

---

Zhao Hai frowned. Naturally, this wasn't because he was injured. The skeleton was just about 8th rank, so how could it injure him? Zhao Hai frowned because of the raw strength of the undead. Although it was only 8th rank, it's power was surprisingly great. The skeleton was actually as strong as a similarly ranked barbarian.

The barbarians were very strong, they were even stronger than most Beastmen. Although the Beastmen were much stronger than the Humans, they were evenly powered with barbarians. And now, this skeleton was as strong as them? Zhao Hai didn't expect this.

After the silver white skeleton saw that Zhao Hai had repelled its attack, it actually didn't stop. Instead, it moved and went on to kick Zhao Hai.

Once again, this made Zhao Hai stare. Not only was the skeleton strong, it was actually quick as well. Its movement was much nimbler compared to the other undead.

Naturally, compared to the undead from the Space, this skeleton was nothing. However, it was still an extraordinary event that an uncontrolled undead could exhibit these kinds of movements.

Zhao Hai moved his body and blocked the skeleton's attack once more. At this time, the skeleton opened its mouth and let out a very loud roar. As the sound resonated, Zhao Hai scanned the surroundings with his divine sense. All the skeletons around them were unexpectedly rushing towards Zhao Hai. This caused another surprise from Zhao Hai, he didn't think that the skeleton was able to call the other skeletons over. They actually had some sort of communication with each other.

Besides the skeletons in the Space, this was the first time that Zhao Hai saw an intelligent skeleton like this. But he wasn't afraid. He was planning on capturing these skeletons to see how special

they were.

Zhao Hai was certain that these undead weren't from the Demon Realm. Although there were also wild undead from the Demon Realm, these undead weren't intelligent. Moreover, the undead in the Demon realm didn't have this poisonous mist going along with them.

Zhao Hai waved his blood ghost staff and turned it into a large net. He covered the silver skeleton with the net before he flung it into the Space.

As the skeleton entered the Space, a prompt was immediately heard, "Virally positive robot detected. Eliminating the virus, virus eliminated. Discovered robot to be hostile towards the Space. Subduing the robot, robot has surrendered."

"Evolution class robot has been detected. Extracting advantages. All robots in the space can now evolve."

Zhao Hai stared at this announcement before he smiled. He turned his head and looked at the surrounding skeletons who were coming towards him. Zhao Hai waved his blood ghost staff continuously as he threw skeletons to the Space one after another. However, no further prompts were heard from the Space. Moreover, Zhao Hai saw that these skeletons were silvery white like the ones before. They were much darker wood in color, seemingly like bronze.

Seeing that nothing remained in the surroundings, Zhao Hai's body flashed and returned to the Space. Then he turned the silver skeleton into a zombie. After turning the silver skeleton into a zombie, Zhao Hai couldn't help but stare, the zombie was very handsome.

However, Zhao Hai wasn't in the mood to pay attention to its face. He immediately asked, "What is your name? And where did you come from?"

The skeleton quickly bowed and answered, “Answering the Master. I am called Ginko, the place the I was born in is called the Underworld, initially as a low-level undead.”

Zhao Hai gawked, then his complexion changed as he said, “Did you just say that you came from the Underworld? Does the Underworld really exist?”

Ginko nodded and said, “Yes Master. I am from the Underworld. I don’t know when I woke up, but at that time, I was a low level grey skeleton. But after killing other skeletons and absorbing their soul fire, I turned into a white skeleton. After that, I became a black skeleton and then a bronze skeleton. At the moment, I am a silver skeleton.” Zhao Hai looked blankly at the skeleton named Ginko. He didn’t think that the underworld really exists. The Underworld was just a plane found in legends. It was even more mysterious compared to the Demon and the Divine Race. And now, there was this skeleton saying that he was from that same Underworld.

The expressions of Laura and the others were also quite ugly. At this time, Zhao Hai looked at Ginko and said, “Just call me Young Master. Since you said that you’re from the Underworld, how did you appear here?”

Ginko replied, “Answering to the Young Master, I also don’t know. Just one day, a large hole appeared not far away from my territory. I walked into that hole and then arrived here.” Zhao Hai’s expression turned uglier. He was certain that a spatial rift had appeared in the Underworld, causing Ginko and the others to come here.

Zhao Hai asked once more, “What is the strongest existence in the Underworld? What grade do you belong to?”

Ginko replied, “Answering to the Young Master. The strongest being in the Underworld is the Hell King. However, the Hell King rarely appears, so the true control of the Underworld relies on the

God Kings of the various races. I am just one of the lower beings in the Underworld. I am stronger compared to the grey, white, black, and bronze skeletons. Those above me are the gold skeletons, variant skeletons, crystal skeletons, and the skeleton King. There are also the Skeleton Saint, the Skeleton God, and the Skeleton God King above that.'

Zhao Hai nodded. From what he heard, it seems like the skeletons in the Underworld were divided into 12 ranks. Ginko was in the fifth rank and there were seven ranks who were stronger than him. And since Ginko was equivalent to an 8th rank expert, how powerful were those above him?

After thinking about this, Zhao Hai immediately said, "Ginko, how stronger is the rank higher than you?"

Ginko immediately replied, "Young master, gold skeletons are much stronger and faster than me. A single gold skeleton can fight against ten silver skeletons. Variant skeletons are even more powerful than gold skeletons. Aside from having a harder weapon, they also had their own abilities. These abilities are far different than those on the lower ranks. Crystal skeletons are an evolution of the variant skeletons. Aside from having the abilities of the variant skeletons, crystal skeletons are a qualitative improvement to the variant skeletons. Skeleton Kings are the ones above crystal skeletons. Skeleton Kings have the ability to subdue crystal skeletons to be their subordinates. Then there are the stronger skeleton saints who have the ability to control the heaven and the earth around them. The rank higher than skeleton saint is the skeleton god. Their control over the heavens and the earth would become much more formidable. As for the skeleton god king, I'll have to ask for forgiveness, I haven't heard about them."

Zhao Hai nodded, he can somewhat understand how these skeletons were divided. The details of their power was more pronounced compared to the Humans. From what he understood, controlling the heavens and the earth was actually the Domain.

That is to say, unless one becomes a skeleton saint, then they would become Demigods on the verge of comprehending a Domain. Skeleton Gods would be the God-ranks who had their own Domains while skeleton god kings should be Saint Gods. As for the Hell King, Zhao Hai believed that it may be a cultivator like Lu Wei. Zhao Hai thought for a moment before asking another question, “Are there a lot of skeleton saints in the Underworld?”

Ginko nodded and said, “There are plenty of them in the Underworld. Not only the Skeleton race, the Zombie race, Lich Race, Magic Beast Race, and other races have saint level or above. As for their number, I don’t know. The Underworld is just too big. And although the Skeleton race are most numerous creatures, we aren’t actually the strongest. Compared to the other races, the skeletons could be called weaker.”

The frown on Zhao Hai’s face turned tighter. He didn’t expect this development. Silver skeletons were as strong as 8th ranks. Gold skeletons should not be far from being 9th ranks. This would make variant skeletons medium grade beings in the Underworld, and their number should be uncountable.

Now that a spatial rift to the underworld appeared, beings from the underworld would start to flood the Ark Continent. When that time comes, the Ark Continent would gain yet another strong enemy.

After thinking about this, Zhao Hai couldn’t help but get angry. He couldn’t bear it anymore as he cursed, “Fuck, this is bullshit!” After Zhao Hai arrived at the Ark Continent, he had always been a very careful person in maintaining his personal image. He was almost always polite in his speech. Although he didn’t care too much about how the nobles view him, he was now the representative of the Buda Clan, and he needed to preserve his clan’s face. Because of this, he had always chosen the words coming out of his mouth.

However, he couldn’t bear it this time. There were already the

Demons and the Divine Race who wanted to take the Ark Continent. But now, there is the legendary Underworld. This development had completely disrupted Zhao Hai's plans. So how could he not be angry?

# Table of Contents

[Bringing The Farm To Live In Another World](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Acknowledgement](#)

[Chapter 701 – Who To Promote First?](#)

[Chapter 702 – Elves in Flower City](#)

[Chapter 703 – Threat](#)

[Chapter 704 – The Elephant Race Arrives](#)

[Chapter 705 – The Thing They Worried Most About](#)

[Chapter 706 – Don't Take It Too Seriously](#)

[Chapter 707 – Domain](#)

[Chapter 708 – Domain War](#)

[Chapter 709 – Myriad Transformation Domain](#)

[Chapter 710 – Captured](#)

[Chapter 711 – Strengthened](#)

[Chapter 712 – Unexpected Development, The Divine Race Has Arrived](#)

[Chapter 713 – Change of Laws, Beginning of Chaos](#)

[Chapter 714 – Dao Lotus](#)

[Chapter 715 – Universe Grand Dao](#)

[Chapter 716 – Rising Sun City](#)

[Chapter 717 – Divine Artifact](#)

[Chapter 718 – Comprehending A Domain](#)

[Chapter 719 – Hook!](#)

[Chapter 720 – Divine Race Arrives](#)

[Chapter 721 – Using the Trigram](#)

[Chapter 722 – An Enemy of an Enemy](#)

[Chapter 723 – Adjusting Strategies](#)

[Chapter 724 – Promotion](#)

[Chapter 725 – God-rank Army](#)

[Chapter 726 – Crystal Stone](#)

[Chapter 727 – Experiment](#)

[Chapter 728 – Shue of the Thousand Shadows](#)

[Chapter 729 – Sly Divine Race](#)

[Chapter 730 – Blood Lightning Bead](#)

[Chapter 731 – Machine Gun and Artillery](#)

[Chapter 732 – King of Kings](#)

[Chapter 733 – Formidable Diamond Ape Tribe](#)



[Chapter 734 – Storm Clouds Approach](#)  
[Chapter 735 – How To Deal With It?](#)  
[Chapter 736 – Adjusting The Army](#)  
[Chapter 737 – The Fight Begins](#)  
[Chapter 738 – The Dwarves’ First Accomplishment](#)  
[Chapter 739 – Projection?](#)  
[Chapter 740 – Immortal Cultivator?](#)  
[Chapter 741 – Pressed to Defend](#)  
[Chapter 742 – Surrender](#)  
[Chapter 743 – Magic Beast Upgrade](#)  
[Chapter 744 – Repelled](#)  
[Chapter 745 – The Prophecy Must Be Fulfilled](#)  
[Chapter 746 – Method to Upgrade the Undead](#)  
[Chapter 747 – Anxious Elves](#)  
[Chapter 748 – Unlocked, Magic Background](#)  
[Chapter 749 – The Usage of the Magic Background](#)  
[Chapter 750 – Another Prophecy](#)  
[Chapter 751 – Favoring Two Races](#)  
[Chapter 752 – Change in the Demon Race](#)  
[Chapter 753 – Talents Needed To Be Kept](#)  
[Chapter 754 – Dark Mist In The Icefield](#)  
[Chapter 755 – Dreaded By The Demon Race](#)  
[Chapter 756 – Immortal Cultivators Really Exist](#)  
[Chapter 757 – Five Gates Sect](#)  
[Chapter 758 – Slaves of the Divine Race](#)  
[Chapter 759 – Asking Them Over To See](#)  
[Chapter 760 – Worries of the Demon Dragon King](#)  
[Chapter 761 – Verbal Debate](#)  
[Chapter 762 – After the Battle](#)  
[Chapter 763 – Actually, We Are Sheep](#)  
[Chapter 764 – Shun Becomes A God](#)  
[Chapter 765 – Tactic Most Suited For The Space](#)  
[Chapter 766 – God of Thunder’s Army](#)  
[Chapter 767 – Engagement](#)  
[Chapter 768 – Wave After Wave](#)  
[Chapter 769 – Completely Empty](#)  
[Chapter 770 – Zhao Wen Returns](#)  
[Chapter 771 – Blood Devouring Mosquitoes Levels Up](#)  
[Chapter 772 – Dealing with the Divine Race](#)

[Chapter 773 – A Good Plan](#)

[Chapter 774 – I Have a Way](#)

[Chapter 775 – The Demon Race Moves, War On Two Fronts](#)

[Chapter 776 – Skill](#)

[Chapter 777 – Thunder Yun's Thoughts](#)

[Chapter 778 – Thunder Yun's Plan](#)

[Chapter 779 – Thunder Yun's Discovery](#)

[Chapter 780 – Demon Dragon King's Worry](#)

[Chapter 781 – A Night of Loss, Two Choices](#)

[Chapter 782 – What Zhao Hai Doesn't Know](#)

[Chapter 783 – The Divine Realm's Situation](#)

[Chapter 784 – Make Them Know How Terrifying We Are](#)

[Chapter 785 – Drill](#)

[Chapter 786 – A Brave Soldier Breaks His Arm](#)

[Chapter 787 – Drastic Changes In The Icefield](#)

[Chapter 788 – Fuck, This Is Bullshit!](#)